













THE  
E S S A Y S  
OF  
MICHAEL DE MONTAIGNE,  
TRANSLATED INTO ENGLISH,  
WITH VERY CONSIDERABLE  
AMENDMENTS AND IMPROVEMENTS  
FROM  
THE MOST ACCURATE FRENCH EDITION OF  
PETER COSTE.

---

*The Ninth Edition.*

---

---

IN THREE VOLUMES.

---

---

VOL. III.

---

---

LONDON:

PRINTED FOR W. MILLER, ALBEMARLE STREET; WHITE AND  
COCHRANE, FLEET STREET; AND LACKINGTON, ALLEN, AND  
CO., FINSBURY SQUARE;

By C. Baldwin, New Bridge-street.

---

1811.



## CONTENTS.

---

Chap.	Page.
I. OF Repentance . . . . .	1
II. Of Three Commerces, i. e. Familiarities with Men, Women, and Books . . . . .	20
III. Of Diversion . . . . .	36
IV. On some Verses of Virgil . . . . .	50
V. Of Coaches . . . . .	132
VI. Of the Inconvenience of Greatness . . . . .	158
VII. Of the Art of Discoursing . . . . .	165
VIII. Of Vanity . . . . .	197
IX. Of managing the Will. . . . .	276
X. Of Cripples . . . . .	306
XI. Of Physiognomy . . . . .	320
XII. Of Experience . . . . .	357
The Appendix . . . . .	433

## OF REPENTANCE.

that I am not then the man I was, or that I lay hold on the subjects with other circumstances and considerations, so it is that perhaps I may plainly contradict myself; but, as Demades said, I do not contradict the truth. Could my soul once take sure footing, I would not make an attempt, but would speak definitively and peremptorily; but it is always learning and making trial.

Why, and  
is what  
inner  
Montaigne  
undertakes  
peak of  
himself in  
his book.

I propose a life mean, and without lustre. It is all one; all moral philosophy is as applicable to a vulgar and private life as to the most splendid. Every man carries the entire form of the human condition. Authors communicate themselves to the people by some special and extraordinary work. I, in the first place, my universal being, as Michael de Montaigne, not as a grammarian, a poet, or a lawyer. If men complain that I speak too much of myself, I complain that they do not so much as think of themselves. But is it reasonable, that being so particular in my way of living, I should pretend to make myself known to the public? And is it also reasonable that I should introduce into the world, where workmanship and art have so much credit and authority, the crude and plain effects of nature, and of frail nature too? Is not writing books without learning like building a wall without stone or brick? The fancies of music are carried on by art, mine by chance. I have this at least, according to discipline, that never any man treated of a subject, whereof he was more the master, than I am of that which I have undertaken; and that in this I am the most knowing man alive. Secondly, that never did any man penetrate deeper into his subject, nor more distinctly scrutinize into its parts and consequences, nor ever more exactly and more plainly arrived at the end which he proposed to himself in his work. To finish it, I need only apply to it with the fidelity which I have therein displayed with the utmost sincerity and purity. I speak the truth, not as much as I would, but as much as I dare; and I

dare a little the more as I grow older ; for, methinks, custom indulges my age with more liberty of prating, as well as of indiscretion in talking of a man's self. That cannot fall out here, which I often observe elsewhere, that the work and the artificer contradict each other. Has a man of so elegant a conversation written so silly a treatise ? or are such learned writings the product of a man of so mean conversation, whose discourse is common, and who but seldom writes ; that is to say, whose capacity is borrowed, and not his own ? A man of learning is not learned in every thing ; but the self-sufficient man is sufficient in every thing, even in ignorance. Here my book and I go hand in hand in one even pace. In other cases a work may be recommended and censured abstractedly from the workman, but not in this. He that touches the one, touches the other. He that shall judge of it without knowing him, will injure himself more than me. He who does know him gives me all the satisfaction I desire. I shall be more happy than I deserve, if I can only obtain thus much from the public approbation, as to make men of understanding sensible that I was capable of making learning turn to my benefit if I had it, and that I deserved to have been assisted by a better memory. Be pleased here to excuse what I often say, that I seldom repent of any thing, and that my conscience is satisfied with itself, not like the conscience of an angel or a horse, but that of a man, always adding this check, not a check of ceremony, but of true and genuine submission, that I speak by way of inquiry, and for better information, referring myself for determination purely and simply to the common and authorised opinions. I do not teach, I only relate.

There is no vice that is really such which does not offend, and which a sound judgment does not blame ; for there is so manifest a deformity and inconvenience in it, that perhaps they are in the right who say, that it is chiefly produced from ignorance

The sorrow  
which at-  
tends vice.



## OF REPENTANCE.

and stupidity ; so hard is it to imagine that a man can know it without abhorring it. Malice\* sucks in the greatest part of its own venom, and itself is therewith poisoned. Vice leaves a repentance in the mind, which, like an ulcer in the flesh, is always scratched till it bleeds ; for reason effaces all other sorrows and griefs, but it begets this of repentance, which is the more grievous because it springs from within, as the internal cold and heat of agues and fevers is more intense and severe than what we feel from without. I not only hold those for vices (though not equally such) which both reason and nature condemn, but those also which have been made such in the opinion of men, however false and erroneous, if it is authorised by the laws and custom.

The satisfaction that is connected with a good conscience.

Nor is there any virtue the practice of which does not give joy to a well-disposed mind. There is really an inconceivable joy in a man's own breast upon his doing good, and a generous boldness that accompanies a good conscience. A soul that is daringly vicious may perhaps arm itself with security, but cannot supply itself with this complacency and satisfaction. It is no slight pleasure to a man to be preserved from the contagion of so corrupt an age, and to say to himself, whoever shall look into my soul will not find me guilty of any man's ruin or affliction, nor of revenge or envy, nor of the public violation of the laws, nor of innovation, nor disturbance, nor of the breach of a promise : and though the licentiousness of the age has not only tolerated, but taught it to every man ; yet I have not seized the estate or purse of any Frenchman whatsoever, but have lived only upon what is my own, both in war and in peace ; nor have I set any man to work without paying him his hire. These are pleasing testimonies of a good conscience ; and this natural gladness is a great benefit to us, and the only reward that never fails us.

\* This thought is taken from Seneca, ep. 81, where he mentions it as a common saying of his countryman Attalus.

## OF REPENTANCE.

To found the recompence of virtuous actions on the approbation of others is laying it on a foundation too uncertain and embarrassed, especially in so corrupt and ignorant an age as the present, wherein the good opinion of the vulgar is a scandal. Upon whom do you rely for the discovery of what is commendable? God forbid that I should be an honest man according to the honourable definition which I daily see every one gives of it, *Quæ fuerunt vitia, mores sunt* :\* “ The things that were formerly reckoned vices are the manners of the present age.” Certain friends of mine have at times reprimanded me very frankly of their own accord, or at my instigation, thereby performing an office which, to a mind that is rightly formed, surpasses all the offices of friendship, not only in utility but in kindness. I have always received them with the most open arms of courtesy and gratitude. But to speak conscientiously, I have often discovered, both in their reproaches and their praises, so much false measure, that I had not done much amiss, rather to have acted wrong than right, according to their standard. We, especially who lead a private life, not exposed to any other view than our own, ought to have a tribunal established in our breasts, whereby to try our actions ; and, according to that, sometimes to caress, and at other times to correct ourselves. I have my laws and my court of justice to judge myself by, and apply myself to those more than to any other rules. I do indeed restrain my actions by those of other men, but do not extend them by any other rule except my own. It is only known to yourself whether you are cowardly and cruel, or loyal and devout. Others see you not, and only form uncertain conjectures of you. They do not perceive your nature so plainly as your art ; rely not therefore upon their verdict, but stick to your own : *Tuo tibi judicio est utendum—Virtutis et*

Accordin  
to Mon-  
taigne,  
every ma  
ought to  
in judg-  
ment up  
himself.

\* Senec. ep. 39, at the end.

## OF REPENTANCE.

*vitiorum grave ipsius conscientie pondus est ; quæ sublatae jacent omnia :\** “ Make use of your judgment—conscience plainly shows the weight of “ virtues and vices ; take away that, all falls to the ground.” But the saying, that repentance follows close at the heels of sin, seems not to have regard to sin in its richest attire, which is lodged in us as in its own proper habitation. It is possible to disavow and retract the vices that surprise us, and towards which our passions hurry us ; but those which by a long habit are rooted and anchored in a strong and vigorous will, are not liable to be gained. Repentance is no other than a recanting of our will, and an opposition to our fancies, that follows us close which way soever we take. It makes another person disown his former virtue and continency :

*Quæ mens est hodie cur eadem non puero fuit ?†  
Vel cur his animis incolumes non redeunt genæ ?‡*

Ah ! whilst I was a vig'rous boy  
Why did I not this mind enjoy ?  
Or why does not my rosy hue  
Return to paint my cheeks anew ?

The excellency of a private life which is regular.

That is an exquisite life wherein a due regularity is maintained within doors. Every one may play a part in the puppet-show, and represent an honest man upon the stage ; but within his own breast, where he may do what he list, and where nobody sees us ; for a man to be regular there, that is the point. The next degree is for a man to be so at his own house in his ordinary actions, for which we are accountable to nobody, and wherein there is no study, no artifice ; and therefore Bias, representing the excellent state of a family, says, the master of

\* Cic. de Natura Deorum, lib. iii. cap. 35.

† Horace here characterises Ligurinus, who repented, when he came to be an old man, that he had not made an ill use of his beauty while he had it.

‡ Hor. lib. iv. ode 10, ver. 7, 8,

it was the same within doors, when by himself, as he was abroad, when governed by a regard to the laws, and the report of men.\* And it was a worthy saying of Julius Drusus† to the builders, when they offered for 3000 crowns to raise his house so high that his neighbours should not overlook him so much as before,—I will give you, says he,‡ 6000 to make it so that it may be looked into on all sides. It is mentioned to the honour of Agesilaus, that when he travelled he used to take up his quarters in the temples, to the end that the people, and the gods themselves, might be spectators of his private actions. Such a one has been the miracle of the world, in whom neither his wife nor servant have never seen any thing remarkable.§ Few men have been admired by their domestics. We find in history, that a prophet hath no honour, not only in his own family, but in his own country. It is the same in less things: and in this mean example the image of greater is to be seen. In my country of Gascoigne they look upon it as a drollery to see me in print. The farther off I am read from my own home the more I am esteemed. I am fain to purchase printers in Guienne, elsewhere they purchase

No man a  
prophet in  
his own  
country.

\* Plutarch, in the Banquet of the wise Men, ch. 23.

† Or rather Marcus Livius Drusus, the famous tribune of the people, who died anno 662, at Rome, after having, by his ambition, fomented a dangerous war in Italy, of which Florus treats, lib. iii. cap. 17 and 18. As to what Montaigne says here of Livius Drusus, he took it from a treatise of Plutarch, entitled Instructions to those who manage the Affairs of State, ch. 4, where this Drusus is called Julius Drusus, a tribune of the people. If Montaigne had consulted Paterculus on this article, he might have perceived this small mistake of Plutarch.

‡ It is Plutarch that makes him speak thus; but, according to Paterculus, Drusus being about to build a house, and having an offer made him by the architect to contrive it after such a model that none of his neighbours might look into it, Drusus said, “If you know how, make me such a house rather that what I do in it may be seen by every body.”

§ A man must be a hero indeed, said marshal Catinat, if his footman thinks it.

me. Upon this foundation they go who conceal themselves living and present, to obtain a name when they are absent and dead. I had rather have less of it: and do not publish myself to the world for more than my share of it; when I leave it, I quit all farther claim. The people reconduct such a one by a public act with amazement to his very door. He put off this pageantry with his robe, and falls so much the lower from it by how much the higher he was exalted. In his house there is nothing but tumult and disorder; and was there a regularity in it, it would require a quick and well tried judgment to perceive it in these low and private actions: to which may be added, that order is a dull melancholy virtue. To enter a breach, to conduct an embassy, to govern a people, are actions of renown; to reprove, laugh, sell, pay, love, hate, and converse pleasantly and rationally with a man's own family, and with himself, not to relax nor to recant, are things more rare, more difficult, and less remarkable. By this means, they who lead a retired life do, whatever is said to the contrary, undergo offices of greater difficulty and extent than others. And private men, says Aristotle, serve virtue with more difficulty and eminence than they who are in the magistracy. We prepare ourselves for eminent occasions, more out of vanity than conscience. The shortest way to arrive at glory would be to do that for conscience which we do for glory. The virtue of Alexander appears to me with far less vigour in his theatre than that of Socrates in his mean and obscure employment. I can easily conceive Socrates in the place of Alexander, but Alexander in that of Socrates I cannot. Ask the one what he can do, he will answer, "Conquer the world;" ask the other the same question, he will say, "Conduct human life conformably to its natural condition;" a science much more general, weighty, and more lawful.

Wherein  
consists

The soul is to be valued not for its high flight, but for its regularity. Its greatness is not exercised

in grandeur, but mediocrity. As they who judge and try us internally, make no great account of the lustre of our public actions, and see that they are only threads and rays of clear water, springing from a slimy and muddy bottom; so likewise they who judge of us by this fine outward appearance make the same conclusion from our internal constitution, and cannot couple faculties that are common and like their own, with those other faculties that astonish them, and are so far out of their sight. Therefore it is that we give savage forms to dæmons; and who does not give Tamerlane large eye-brows, wide-nostrils, a dreadful face, and a stature beyond measure, according to the conception he has formed from the report of his name? Had any one heretofore showed me Erasmus, I would hardly have believed but that every thing he spoke to his man or his landlady was adage and apophthegm. We have a more suitable idea of an artificer upon his close-stool, or upon his wife, than of a great president venerable for his carriage and abilities. We fancy that they do not stoop so low from their high tribunals as to live. As vicious souls are often incited to do well by some strange impulse, so are virtuous souls to do ill. They are therefore to be judged by their settled state when they are composed, if they ever are so; or at least when they are nearer to repose, and in their natural situation.

Natural inclinations are assisted and fortified by education, but are scarce ever altered or subdued by it. A thousand souls in my time have shifted towards virtue or vice in spite of a contrary discipline:

Natural inclinations fortified by education, but not changed and extirpated.

*Sic ubi desuetæ sylvis in carcere clausæ  
Mansuere feræ, et vultus posuere minaces,  
Atque hominem didicere pati, si torrida parvus  
Venit in ora cruor, redeunt rabiesque furorque,  
Admonitæque tament gustato sanguine fauces,  
Fervet, et a trepido vix abstinet ira magistro.\**

So beasts of prey, imprison'd in a cage,  
 Grow tame, abandoning their native rage  
 And threat'ning looks, and do themselves inure  
 The government of mankind to indure.  
 But if again a little blood they taste,  
 Their savage fury seizes them in haste ;  
 They thirst for more, grow fierce, and wildly stare,  
 As if their trembling keepers they would tear.

Thus men palliate and conceal their original qualities, but do not extirpate them. The Latin tongue is as it were natural to me ; I understand it better than the French, but I have not used to speak it, nor hardly to write it, these forty years ; and yet, upon some sudden agitations, which I have fallen into twice or thrice in my life (and once upon seeing my father, in perfect health, fall upon me in a fainting fit), I always vented my first outcries in Latin ; nature starting and forcibly expressing itself, notwithstanding so long a discontinuance ; and of this there are many other instances.

The reformations of mankind only relate to externals.

They who in my time have taken a review of the manners of the age do, by novel opinions, reform seeming vices ; but as for real vices they leave them as they were, if they do not augment them ; the latter of which, it is to be feared, is the case. We choose to disregard all other good actions on account of these external reformations of less cost and greater merit, and thereby make a cheap atonement for the other natural consubstantial and internal vices. Look back a little on our own experience. There is no man, if he be attentive, who does not find in himself a particular and governing method of his own, which struggles with instruction, and with the tempest of passions that are contrary to it. For my part, I seldom feel myself agitated by any shock. I find myself, as it were, always in my place like heavy unwieldy bodies. If I am not at home, I am always near it. My debauches do not carry me very far off. There is nothing strange nor extreme in the case, and yet I have healthy and vigorous

raptures. The true condemnation, and that which affects men's common practice, is that their state of retirement is full of filth and corruption, the idea of their reformation blurred, their repentance weak, and as much to blame almost as their sin. Some, either for having been linked to vice, by a natural propensity, or by a long habit, cannot see any deformity in it. Others (of which class I am) do indeed weigh vice, but they put pleasure, or some other motive, in the other balance, and suffer and yield to it for a certain price, but viciously and basely; yet there might perhaps be imagined so vast a disproportion of measure, wherein, with justice, the pleasure would excuse the sin, as we say of profit, not only if it were accidental, and out of sin, as larceny, but in the very exercise of sin, as in the enjoyment of a woman, wherein the temptation is violent, and it is said, sometimes, to be invincible. Being the other day in Armagnac, at a seat which belongs to a kinsman of mine, I saw a country fellow, that was by every one called the robber, who gave this narrative of his life; that being born a beggar, and finding that he would never be able to get enough by his labour to support himself against want, he resolved to turn robber; and, being a strong man, had followed the trade all the time of his youth with safety; for he gathered in his corn and wine from other men's lands, but at a great distance, and in such great loads, that it was not to be imagined how one man could carry off so much upon his shoulders in one night as he did; and, moreover, he was so careful not to do one man more damage than another, that every particular man's loss therefore was of the less importance. He is now grown old and rich for a man of his rank, thanks to the trade he drove, which he makes no scruple to confess to every body; and to make his peace with God for his ill-got wealth, he says, that he is daily ready, by his bounty, to make satisfaction to the successors of those he robbed; and if he does not to every

The repentance of men commonly very corrupt.



one (which it is impossible for him to do at once) he will leave it in charge to his heirs to perform the rest proportionably to the wrong he has done to every one, which is what he himself only knows. By this account, whether true or false, this man looks upon robbery as a dishonest action, and he hates it, but not so much as poverty. He barely repents of it, but forasmuch as it was in this manner counter-balanced and compensated, he repents not of it. This is not that habit which incorporates us with vice, and conforms our very understanding to it; nor is it that impetuous wind, which, by its gusts, disturbs and blinds our faculties, and for the time hurries us, judgment and all, into the power of vice.

Montaigne's judgment was the common guide of his actions.

It is my way to do what I do thoroughly, and all of a-piece. I scarce make a motion clandestinely and by stealth from my reason, and that is not conducted in a manner by the consent of all my faculties without division, or without any inward struggles. My judgment has all the blame or all the praise of it; and the blame it once has, it has always; for I have had, almost from my infancy, the same inclination, the same turn, and the same spirit: and as to universal opinions, I fixed myself from my childhood in the same place where I was to stick. There are some sins that are impetuous, prompt, and sudden; let us set them aside; but as for those other sins so oft repeated, deliberated, and contrived, whether constitutional sins, or sins of profession and vocation, I cannot conceive that they have so long been settled in the same resolution, without the constant concurrence of the will and understanding with the reason and conscience of the person who is guilty of them: and the repentance which he boasts to be inspired with on a sudden is very hard for me to imagine. I am not of the opinion of the Pythagorean sect, that men assume a new soul when they approach the images of the gods to receive their oracles, unless they mean that it must be foreign,

new, and lent for the time, our own showing so little sign of the purification and cleanness fit for that office.

They act quite contrary to the Stoical precepts, who indeed command us to correct the imperfections and vices which we know ourselves guilty of, but forbid us thereby to disturb the tranquillity of our minds. These make us believe that they have great vexation and remorse within, but as for amendment and correction, or discontinuance, they give no sign of it; yet there cannot be a cure till the evil be purged away. If repentance were to be put into one scale of the balance, it would out-weigh sin. I do not know of any quality so easy to counterfeit as devotion, if the life and manners do not conform to it. The essence of it is abstruse and occult, the appearances easy and pompous.

As for my part, I may desire in the general to be what I am not; I may condemn and be out of humour with my whole frame, and pray to God for an entire reformation, and to excuse my natural infirmity; but this is what I ought not to call repentance, methinks, no more than a disgust that I am not an angel, nor a Cato. My actions are regulated by and conformable to what I am, and to my condition, I cannot do better; and repentance does not properly concern things that are not in our power. It is rather regret. I conceive an infinite number of natures, more sublime and regular than mine; yet I do not amend my faculties, forasmuch as neither my arm nor my mind will become a whit the more vigorous by conceiving another's to be so. If to imagine and wish a more noble way of acting than we have would produce a repentance in us, we would then repent of our most innocent operations, forasmuch as we well suppose that in a more excellent nature they would be conducted with greater perfection and dignity; and we would wish to do the same. When I consider my demeanor in my youth, and that of my old age, I find that I have in general be-

True repentance ought to be followed with real amendment.

A man cannot repent of his universal form.

haved with regularity as far as I know. This is all that my resistance can avail. I do not flatter myself, in the like circumstances, I would be always the same. It is not a spot, but rather an universal tincture, with which I am stained. I have no notion of a repentance that is superficial, moderate, or ceremonious. It must sting me throughout before I can give it that name, and it must pierce my heart as deeply and universally as God sees into me.

Why Montaigne did not repent of the management of his affairs.

In matters of trade many good opportunities have escaped me for want of management, and yet I made a right choice according as occurrences presented themselves. It is my method to choose always the easiest and the surest course. I find that in my past deliberations I have, by my own rule, proceeded with discretion according to the state of the subject proposed to me, and would do the same, were it a thousand years hence, on the like occasions. I do not consider the thing as it is now, but what it was when I deliberated on it. The force of all counsel lies in the time. Opportunities and affairs incessantly fluctuate and change. I have, in my life, fallen into some gross and important errors, not for want of good judgment, but for want of good luck. There are, in our affairs, some secret circumstances not to be guessed at, particularly in human nature, certain silent conditions that make no show, and are unknown sometimes even to the possessor, which start and spring up from incidental causes. If my prudence could not penetrate into, or foretel them, I am not disgusted with it: it is confined to its own limits. If the event be against me, and favours that side which I have refused, there is no remedy; I do not blame myself for it: I accuse my luck, and not my performance. This is not what we call repentance.

Counsel is independent of events.

Phocion had given certain advice to the Athenians, which was not followed; and the affair succeeding happily contrary to his opinion, somebody said, Well, Phocion, art thou pleased that this af-

fair turns out so well? I am very glad, said he, that it has so happened; yet I do not repent that I advised otherwise.\* When my friends apply to me for my opinion, I give it freely and plainly, without considering, as almost all mankind do, that the thing being hazardous, it may fall out contrary to my opinion, and then, perhaps, they may reproach me for my advice; but this is what I am very indifferent about; for they will be to blame for desiring that office which I could not justify myself to refuse them.

I scarce ever lay any mistakes or misfortunes of mine to the charge of another person: the truth is, I seldom make use of another's advice, but only for the sake of civility and ceremony, unless it be where I have need of instruction in any science, or information of any fact. For in things where I have only my judgment to make use of, other men's reasons may be of some credit to support me, but of little force to dissuade me. I hear every thing favourably and decently; but I do not remember that to this hour I ever made use of any reason but my own. With me they are but flies or atoms that hover about my will. I lay no great stress upon my own opinions, and as little upon those of other men. Fortune rewards me justly. As I do not receive advice, I give as little. I am seldom asked for it, and more seldom trusted to; and know not of any undertaking, either public or private, that has been the better for my advice; even the persons, whom fortune had in any manner engaged to follow my direction, have chose more willingly to be guided by any other head-piece than mine: and as I am a man altogether as vigilant against the disturbance of my tranquillity as the diminution of my authority, I like it the better. By thus neglecting me, they humour me in what I profess, which is to settle and wholly

\* Plutarch, in his *Notable Sayings of ancient Kings, Princes, &c.* under the article Phocion.

contain myself within myself. It is a pleasure to me to be disinterested in other men's affairs, and not to be any way responsible for them.

Was little troubled for events that fell out contrary to his wishes, and why.

All affairs when they are over, happen as they will, give me little concern; for the imagination, that so it ought to be, puts me out of my pain. They are rolled about in the great revolution of the universe, and linked in the chain of stoical causes. Your fancy cannot, by wish or imagination, move an iota, either past or to come, which the order of things will not totally overturn.

Made little account of the repentance owing purely to old age.

As to the rest, I hate that accidental repentance which old age brings with it. He, of old times, \* who said he was obliged to his years for stripping him of pleasure, was of a different opinion from me. I can never think myself beholden to impotency for any good that it does me. *Nec tam aversa unquam videtur ab opere suo providentia, ut debiliter inter optime inventa sit.* "Nor can Providence ever be thought so averse to its own work that debility should be found among the best things." Our appetites are rare in old age. A profound satiety comes upon us after the act. I discern nothing of conscience in this. It is chagrin and weakness that imprint on us a languid phlegmatic quality. We must not suffer ourselves to be wholly carried away by the alterations of nature so as to debase our judgment. Youth and pleasure did not heretofore so far blind me that I did not discern the face of vice in pleasure; nor does that disgust which years have now brought upon me, hinder me from discerning the face of pleasure in vice. Now that my days of pleasure are over, I judge of it as if they were not. I, who strictly and attentively ransack my reason, find it the very same it was in my most licentious

\* This was Sophocles, who being asked if he still enjoyed the pleasures of love, made answer, *Dii meliora: libenter vero istinc, tanquam a domino agresti ac furioso profugi*: "The gods have done better for me; and glad I am that I have lived to escape from the wild and furious tyranny of love." Cic. de Senectute, cap. 14.

age, if it be not perhaps a little weakened and impaired by being grown old; and I am of opinion, that as it does not permit me to embark in pleasure, for the sake of my bodily health, it would not give me more allowance now than heretofore for the sake of my soul's health. I do not reckon my reason the more vigorous because it has nothing to combat. My temptations are so shattered and mortified that they are not worth its opposition, for with only stretching out my hands I overcome them. Should my former concupiscence be replaced in its view, I fear it would not have so much strength to resist it as it had heretofore. I do not find that it has any other notion of pleasure now than it had then, nor that it has acquired any new light; wherefore if there be a recovery it is a scurvy one. Miserable kind of remedy, where health is not to be obtained without a disease. It is not for our misfortune to perform this office, but for the good fortune of our judgment. I am not influenced by injuries and afflictions to do any thing but to curse them. This is for people who are not to be roused till they feel the scourge. My reason, indeed, acts with more freedom in prosperity, but is more distracted and harder put to it, to digest misfortunes than pleasures. I see best in a clear sky; health premonishes me with more alacrity and more benefit than sickness. I did all that I could to repair and regulate myself when I had health to enjoy them. I would be ashamed and vexed that the misery and misfortune of my old age should be preferred before my good, healthful, sprightly, and vigorous years; and that men should judge of me, not by what I have been, but by what I am now that I have as it were ceased to be.

In my opinion it is in happy living, and not in dying happily, as Antisthenes said, that human felicity consists. I have not aimed to make a monstrous addition of a philosopher's tail to the head and body of a libertine, nor that this wretched remainder of life should contradict and give the lie to the plea-

Wherein  
human felicity  
consists, ac-  
cording to  
Montaigne.

santest, soundest, and longest part of it. I would fain represent myself uniform throughout. Were I to lead my life over again, I would live just as I have done. I neither complain of the past, nor fear the future; and, if I do not deceive myself, I have been much the same within as without. I am principally obliged to my fortune, that the course of my bodily estate has been carried on in every thing in its season. I have seen it in its bud, blossoms, and fruit, and now see it withered; happily, however, because naturally. I bear the ailments I have the better as they are at their crisis, and also because they give me the more pleasing remembrance of the long felicity of my past life. My wisdom also may, perhaps, have been of the same pitch in both ages, but it was more active and graceful, when young, sprightly, and natural, than now that it is broken, peevish, and painful. I therefore renounce those casual and dolorous reformatiions. God must touch our hearts, and our consciences must amend of themselves by the aid of our reason, and not by the decay of our appetites.

What is the  
wisdom of  
old men.

Pleasure is in itself neither pale nor discoloured for being discerned by eyes that are dim and distempered. We ought to love temperance for its own sake, and in respect to God, who has commanded both that and chastity. What we derive from catarrhs, and what I am obliged for to my cholic, is neither chastity nor temperance. A man cannot boast that he despises and resists pleasure, if he does not see it, and if he does not know it, together with its charms, power, and most alluring beauty. I know both the one and the other, I have a right to say it: but it seems to me that in old age our minds are subject to more troublesome maladies and imperfections than they are in youth. I said the same when I was young, and when I was reproached with the want of a beard; and I say the same now that my gray hairs gain me authority. We call the crabbedness of our tempers, and the disrelish of present things, wisdom;

but in truth we do not so much forsake vices as change them, and in my opinion for worse. Besides a foolish groundless pride, nauseous babble, froward and unsociable humours, superstition, and a ridiculous thirst after riches, when the use of them is lost, I find in old age more envy, injustice, and malignity. It furrows the mind with more wrinkles than the face; and we never, or very rarely, see people who, in growing old, do not grow sour and musty. The whole man moves, both towards his perfection and his decay. In considering the wisdom of Socrates, and many circumstances of his condemnation,\* I dare believe that he indulged himself by prevarication, in some measure, for the purpose, seeing that at 70 years of age he suffered such a rich genius as his was to be almost totally cramped, and his wonted brightness obscured. What metamorphoses do I every day see made by age in several of my acquaintance! It is a powerful malady, which creeps upon us naturally, and imperceptibly. Deep study and great precaution are absolutely necessary to avoid the imperfections it loads us with, or at least to slacken their progress. I find that, notwithstanding all my intrenchments, it steals upon me one foot after another; I bear up against it as well as I can, but I know not what it will bring me to at last; but, happen what will, I am content to have it known what I was before I fell.

\* If this be a conjecture only founded on Montaigne's sagacity, it does him very great honour, for Xenophon tells us expressly, that in truth, Socrates defended himself with so much haughtiness before his judges, only from a consideration that at his age death would be better for him than life. This is the subject of the entire preface to that defence made by Socrates before his judges.



## CHAPTER II.

*Of three Commerces, i. e. Familiarities with Men,  
Women, and Books.*

The chief  
ability of  
the human  
under-  
standing.

WE must not rivet ourselves so fast to our humours and complexions. Our chief sufficiency is to know how to apply ourselves to various customs. For a man to keep himself tied and bound, by necessity, to one only course, is but bare existence, not living. Those are the most amiable tempers which are more variable and flexible. It was an honourable character of the elder Cato, *Huic versatile ingenium sic pariter ad omnia fuit, ut natum ad id unum diceret, quodcumque ageret* :\* “ He had parts so flexible to “ every thing, that whatsoever he took in hand, a “ man would be apt to say he was formed by nature “ for that very thing only.” Were I to choose for myself, there is no fashion so good that I would care to be so wedded to, as not to have it in my power to disengage myself from it. Life is a motion uneven, irregular, and various. A man is not his own friend, much less his own master, but rather a slave to himself, who is eternally pursuing his own humour, and such a bigot to his inclinations, that he is not able to turn aside from them. I speak it now at this time of life, when I find it hard to disengage myself from the uneasiness of my mind, by reason that it cannot amuse itself generally, but in things wherein it is embarrassed, nor employ itself because it is so cramped and inflexible. It is apt to magnify a slight subject, and stretches it to such a degree, as to require the application of all its strength. Its inactivity is therefore to me a painful labour, and prejudicial to my health. The minds of most men require foreign matter to quicken and exercise them ; mine

\* Tit. Liv. lib. xxxix. cap. 40.

has need of it rather to compose and settle it, *Vitia otii negotio discutienda sunt* :\* “The vices owing to sloth are to be shaken off by business;” for my most painful, as well as principal study, is to study myself. Books are one sort of those employments that divert me from this study. Upon the first thoughts, which come into my mind, it bustles and makes trial of its vigour in every respect; exercises its feeling quality, sometimes towards force, at other times towards order and beauty, and then ranges, moderates, and fortifies itself. It has in itself wherewith to rouse its faculties. Nature has given to it, as to all other men’s, matter enough of its own for its benefit, and subjects proper enough both for its invention and judgment.

Meditation, for a man who can inspect and exert himself with vigour, is a powerful and copious study. I had rather frame my mind than furnish it. There is no employment, either more weak or more strong, than that of entertaining a man’s thoughts according to the state of his mind. The greatest men make it their profession, *Quibus vivere est cogitare* :† “To whom to live and to think, are one and the same thing.” Nature has also favoured man with this privilege, that there is nothing we can hold out in so long, nor any action to which we more commonly, and more readily incline. It is the business of the gods, says Aristotle, and that from which proceeds both their bliss and ours.

The principal use of reading to me is that, by the variety of subjects, it keeps my reason awake, and employs my judgment, not my memory. Few conversations therefore please me, if there be not life and power in them. It is true, that the gracefulness and elegance of a speech captivate and engross my attention as much, or more than the importance or weight of the subject: and as I am apt to be sleepy in all other conversation, and give but little atten-

*Meditation  
an important  
employment.*

*Montaigne  
was inattentive to  
frivolous  
conversation.*

\* Senec. ep. 59.

† Cic. Tusc. Quæst. lib. v. cap. 38.

tion thereto, it often happens that in such poor, low discourse, and insipid chat, I either make drowsy, stupid, and ridiculous answers, unbecoming even a child, or else more indiscreetly and rudely maintain an obstinate silence. I am on the one hand of a pensive temper, which makes me absent from all but myself; and on the other hand have a stupid and childish ignorance of many common things. By these two qualities I have obtained that five or six as silly stories may as truly be reported of me as of any other person whatsoever.

Tob delicate in his conversation with the generality of mankind.

But to pursue my subject, this difficult temper of mine renders me very delicate of what company I keep, whom I am obliged to examine nicely, and am therefore unfit for common society. We live and trade with the commonalty. If their conversation be troublesome to us, if we disdain to apply ourselves to mean and vulgar souls (and such are often as regular as the most delicate, and all wisdom is insipid that does not accommodate itself to the stupidity of the vulgar), we must no longer intermeddle either with our own affairs, or those of other men; for those, both of a public and private nature, are dispatched with those people. The motions of the soul, that are the least forced and the most natural, are the most beautiful. Good God! what a vast service wisdom does to those whose desires it reduces within their power! There is no part of knowledge more profitable. "As much as lies in our power," was the favourite maxim and motto of Socrates. A phrase of great moment this; for we must adapt and divert our desires to things that are the nearest, and most easy to be acquired. Is it not a silly humour of mine to separate from a thousand, to whom fortune has joined me, and without whom I cannot live, and stick to one or two that are out of the sphere of my correspondence? Or rather is it not a fantastical desire of a thing which I can never recover? My gentle behaviour, an enemy to all bitterness and moroseness, may easily have secured me from envy

and animosity; for never man gave more occasion, to be beloved I will not say, but not to be hated; yet the coldness of my conversation has justly deprived me of the good will of many, who are not to be blamed though they should put another and a worse construction upon it.

I am very capable of acquiring, and maintaining friendships that are exquisite and uncommon; for as I am eager to close in with such acquaintance as suits my taste, I throw myself without reserve into their arms with such rapture that I can hardly fail to stick to them, and to make an impression where I fasten; and this I have often found by happy experience. To common friendships I am in some measure cold and indifferent, for my course is not natural if it be not with a full sail; besides, my fortune having trained me from my youth, and tempted me to love one single and perfect friendship, it has indeed, in some measure, put me out of conceit with others; and too much imprinted it on my fancy that, as one of the ancients said, such vulgar companions are the beasts of the company, though not of the herd. I have also a natural aversion to communicate myself by halves, and with that modification, servile and jealous prudence, which are prescribed to us in the case of numerous and imperfect friendships. And this is enjoined chiefly in the present age, when it is impossible to speak of mankind without danger or mistake.

Yet I plainly see, that he who has the conveniences (I mean the essential conveniences) of life for his end, as I have, ought to shun these difficulties and delicacies of humour as much as the plague. I would commend a mind of various qualities, which knows both to strain and slacken its vigour, that finds itself at ease in all stages of fortune, a man that can discourse with his neighbour about his building, hunting, or quarrel, and that takes pleasure in chatting with a carpenter, or a gardener. I envy those who can condescend to a familiarity with the meanest

Montaigne passionately fond of exquisite friendships, but not qualified to cultivate common friendships.

How useful it is to know how to treat all manner of persons with familiarity.

of their servants, and to hold a conversation with their train of followers: and I dislike the advice of Plato, that men should always speak in a magisterial strain to their servants, whether male or female, without being ever facetious or familiar.\* For besides what my reason tells me, it is both inhuman and unjust to set so great a value upon that same prerogative of fortune; and those governments, wherein there is not so great a disparity admitted between masters and their valets, seem to me the most equitable. Other men study how to elevate and exalt their minds; I to render mine humble and lowly. It is only blameable in being too diffuse:

*Narras, et genus Æaci,  
Et pugnata sacro bella sub Ilio:  
Quo Chium pretio cadum  
Mercemur, quis aquam temperet ignibus  
Quo præbente domum, et quotâ  
Pelignis caream frigoribus, taces.†*

Old Æacus you derive from Jove,  
And tell what kin he had above:  
You all the Trojan wars recite;  
Who make baths, and who invite,  
But not what Chian wine will cost,  
Or yet a fire to warm in frost.

It is necessary to put ourselves on an equality with those we converse with.

Thus, as the valour of the Lacedæmonians stood in need of being moderated, and of the sweet and harmonious sound of flutes to mollify them in battle, lest they should be guilty of temerity and fury, whereas all other nations commonly make use of strong and shrill sounds and voices, which excite and inflame the soldier's courage to the last degree; so methinks that, contrary to the usual form, in the exercise of our minds we have more need of ballast than sail, of coldness and calmness than of heat and hurry. Above all things, it is my opinion, egregiously playing the fool, to make a parade of wit

\* Magisterial language to servants censured, De Legibus, lib. vi. p. 872, edit. Francfort, 1602.

† Horace, ode 19, lib. iii. ver. 2, &c.

in the company of those who have none; to talk always as it were in print, and to use a stiff quaint style; or, on the other hand, *Favellar in punta di forchetta*: "To affect a finical one like the ladies." You must let yourself down to the level of those you converse with, and sometimes too affect ignorance. You must lay aside strength and subtlety of argument: it is enough to preserve decency and order in common conversation; and as for the rest, crawl upon the ground if they desire it. The learned are apt to stumble at this stone; they always make a parade of their superior talents, and scatter their books every where; so that in these days they have so pestered the closets and ears of the ladies with them, that if they have not retained the substance, they have, at the least, the show of them, so that, let the subject of their discourse be what it will, they speak and write in a manner that is new and learned:

*Hoc sermone pavent; hoc iram, gaudia, curas,  
Hoc cunctata effundunt animi secreta, et quid ultra?  
Concumbunt dorkè.\**

In the same language they express their fears,  
Their anger and their joys, their griefs and cares,  
And vent the secrets of their souls; what more?  
In the same learned phrase they play the whore.

They quote Plato and St. Thomas in things for which the first person they meet would be as good authority. The learning that cannot penetrate their souls, hangs on their tongues. If those of quality will believe me, they would be content with their own natural treasures. They conceal and cover their own beauties under others that are foreign. It is a great weakness to put out their own light to shine by a borrowed lustre. They are interred and embalmed alive by art, *De capsula totæ*: † "Being

\* Juv. sat. vi. ver. 188.

† This is an expression of Seneca, which he applies to the petits maitres of his times, "Nosti complures juvenes barbâ et comâ niti-  
" dos de capsulâ totos," epist. 95. He tells us elsewhere of one of these fops who, being carried by his slaves from the bath in a chair,

“ painted and perfumed from head to foot.” It is because they do not know themselves sufficiently. The world has nothing fairer than they are. This is their doing honour to the arts and painting, even paint itself. What need have they of any thing but to live beloved and honoured? For this they not only have, but know too much. They need only rouse a little, and give fresh warmth to their internal faculties. When I see them studying rhetoric, law, logic, and the like, which are so insignificant trifles, unnecessary for their occasions, I begin to fear that the men who advise them, do it that they may thereby have authority to be their masters. For what other excuse can I find for them. It is enough that they can, without our instruction, give the charms of their eyes an air that is brisk, stern, or languishing; that they can season a denial with severity, suspense, and favour, and that they are not at a loss for an interpreter of the speeches made for their service. With this knowledge they govern with a high hand, and rule both the regents and the scholars.

What  
branches of  
knowledge  
are fittest  
for the wo-  
men.

If nevertheless they think much to give place to us in any thing whatsoever, and have a curiosity to be book-learned, poetry is an amusement proper for their occasions, it being a wanton, witty, dissembling, and prattling art, all pleasure and all show like themselves. They will also reap many advantages from history. In moral philosophy they will be furnished with lessons that will enable them to judge of our humours and conditions, to defend themselves from our treacheries, to regulate the precipitancy of their own desires, to make good use of their liberty, to lengthen the pleasures of life, and mildly to bear the inconstancy of an humble servant, the roughness of a husband, and the disagreeableness of age,

thought fit to ask them, whether or no he was seated? as if it was a thing beneath his honour to know what he did himself without asking. Seneca de Brevit. Vitæ, cap. 12. I have not yet heard that any of our petits maitres have come up to this Roman fop.

wrinkles, and the like. This is the utmost share that I would allow them in the sciences.

There are some particular tempers that are re- The good use of retirement.  
tired and recluse. I am naturally formed for communication and production. I am all open and undisguised, born for society and friendship. The solitude which I am fond of myself, and recommend to others, is chiefly with no other view than to withdraw my affections and thoughts into myself; to restrain and check not my proceedings, but my desires and cares, resigning all solicitude that is foreign, with a mortal aversion to servitude and obligation; and not so much to the company of men as to the multiplicity of business. To say the truth, local solitude rather expands and sets me at large. I the more willingly embark in affairs of state and the world when I am alone. At the Louvre, and in the crowd of the court, I keep within my own sphere: the throng makes me retire into myself, and I never entertain myself so wantonly, so licentiously, and so singularly, as in places of respect and ceremonious prudence. Our follies do not provoke me to laughter, but our wisdom. I am constitutionally no enemy to the bustle of court. I have spent part of my life there, and capable of behaving cheerfully in great companies, provided it be now and then, and at my own time. But that effeminacy of judgment, of which I have been speaking, necessarily attaches me to solitude; nay, at my own house, in the midst of a numerous family, and a house as much frequented as any, I see people enough, but seldom such as I am fond of conversing with. And I there reserve, both for myself and others, an unusual liberty. There is in my house no such thing as ceremony, attendance, conducting, and the like fatiguing rules of our courtesy. (O! servile and troublesome custom!) Every one there governs himself in his own way, let who will speak his thoughts; while I am mute in deep medi-



tation, and shut up in my closet, without any offence to my guests.

Character  
of the men  
whose fa-  
miliarity is  
worth  
seeking.

The men, whose society and familiarity I covet, are those they call honest and ingenious men ; and the idea of these puts me out of conceit with others. This, if rightly considered, is the rarest of our characters, and a character which is chiefly owing to nature. The end of this commerce is simply private friendship, frequent visits and conference, the correspondence of souls without other advantage. In our discourse, all subjects are alike to me. I care not whether there be weight or depth in it. There is still a grace and pertinence in it. The whole is tinctured with a judgment mature and steady, and mixed with good nature, frankness, cheerfulness, and friendship. It is not only in discoursing on the affairs of kings and states, that our understanding displays its beauty and force, but it shows it as much in private confabulation. I know what my people mean, even by their silence and smiles, and discover them better perhaps at table than at the council. Hippomachus said justly, that he knew good wrestlers by only seeing them walk in the streets. If learning will please to bear a part in our conference, it will not be rejected ; not the magisterial, imperious, and impertinent kind, as is generally used, but that which is subordinate and docile. All we intend by it is to pass away the time, for at the hour of being instructed and preached to, we will go seek it in its throne. May it condescend to favour us for this once if it please ; for as useful and desirable as it is, I suppose that, though we might want it, we could well enough dispense with it, and do our business without it. A person of good breeding, and used to converse with mankind, will naturally be agreeable to every body. Art is nothing but the counterpart and register of what such souls produce.

• The conversation of fine well-bred women is also to me a sweet enjoyment. *Nam nos quoque oculos*

*eruditos habemus* :\* “ For we also are versed in the “ art of ogling.” If the soul has not so much enjoyment in this as in the first, the bodily senses, which likewise have the greatest share of this, reduce it to a proportion near to the other, but in my opinion not quite. It is a commerce however, wherein a man had need be a little upon his guard, and especially those of a vigorous constitution, as mine is. In my youth I got a scald by it, and suffered all the torments which the poets say will happen to those who run into this commerce, without order and judgment. It is true this scourge taught me more wit :

*Quicumque Argoticâ de classe Capharea fugit,  
Semper ab Euboicis vela retorquet aquis.†*

The ship that would not on Caphareus run,  
Always is sure th’ Eubœan strait to shun.

It is madness to fix a man’s thought wholly upon it, and to engage in it with a furious and indiscreet affection ; but on the other hand, to be concerned in it without true love, and without the attachment of the will, like the comedians, to play a part that is made common by time and custom, without contributing any thing of his own to it but words ; it is indeed providing for his safety, but in as scandalous a manner as he that abandons his honour, or his profit, or his pleasure, from fear of danger. For it is certain that from such a proceeding no fruit can be expected to satisfy an honest soul. A man cannot take real pleasure in the enjoyment of what he has not in good earnest desired ; and this I say, though fortune should be so unjust as to favour their dissimulation, which often happens, because there is none of the sex, though as ugly as the devil, who does not think herself very amiable, who does not think herself preferable, either for her youth, her hair, or her gait (for with the ugly wo-

It ought to  
be attended  
with sincer-  
ity.

\* Cicer. Paradox, v. cap. 2.

† Ovid Trist. lib. i. el. 1.

men it is universally the same as with those that are handsome); and the Brachman virgins, who have no other recommendation, but that of the common crier, who calls the people together, come forth into the square to expose their matrimonial parts, to try if these at least are not tempting enough to procure them husbands. Consequently there is not one who does not easily suffer herself to be engaged by the first vow that is made to serve her. Now, from this treachery so common in the men of this age, it must needs happen, as we have already seen by experience, that the women rally and reunite themselves on purpose to avoid us, or else form their ranks by the example we give them, play their part of the farce, and give way to this negotiation without passion, care, or love. *Neque affectui suo aut alieno obnoxia* : \* “ Neither slaves to their own passion, nor to that of another person ;” believing, according to the persuasion of Lysias in Plato, that they may with the more advantage and convenience surrender themselves up to us, the less we love them. The result will be as it is in comedies, where the audience has as much or more pleasure than the actors. For my part, I have no more notion of a Venus without a Cupid, than of a mother without a child. They are what mutually lend and owe their existence to one another. Therefore this cheat rebounds upon the person that commits it ; to whom indeed it is of little or no expense, nor on the other hand does he get any thing by it of value. They who have made Venus a goddess, have taken notice that her chief beauty was incorporeal and spiritual ; but the Venus whom these people court is not so much as human, nor even brutal, but so very gross and terrestrial, that the very beasts will not accept her. We see that imagination and desire often heats and stimulates them before the body does : we see in

\* Tacitus’s Annal. lib. xiii. cap. 45, where the historian speaks only of the famous Poppea, the wife of Nero, the perfect model of coquetry.

both the sexes, that in the herd, they make choice and trial of their affections, and that they have among themselves an acquaintance of old good will. Even those which old age has deprived of bodily strength, do yet tremble, neigh, and twitter for love. We see them before the fact, full of hope and heat; and when the body has played its part, still tickled with the sweet remembrance of it; and we see some animals that swell with pride after the performance, and being tired and satiated, do yet, by vociferation, express a triumphant joy. He that has nothing to do, but only to discharge his body of a natural necessity, need to find employment for another by such curious preparations. This is not food for a coarse hoggish appetite.

As one who does not desire to be thought better than I am, I shall now tell of the follies of my youth. I have seldom been addicted to mercenary and common embraces, not only for my health's sake (and yet with all my care I had two mischances, though they were slight forerunners), but also from a contempt of what was vulgar and venal. I chose to heighten this pleasure with difficulty, by desire, and a certain kind of vanity: and I was of the emperor Tiberius's mind, who,\* in his amours, was as much smitten with modesty and an honourable extraction, as with any other quality; and of the taste of Flora, the courtesan,† who never prostituted herself to less than a dictator, a consul, or a censor; and solaced herself in the dignity of her lovers. Certainly pearl

\* Tacit. Annal. lib. vi. cap. 1.

† After having turned over many books in search of Montaigne's authority for this story, I found in Bayle's Dictionary that it is Brantome, who in his *lives, Des Femmes Galantes*, tom. i. p. 313, &c. says, that the courtesan Flora was of a good family and lineage; and that, whereas *Lais* was a common prostitute to all mankind, Flora only obliged the great, insomuch that she had this inscription over her door; "Ye kings, princees, dictators, consuls, censors, pontiffs, questors, ambassadors, and other great men, enter and welcome; but no others."

and tissue, titles, and attendants, add something to the pleasure.

Personal  
beauties  
preferable  
in amours  
to those of  
the mind.

As for the rest, I had a great liking to wit, provided the body was not exceptionable. For, to confess the truth, if either of these two beauties must of necessity be wanting, I would prefer the personal before the rational. The latter is of use in better things ; but in the subject of love, a subject in which the senses of seeing and feeling are chiefly concerned, something may be done without the charms of the mind, but without those of the body nothing. Beauty is the true advantage of the women, and so peculiarly theirs, that what we have, though it requires other features to render it such, is only in its best state when it is puerile and beardless, and common with theirs. It is said that those preferred to the service of the grand signior, on the score of their beauty, the number of whom is very great, are dismissed at 22 years of age at the farthest. Reason, prudence, and the offices of friendship, are more commonly found among the men ; and therefore they govern the affairs of the world.

Of reading,  
or the third  
sort of con-  
versation.

The two sorts of commerce, or conversation, which we have mentioned, viz. that with men by a free and familiar conversation, and that with women by love, are accidental, and dependent on another. The one does not occur so often as is to be wished ; the other decays with age ; so that they could never have been sufficient for the necessities of my life. That with books, which is the third, is much more sure, and more within our power. It yields to the former in the other advantages, but has constancy and readiness of service for its sole share. It accompanies, and is assisting to me wherever I go : it comforts me in old age and solitude ; it eases me of the weight of idle time, and delivers me at any hour from disagreeable company ; and it blunts the edge of pain, if it be not extreme, and has not the entire possession of me. To divert myself from an

uneasy thought, it is but to run to my books; they presently drive it out of my mind, by turning its attention to them: and though they see that I only have recourse to them for want of other more real, natural, and lively benefits, they do not reflect on me for it, but always receive me with the same countenance. "He may well go on foot," they say, "who leads his horse in his hand." And our James, king of Naples and Sicily, who, while handsome, young, and healthy, caused himself to be carried up and down in a hand-barrow, upon a sorry mattress, dressed in a vest of gray cloth, and a cap of the same; yet attended in great royal pomp with horse-litters, led horses of all sorts, gentleman and officers; put on an austerity that was effeminate and unsteady. The sick man is not to be pitied who has his cure in his pocket. In the experience and practice of this, which is a very true sentence, consists all the benefit which I receive from books; and yet in fact I make as little use of them, in a manner, as they who know them not. I enjoy them as misers do their hoards, by knowing that I have them to use when I please. With this right of possession my mind is satisfied, and at rest. I never travel without my books, be it in time of war or of peace; yet sometimes for several days or months, I do not look into them. I will read by and by, I say to myself, or to-morrow when I am in the humour. Mean while the time runs away without any inconvenience to me; for it is impossible to say how tranquil and easy I am in this consideration, that I have them by me, to divert myself with them whenever I please; and in the thought of what an assistance they are to me in life.—This is the best viaticum I have yet known for this mortal pilgrimage, and I extremely pity those men of understanding who are unprovided with it; yet I rather accept of any other kind of amusement, be it ever so light, because this cannot fail me. \*

The situa-  
tion of  
Mon-  
taigne's li-  
brary.

When I am at home I the oftener visit my library, from which I at once survey all the operations of my family. It is over the entrance into my house, from whence I have a view under me of my court-yards and garden, and of most of the offices of my house. There I turn over one book, then another, on various subjects, without order, and without design. One while I ruminate, another while I copy and dictate, as I walk to and fro, such whimsies as these in my Essays. It is in the third story of a tower, of which the first is my chapel, the second a chamber with its closets, where I often lie to be retired; above it is a great wardrobe. This was formerly the most useless part of my house. I there pass away the most of the days of my life, and most of the hours in the day, but am never there at night. At the end of it there is a very neat closet, with pleasant window-lights, and a fire-place. And was I not more afraid of the trouble than of the expense, the trouble, which drives me from all application to business, I could easily join to it on each side, and on the same floor, a gallery of 100 paces in length, and 12 in breadth; there being walls already raised, though for another design, to the height that is requisite. Every retired place should have a walk in it. For if I sit still my thoughts sleep. My fancy does not operate so well as when it is put in motion by that of my legs. They who study without a book are all in the same condition. The form of my study is round, and has no more level than what is taken up by my table and chair; so that I have a view of all my books in five rows of shelves, quite round me. It has three noble and free prospects, and is sixteen paces in diameter. I am not so constantly there in the winter, for my house is perched upon an eminence, as its name imports, and this part of it is most exposed to the wind, which pleases me the better, for not being so easy of access, and a little remote, as well for the benefit of

exercise as for being more retired. It is there that I am in my kingdom, as we say; and there I endeavour to render myself sole monarch, and to sequester this corner from all society, conjugal, filial, and civil. Every where else I have but a verbal authority, and of a confused essence. Miserable is that man, in my opinion, who has no place at home where to be by himself, to entertain himself alone, or to conceal himself from others. Ambition sufficiently plagues its proselytes by keeping them always in show, like a statue in a market-place, *Magna servitus est magna fortuna*.\* “A great fortune is a great slavery:” those who possess it have scarce a retirement for the necessities of nature. I have thought nothing so severe, in the austerity of life which our friars affect, as what I see in some of their fraternities; namely, to have a perpetual society of place by rule, and numerous assistants among them in every action whatever; and I think it somewhat more tolerable to be always alone, than never to be so.

If any one shall tell me, that it is undervaluing the Muses to make use of them only for mirth and pastime, I shall say he does not know the value of pleasure, play, and pastime, so well as I do; I live from hand to mouth, and, with reverence be it spoken, I only live for myself; in that all my designs terminate. I studied, when young, for the sake of ostentation, afterwards for wisdom, and now for my recreation, but never for gain. A vain and prodigal longing I had for this sort of furniture, to supply my own necessity, and to dress and adorn me; but I have long since weaned myself of it.

Books have many charming qualities to such as know how to choose them; but there is no good without its evil. This is a pleasure, not more pure and untainted than others; it has its inconveniences, and great ones too. The soul is exercised in it, but

The Muses  
are the  
sport and  
pastime of  
the mind.

The incon-  
veniences  
attached  
to the  
pleasure  
which  
books give.

\* Senec. Consolatio ad Polybium, cap. 26.



the body, the care of which I ought not to forget, remains in the mean time without action, grows heavy and stupid. I know of no excess more prejudicial to me, or more to be avoided in this my declining age. Thus have I given you my three favourite, and particular occupations. I speak not of the duties I owe to mankind by civil obligation.

## CHAPTER III.

### *Of Diversion.*

I WAS once employed to console a lady who was truly afflicted; for most of their mournings are affected and ceremonious:

*Uteribus semper lachrymis, semperque paratis,  
In statione suis, atque expectantibus illam,  
Quo jubeat manare modo.\**

They always have a dam for present use,  
Ready prepar'd whene'er they draw the sluice,  
On least pretence of joys, or griefs, or fears,  
To sally out in false dissembling tears.

The usefulness of administering diversion by way of comfort.

It is going the wrong way to work to oppose this passion, for opposition only provokes it, and makes them more sorrowful. The evil is exasperated by the warmth of argument. We see in common discourse, that what slips unguardedly from a man, if another goes to controvert it, the former takes it in dudgeon, and justifies what he had said; especially if it be a matter wherein he is interested. Besides, in so doing, you enter upon your work in a rough manner; whereas the first visits of a physician to his patient ought to be gentle, gay, and pleasant. Never did an ill-looking sullen, physician do any thing to

\* Juv. sat. vi. ver. 272, &c.

purpose. On the contrary, therefore, a man must, in order to make his way, sooth the patient's complaints, and express some approbation and excuse for them. By this discretion you gain credit to proceed farther; and, by an easy and insensible gradation, you fall into a reasoning that is more solid and proper for their cure. I, whose chief aim it was to deceive those bystanders who had their eyes fixed upon me, thought fit to palliate the disease; though indeed I find, by experience, that I have an awkward and unlucky hand at persuasion. My arguments are either too poignant, too dry, or too blunt and lifeless. After I had for a while applied myself to aer grievance, I did not attempt to cure it by strong and lively arguments, either because I had them not to use, or because I thought to gain my point better another way; neither did I set about the choice of the various methods of consolation prescribed by philosophy; as that what we complain of is no evil, according to Cleanthes;\* that it is a slight evil, as the Peripatetics say; that to complain thus is neither just nor laudable, according to Chrysippus; nor the method prescribed by Epicurus, more suitable to my taste, viz. shifting the thought from things that are afflicting to those that are pleasant; nor like Cicero, to make a collection of all these together, in order to dispense them occasionally. But, by softly weakening the force of my arguments, and turning them by degrees sometimes to subjects nearer to the present case, and at other times to those that were a little more remote; as she attended to me, I insensibly deprived her of her sorrow, and kept her calm and quite composed as long as I was with her. I diverted the complaint; but they who succeeded me in the same service found no amendment in her, for I had not gone to the root.

Perhaps I may have glanced elsewhere on some kind of public diversions; and the practice of mili- The method of diverting the ene:

\* Cic. Tusc. Quæst. lib. iii. cap. 31.

my, employed  
successfully in  
war and in  
negotia-  
tions.

tary diversions, which Pericles made use of in the Peloponnesian war, and of a thousand more such in other places, for drawing off the enemy's forces from a country, is too frequent in history. It was an ingenious stratagem by which the Sieur de Himbertcourt\* saved both himself and others, in the city of Liege, when the duke of Burgundy, who besieged it, made him enter into it to execute the articles that were agreed to for the surrender. The townspeople, who assembled in the night for that purpose, began to mutiny against the agreement, and many of them resolved to fall foul upon the negotiators of it, whom they had in their power. He feeling the gust of this first storm of the people, who were about rushing into his quarters to kill him suddenly, sent out two of the inhabitants of the city (for he had some of them then present with him) to make an offer to the town-council of fresh and more favourable terms, which he had framed on the spot for the present occasion. These two men diverted the first storm, by the repair of the enraged rabble to the town-house, to hear and consider of the subject of their commission. The deliberation was short, and so a second storm arose with as much fury as the other; whereupon he dispatched four fresh mediators, of the same quality, protesting that they had now better conditions to offer to them, and such as would give them entire content and satisfaction; by which means the people were again repressed. In short, by thus diverting their fury with such a contrivance of amusements, as made them spend it in vain consultations, by which it was at last laid asleep, he spun out the affair to another day, which was the principal thing he wanted.

How Atalanta was  
diverted,  
and there-

This other story is also of the same stamp. Atalanta, a virgin of extraordinary beauty, in order to disengage herself from a thousand or more suitors,

\* You will find this story at full length in the Memoirs of Philip de Comines, lib. ii. cap. 3.

who courted her in marriage, proposed this condition to them, that she would accept of him for a husband that should equal her in running, provided that they who came short of her should be put to death.\* There were enough who thought the prize very well worth such a risk, and who suffered the penalty of this cruel bargain. Hippomanes, being to take trial after the others, invoked the tutelar goddess of his amorous passion, and implored her assistance, who, hearing his petition, furnished him with three golden apples, and an instruction how to use them. The field on which they ran being quite open, as soon as Hippomanes perceived his mistress close at his heels, he, as if by inadvertency, let fall one of the apples, the beauty of which was so tempting to the virgin, that she failed not to turn out of the way to take it up.

*Obstupuit virgo, nitidique cupidine pomi  
Declinat cursus, aurumque volubile tollit.†*

The nimble virgin, dazzled to behold  
The shining apple rolling on the mold,  
Stopp'd her career to seize the tempting gold.

He did the same, when he saw himself hard pressed, by the second and third apples, till, by thus diverting her, and making her go often out of her way, he won the race.

When physicians cannot purge off a catarrh, they divert and turn it to some other less dangerous part. And I find also that this is the most ordinary practice for diseases of the mind. The mind, says Cicero, is sometimes to be drawn off to other thoughts, pursuits, cares, and occupations, and must often be cured, like sick persons, by the change of place.‡ It gives a little jostle to a man's disorders; it nei-

The diversion of the mind to other objects a useful method for the cure of its disorders.

\* "Præmia veloci conjux thalamique dabuntur :

"Mors pretium tardis : ea lex certaminis esto."

Ovid, Met. lib. x. fab. 11. ver. 12, 13.

† Idem, ibid. ver. 107, &c.

‡ Cic. Tusc. Quæst. lib. iv. cap. 35.

ther makes him sustain, nor diminish their attack, and only makes him decline and turn out of the way from it.

belongs  
it to a  
ocrates to  
familiar  
th death.

This other lesson is too sublime and too difficult. It is for men of the first class to pause upon, consider, and judge of it. It belongs only to a Socrates not to change countenance when he looks at death, but to grow familiar, and to sport with it. He seeks for no comfort but what he expects from that. To die appears to him a natural and indifferent accident. It is thereon that he fixes his sight and resolution, without looking elsewhere.

that in-  
aced the  
sciples of  
egesias to  
eprive  
nemselves  
f it.

The disciples of Hegesias, who actually starved themselves to death, and were animated to it by the fine language of his instructions, which was so powerful that king Ptolemy forbade him to entertain his followers any more with such homicide doctrines; those disciples, I say, do not consider death in itself, nor do they judge of it. It is not on that they fix their thoughts; they run towards, and aim at, a new being.

Whether it  
owing to  
firmness  
f soul that  
nose who  
re going  
die on a  
scaffold  
gave way  
to violent  
fits of de-  
votion.

Those poor wretches that we see brought upon a scaffold full of ardent devotion, and therein employing all their senses as far as possible, their ears to the instructions given them, their eyes and hands lifted up to heaven, and their voices employed in loud prayers, with a vehement and continual emotion, do things doubtless which are laudable and proper for such a necessity. We ought to commend them for their devotion, but not properly for their constancy. They shun the encounter, they turn death out of their thoughts, and amuse themselves with some trifle or other, as children are amused when a surgeon goes to prick them with the lancet. I have seen some who, when they have happened to look down upon those dreadful instruments of death that are near them, have fainted, and furiously turned their thoughts another way. Those who are to be cast

from a frightful precipice, are advised either to shut their eyes, or turn them to another side.

Subrius Flavius, the general, being, by Nero's The constancy of Subrius Flavius, just as he was going to be executed. command, to be put to death, and by the hands of Niger, another general, when they led him to the place of execution, Flavius, perceiving the hollow that Niger had caused to be made for his neck to be badly contrived, said to the soldiers who were present, "Neither is this according to military discipline." When Niger exhorted him to keep his head steady, "Do you but strike," said he, "as steadily." \* And he was right in his guess, for Niger's arm trembled, so that he made several strokes at his neck before he cut off his head. This man, indeed, seems to have had his thoughts steadily fixed on the subject.

He that dies in a battle, sword in hand, neither Whether men think much of death in a battle or duel. thinks, apprehends, nor considers of death, being diverted from the idea of it by the heat of the battle. An honest man of my acquaintance falling down by a thrust in a combat, and receiving nine or ten stabs from his adversary as he lay stretched on the ground, every one present called out to him to examine his conscience; but he told me afterwards, that though he heard what they said it nothing moved him, and that he thought of nothing but how to disengage himself, and be revenged. He killed his man in that same rencounter. He who brought L. Syllanus the sentence of his death did him very great service, inasmuch as that having heard his answer, † "That he was well prepared to die, but not by the hand of an executioner," he rushed upon him with his soldiers, when he, being quite unarmed, defended himself obstinately with his fists and feet, till he received so many wounds that he was killed, after having, by this sudden frenzy, dissipated the painful

\* Tacit. Annal. lib. xv. cap. 67.

† Tacitus calls him Lucius Silanus, Annal. lib. xvi. cap. 7.

‡ Tacit. Annal. lib. xvi. cap. 9.

apprehension of the lingering death for which he was designed.

The different considerations which hinder us from thinking directly of death.

We always think of something else ; either the expectation of a better life lays hold of us, and supports us, or the hopes of the valour of our children, or of the honour that will be hereafter done to our names, or the escape from the evils of this world, or the vengeance that threatens those who are the authors of our death. Poor Dido says,

*Spero equidem mediis, si quid pia numina possunt,  
Supplicia hausurum scopulis, et nomine Dido  
Sæpe vocaturum.*

---

*Audiam : et hæc manes veniet mihi fama sub imos.\**

Sure, if the gods have any pow'r at all,  
Split on the rocks, thou wilt on Dido call ;  
But all in vain ; thy shipwreck I shall know  
By fame convey'd me to the shades below.

Xenophon was sacrificing, with a crown upon his head, when news was brought to him of the death of his son Cryllus, slain at the battle of Mantinea.† At the first intelligence of it he took off his crown, and threw it on the ground ; but hearing, in the sequel of the narrative, how valiantly he fell, he took it up, and replaced it on his head. Epicurus himself, at his death, is comforted by the consideration of the utility and eternity of his writings. *Omnes clari et nobilitati labores, fiunt tolerabiles : ‡* “ All “ works that are illustrious and renowned are to be “ borne with.” And the same wound, the same fatigue, are not equally intolerable, as Xenophon says, to a general of an army and a common soldier. Epaminondas died with much more cheerfulness when he was informed that victory had declared for him. *Hæc sunt solatia, hæc fomenta summorum do-*

\* Virgil, *Æneid.* lib. iv. ver. 382, &c.

† Valer. Max. lib. v. sect. 10.

‡ Cic. *Tusc. Quæst.* lib. ii. cap. 25.

*lorum* : \* “ These are the lenitives, these the fomentations of the greatest sorrows.” Other circumstances of the like kind amuse and entertain us, and turn off our consideration of the thing in itself. Even the arguments of philosophy are always edging and glancing on the subject, without scarce touching the exterior part. The greatest man of the chief school of philosophy, which superintended the others, I mean the great Zeno, forms these syllogisms with respect to death and drunkenness. *Nullum malum gloriosum est ; mors autem gloriosa est ; mors ergo non est malum* : † “ No evil is honourable ; but “ death is honourable ; therefore death is not an “ evil.” Nobody trusts a drunken man with a secret, but any one will trust a wise man ; therefore no wise man is a drunkard. Is this hitting the mark ? I am pleased to see that these first rate geniuses cannot divest themselves of their fellowship with us. With all their pretended perfections, they are still but stupid mortals.

Revenge is a sweet passion, and strongly imprinted in nature. I see it plainly, though I have no experience of it. To divert a young prince from it lately, I did not offer to say, that, to the man who had smote him on one cheek, he should turn the other also, in obedience to charity ; nor did I endeavour to set before him the tragical events which poetry ascribes to this passion. I did not meddle with his passion, but tried, for a fancy, to give him a relish of the beauty of a contrary quality ; and, by representing the honour, favour, and good will, which he would acquire by good nature, I gave his mind a turn to ambition.

The way to  
dissipate  
violent  
longing for  
revenge.

Thus I carried my point.

If your affection in the article of love be too strong, disperse it, say they ; and they are perfectly right, for I myself have often tried it with advantage. Break it into desires of various kinds, of which, if you please, there may be one regent and

The usefulness of  
n king suc  
diversion  
in the p  
sion of  
love.

\* Cic. Tusc. Quest. lib. ii. cap. 24.    † Senec. epist. 82, 83.



paramount ; but lest it should tyrannise and domineer over you, weaken, and give it some pause, by dividing and diverting it :

*Cum morosa vago singultiet inguine vena.\*  
Conjicio humorem collectum in corpora quæque.†*

When one amour engrosses all thy mind,  
Discharge thy loins on all the leaky kind :  
For that's a wiser way than to restrain  
Within thy swelling nerves that hoard of pain.

And look to it in time, lest it prove too troublesome to deal with when it has once got possession of you.

*Si non prima novis conturbes vulnera plagis,  
Folginæque vagus venere ante recentia cures.*

Unless you fancy ev'ry one you view,  
Ramble in love, and cure old wounds by new.

It is possible to be dis-engaged from one passion by the means of another.

I was once disturbed by a strong passion, according to my natural temper, though not so vehement as just ; and perhaps had been undone by it if I had merely trusted to my own strength. Having need of a powerful diversion to draw me out of it, I grew amorous by art and by study, wherein I was assisted by my youth. Love relieved me and rescued me from the evil, which was brought upon me by friendship. It is the same in every other case. If a violent imagination possesses me, I think it the shorter way to change than to conquer it, I depute one at least different from it, if not contrary to it. Variation always relieves, dissolves, and dissipates. If I cannot encounter with it, I escape from it, and, in avoiding it, I slip out of the way, and use craft. By shifting of places, business, and company, I hide myself in the crowd of other amusements and sentiments, where it loses the trace of me, and wanders out of my way.

In this manner nature proceeds, by the aid of inconstancy ; for the time she has given us for the so-

\* Pers. sat. vi. ver. 73.

† Lucret. lib. iv. ver. 1033, &c.

vereign cure of our actions, gains its effect chiefly <sup>our pas-</sup> by reason that supplying our imagination with a <sup>sion.</sup> superfoetation of objects, it loosens and dissolves the first apprehension, how strong soever. A wise man visits his dying friend almost as much at the end of twenty-five years as in the first year; and, according to Epicurus, altogether as much, for he did not think the foresight of troubles, or their duration, an alleviation of them. But so many other thoughts run across this that it languishes, and is at length wearied out.

Alcibiades,\* in order to take off the fondness of the people for common reports, cut off the ears and tail of his beautiful dog, and turned him out of doors, on purpose to give them a subject for discourse, instead of prating of his other actions. For this same purpose of misleading the opinions, conjectures, and conversation of the people, I have also seen some women conceal their real affections by such as were counterfeit. Nay, I have seen one who has counterfeited so long that she has in good earnest dropped the real and original love, and been captivated by the feigned one: and by her I found that they who know their affections well placed are fools to consent to such a disguise. The public reception and entertainments being reserved for such pretended humble servants, a man may conclude him to be no conjurer if he does not in the end put himself into your place, and send you to his. This is properly to cut out and make a shoe for another to wear.

A little thing disengages and puts us aside; for a small matter engages us. We do not consider subjects, in the gross, and single in themselves: we are smitten with minute and superficial circumstances, or images, and with the insignificant parings of subjects:

\* Plutarch, in the Life of Alcibiades, says, this dog cost him 700 crowns, and that his tail was his greatest beauty.

*Folliculos ut nunc teretes æstate cicadæ  
Lingunt.\**

Such as the hollow husks or bags we find  
That butterflies in summer leave behind.

Plutarch himself laments† his daughter for the monkey-tricks she played in her infancy. The remembrance of a farewell, a particular action or favour, or of a final recommendation, afflict us. The sight of Cæsar's robe troubled all Rome, which was more than his death had done. The very sound of names ringing in our ears, as, "My poor master; my "very good friend; alas! my dear father; or my "sweet daughter," affects us. When those repetitions torment me, and I examine them closely, I find it is no other than a grammatical complaint. The word and tone affect me, as the exclamations of preachers often work more upon their auditories than their arguments, and as we are moved at the pitiful cries of a beast that is killed for our service, without my weighing or penetrating, in the mean while, into the true and solid essence of my subject.

—*His se stimulis dolor ipse lacessit.†*

With these incitements grief itself provokes.

These are the grounds of our mourning.

By what trifling objects the desire of life is kept up.

The privileges of criminals tied up to stop their urine.

The obstinate continuance of the stone, especially those in my bladder, has sometimes been attended with so long a suppression of urine, even for three or four days together, and brought me so near death, that it would have been a folly to have hoped to escape it, or even so much as to have desired to escape it, considering what I suffer from its cruel attacks. What a monster of cruelty was that emperor, who, among other tortures, which he invented for his criminals,§ suffered them to drink as much wine as they could swallow, and then caused

\* Lucret. lib. v. ver. 801, &c.

† In a treatise, entitled, A Word of Comfort to his Wife, on the Death of her Daughter, chap. 1.

‡ Lucan. lib. ii. ver. 42.

§ Suetonius, in the Life of Tiberius, chap. 62.

their privy members to be tied up so hard that their urine might stop and kill them. Finding myself in that state, I considered by what trifling causes and objects imagination fed my desire of life, of what atoms the weight and difficulty of parting with it was composed in my soul, and to how many frivolous thoughts we give way in so great an affair. A dog, a horse, a book, a glass, and what not, were reckoned in my loss: and others, with no less folly, in my opinion, reckoned up in theirs their ambitious hopes, their money, and their science. I look upon death with indifference when I consider it as the end of life universally. I insult over it in the gross, but, when it comes to particulars, it harrows my soul. The tears of a footman, the disposal of my old cloaths, the touch of a friendly hand, a common consolation, discourage me, and sink my spirits. Thus are our souls troubled by the complaints in romance: and the regrets of Dido and Ariadne in Virgil and Catullus raise a compassion, even in those who do not believe them. It is a proof of an obstinate hard heart, never to perceive it moved; as they tell a wonderful story of Polemon, who is said to have not so much as turned pale at the bite of a mad dog, though it tore away the calf of his leg.\* Nor is it within the extent of human wisdom, to have so lively and entire a conception of the cause of sorrow, by judgment, as not to be increased by his presence, when the eyes and ears are witnesses of it, the parts which are only to be agitated by trifling accidents.

Is it reason that even the arts themselves should make an advantage of our natural stupidity and weakness? An orator, during the farce of his pleading, shall be moved by the sound of his own voice, and his feigned agitations, and suffer himself to be captivated by the passion which he represents. He will imprint on himself a true and real grief, by means

The ora  
and the  
median  
touched  
the qui  
by acti  
their p  
though  
fiction.

\* In his Life by Diogenes Laertius, lib. iv. sect. 17.

of the part he plays, for the sake of transferring it to the audience, who are yet less affected than himself; like those persons who are hired at funerals, to assist in the ceremony of mourning, who sell their tears and their sadness by weight and measure. For though they act in a borrowed shape, yet, by adjusting and habituating their countenance to the occasion, it is certain that they are often entirely swallowed up by it, and immersed in real melancholy. I was one among many other of his friends, who attended the corpse of M. de Grammont to Soissons, from the siege of La Fere, where he was killed. I observed that in all the places through which we passed, we set the people a weeping and lamenting by only the solemn parade of our convoy, for the name of the deceased was not so much as known by them. Quintilian says,\* he had seen comedians so deeply engaged in a mourning scene that they could not help weeping when they went off of the stage; and that, having himself undertaken to stir up a passion in another person, he espoused it himself to such a degree, that he not only shed tears, but waxed pale, and behaved like a man truly overwhelmed with grief.†

pleasant  
method of  
inverting  
one's grief.

In a country, near our mountains, the women act both the priest and the clerk; for as they magnify the loss of the deceased husband by the remembrance of what good and agreeable qualities he had, they, at the very same time, make a collection and proclamation of his imperfections, as if they would make themselves some amends, and so divert their compassion to contempt; and yet, with a much better grace than we do, who, at the loss of a prime acquaintance, strive to give him new and false praise, and to make him quite another man, when we have lost sight of him, than he appeared to be when we saw him, as if regret was a matter of instruction, or that tears, by washing our understanding, cleared it.

\* Instit. Orat. lib. vi. cap. 2, at the end. † Idem, ibid.

For my part, I henceforth quit claim to all favourable characters the world shall be disposed to give of me; not because I shall be worthy of them, but because I shall be dead.

If any one asks another, what concern have you in this siege? "The interest of example;" he will say, "and of the common obedience due to my prince; I aim at no profit from it whatsoever; and for honour, I know what a small share of it can redound to such a private man as I am: I have in this neither passion nor quarrel." See him, however, but the next day, and you will find him quite another man, chafing, and red-hot with rage, in his line of the battle, for the assault. It is the glittering of so much steel, the fire and noise of our cannon and drums that has infused this fresh rancour and hatred into his veins. A frivolous cause you will say: how is it a cause? There needs none to put the mind in agitation. A mere whimsy, without body and without subject, governs and puts it in motion. Let me think of building castles in Spain, my imagination suggests to me conveniences and pleasures, with which my soul is really pleased and delighted. How often do we torment our minds with anger or sorrow by such shadows, and plunge ourselves in fantastic passions, which alter us both body and soul? What astonished, fleering, and confused grimaces, do such idle notions excite in our countenances? What sallies and agitations do they create, both of the members and the voice? Does it not seem that this individual man has false notions from a crowd of others, with whom he has dealings, or some devil within him that persecutes him? Inquire of yourself where is the object of this change? Is there any thing in nature, man excepted, which nothing sustains, over which nothing has any power?\*

Vain objects of mere imaginations, without reality, strike and determine the human mind.

\* The English translator, Mr. Cotton, for want of having seen Angelier's edition of Montaigne in 4to, anno 1588, has mistaken the sense of this passage, by wording it thus, "Is there any thing but us in nature, but subsisting nullity, over which it has power?"

Cambyzes, for only having dreamed in his sleep that his brother was to be one day king of Persia, put him to death, though he was a brother that he loved, and always confided in.\* Aristodemus, king of the Messenians, killed himself, out of a fancy that a certain howling of his dogs was an ill omen.† And king Midas did the same, because he had dreamed some disagreeable dream.‡ It is taking life at its just value to abandon it for a dream. Hear nevertheless how the soul triumphs over the wretchedness and weakness of the body, and its being liable to all injuries and alterations: and truly it has reason to speak thus of it:

*O prima infelix fingenti terra Prometheo!  
Ille parùm cauti pectoris egit opus.  
Corpora disponens, mentem non vidit in arte  
Recta animi primùm debuit esse via.§*

Oh! 'twas for man a most unhappy day  
When rash Prometheus formed him out of clay!  
In his attempt, the heedless architect  
Did indiscreetly the main thing neglect.  
In framing bodies he had not the art  
To form the mind, the first and noblest part.

## CHAPTER IV.

### *On some Verses of Virgil.*

Gay reflections necessary in old age.

**U**SEFUL meditation is the more embarrassing and burdensome by being copious and solid. Vice, death, poverty, and distempers, are subjects that are both grave and grievous. It is necessary for the

A phrase unintelligible, and only quoted lest many of his readers should be led into the same mistake.

\* Herodot. lib. iii. p. 196.

† Plutarch's Treatise of Superstition, chap. 9.

‡ Idem, *ibid.* § Propert. lib. iii. eleg. 5, ver. 7.

# ON SOME VERSES OF VIRGIL.

mind to be well furnished with the means of sustaining and combating evils, and instructed in the rules of a good life, and a right belief; and it should be often roused and exercised in this noble study. But, in an ordinary soul, this must be by relaxing sometimes, and with moderation; for, if continually bent to it, it will grow stupid. In my youth I found it necessary to put myself in mind, and to solicit myself to keep to my duty. Gaiety and health, they say, do not agree quite so well with these serious and wise discourses. I am at this present time in another state. The terms of old age only give me too much warnings, preach to me, and make me grow wiser. From an excessive sprightliness, I am sunk into excessive gravity, which is worse. For that reason I now suffer my fancy to run wild for the purpose, and sometimes employ my mind in wanton and juvenile thoughts, with which it diverts itself. I am of late but too reserved, too grave, and too sedate. Every day, at these years, admonishes me to be cool and temperate. This body of mine avoids irregularity, and dreads it. It is now its turn to guide my mind towards a reformation. This too governs in its turn, and more roughly and imperiously than the other. It does not let me rest an hour, either sleeping or waking, from some instruction concerning death, patience, and repentance. I now deny myself temperance, as I did formerly pleasure; for it draws me too far back, and even to a degree of stupidity. Now I would fain be my own master in every respect. Even wisdom has its excess, and has as much need of moderation as folly; therefore lest I should wither, dry up, and overburden myself with prudence, in the intervals which my infirmities allow me:

*Mens intenta suis ne siet usque matis.\**

Lest that my mind should evermore be bent,  
And fix'd on subjects full of discontent.

\* Ovid de Trist. lib. iv. eleg. 1, ver. 4.



ON SOME VERSES OF VIRGIL.

I gently decline it, and turn away my eyes from the stormy and cloudy sky that I have before me; which, thanks be to God, I consider without fear, but not without meditation and debate; and amuse myself with the remembrance of the days of my youth:

— *Animus quod perdidit, optat,  
Atque in præteritâ se totus imagine versat.\**

The mind longs to regain what it has lost,  
And by things past is totally engross'd.

Was it not the meaning of Janus's double face, to signify that childhood should look forward, and old age backward? Let years drag me on as they may, but it shall be backward. As long as my eyes are able to review that beautiful season which is expired, I now and then turn them that way. Though it is gone out of my blood-vessels, yet I am not willing to root the image of it out of my memory:

*Hoc est,  
Fwere bis, vitâ posse priore frui.†*

The man lives twice, who can the gift retain  
Of memory, to enjoy past life again.

Old men  
should be  
present at  
the pas-  
times and  
exercises of  
the youth.

Plato prescribes to old men to be present at the exercises, dancings, and sports of youth, that they may be pleased to see in others that activity and beauty of the body, which in themselves is no more; and that they may recall to mind the gracefulness and bloom of that flourishing stage of life: and he requires that, in those recreations, they ascribe the honour of the victory to the young man who has given the best, and the most diversion and joy to the company. I used formerly to mark dull gloomy days as extraordinary; those are now my ordinary ones, and the extraordinary are the serene, bright days. I am ready to leap out of my skin for joy, as much as if I had received a new favour when I had not a right to one. With whatever vain fancies I please

\* Petronius, p. 90, of the Paris edition, 1587.

† Martial, lib. x. epig. 23, ver. 7.

# ON SOME VERSES OF VIRGIL.

myself, I cannot sometimes force one poor smile from this wretched body of mine. I am only merry in conceit, and, as in a dream, to divert by stratagem the chagrin of old age : but surely it would require another remedy than a dream. A weak struggle of art against nature. It is a great folly to lengthen and anticipate human inconveniences, as every body does. I had rather be old, though it be for a less time, than be old before I am really so.\* I seize on even the least occasions of pleasure that come in my way. I know well, by hearsay, several sorts of pleasures, which are prudent, manly, and honourable ; but opinion has not power enough over me to give me an appetite for them. I covet not so much to have them gallant, magnificent, and pompous, as I do to have them delightful, easy to come at, and ready at hand. *A natura discedimus : populo nos damus, nullius rei bono auctori :*† “ We abandon nature to follow the popular taste, from which no good comes.” My philosophy is in action, in natural and present practice, very little in fancy. What a pleasure should I take in playing at cobnut, or whipping a top!

And take every opportunity of enjoying pleasure.

*Non ponebat enim rumores ante salutem.*‡

— He was too wise  
Idle reports before his health to prize.

Pleasure is a quality of very little ambition. It thinks itself rich enough, without any mixture of reputation with it, and is best pleased in obscurity. That young man who should pretend to a palate for wine and sauces, ought to be whipped. There was nothing which I less knew and valued, but now I learn it. I am very much ashamed of it, but what

\* Cicero's Treatise of old Age, chap. 10. † Senec. ep. 99.

‡ This is a very pleasant application of a grave verse, quoted out of Ennius by Cicero de Offic. lib. i. cap. 24, where that poet, speaking of Fabius Maximus, says, that while he was acting for the public good, he was indifferent to every thing that was said at Rome to run down his conduct.

ON SOME VERSES OF VIRGIL,

should I do? I am more ashamed and vexed at the occasions that prompted me to it. It is for us to dote and tell old wives' stories; but young men must mind their reputation, and make a genteel figure, Youth is advancing into the world, and into credit, We are going out of it. *Sibi arma, sibi æquos, sibi hastas, sibi pilam, sibi natationes, et cursus habeant; nobis senibus, ex lusionibus multis, talos relinquunt et tesseras.\** "Let them reserve to themselves arms, " horses, spears, clubs, tennis, swimming, and " racing; and, of the many sports, leave dice, and " draughts, and the chess-board, to us old men." The laws themselves send us to our houses. I can do no less in favour of this wretched state, into which I am pushed by my age, than to furnish it with play-things and amusements, as they do children, into whose class we are also relapsed. Both wisdom and folly will have enough to do to support and relieve me, by alternate offices, in this calamity of age:

*Misce stultitiam consiliis brevem.†*

Short folly mix with graver cares.

I also avoid the slightest attacks; for what would not have scratched me formerly, now pierce me through and through. My constitution begins naturally to be so crazy; *In fragili corpore odiosa omnis offensio est:* "To a weak constitution every injury is hateful."

*Mensque pati durum sustinet ægra nihil.‡*

And a sick mind nothing that's harsh can bear.

I was always of so delicate a constitution that the least injury would hurt me; and I am now become more tender, and more exposed on all sides:

*Et minimæ vires frangere quassa valent.§*

A crack'd pitcher is soon broke.

\* Cic. de Senect. cap. 16.

† Hor. lib. iv. ode 12, ver. 27.

‡ Ovid de Ponto, lib. i. eleg. 5, ver. 18.

§ Ovid. Trist. lib. iii. eleg. 11, ver. 22.

My judgment restrains me from repining and grumbling at the inconveniences I suffer by the law of nature; but it does not take away my feeling. Having no other view but a merry life, I would run from one end of the world to the other in quest of one year of pleasant and jocund tranquillity. I have enough of that sort which is gloomy and stupid, but it makes me sleepy and brainsick. I am not satisfied with it. If there be any person, any good company in country or city, in France or elsewhere, resident or travelling, who can like my humour, and whose humours I can like, let them but give a whistle, and I will go and furnish them with essays fat and lean.

Since it is the prerogative of the mind to rescue itself from old age, I advise mine by all means to do it. Mean time let it wax green and flourish like misletoe upon a dead tree. I fear however it is a traitor, because it has contracted so close a fraternity with the body, that it leaves me at every turn to follow the call of that. I flatter it, and deal with it apart, but in vain. I try, to no purpose, to break the connection, by laying Seneca and Catullus before it, and the representation of court ladies and royal masks. If its companion has the cholic, the mind seems also to be afflicted with it. Even the faculties that are peculiarly and properly its own, cannot then lift themselves up, but plainly find themselves cramped. There is no sprightliness in its production, if there be none at the same time in the body.

Our teachers are in the wrong who, while they are in quest of the causes of the extraordinary transports of the mind, attribute it to a divine extasy, to love, to a martial fierceness, poetry and wine, have denied the share of it due to health. A boiling, vigorous, full, and idle state of health, such as formerly the verdure of youth and indolence furnished me with by fits; that fire of gaiety raises lively clear flashes in the mind, beyond our natural light, which are accompanied with the most fantas-

The mind too closely attached to the body.

The health and vigour of the body is the cause of the extraordinary sallies of the mind.

tical, if not the most desperate enthusiasm. Now it is no wonder if a contrary state of body sink and clog my spirits, and produce a contrary effect :

*Ad nullum conturgit opus cum corpore languet.\**

The man, whose body languishing doth lie,  
Cannot to any work himself apply.

And yet would have me obliged to it, as it pretends, for my opposing this agreement much more than is common with mankind to do; at least, while we have a truce, let us banish difficulties and mischiefs from our commerce :

*Dum licet,† abductæ solvatur fronte senectus.‡*

Let even the wrinkles of old age be smooth'd.

Mon-  
taigne's  
character  
of wisdom.

*Tetrica sunt amanda jocularibus.§* " Sour  
" chagrin must be sweetened with jocularity." I  
like wisdom that is gay and courteous, and fly from  
all crabbedness and austerity, having a suspicion of  
every grim countenance. *Tristemque vultus tetrici  
arrogantiam :*

*Et habet tristis quoque turba cynædos.||*

A dismal face oft hides a vicious heart.

I am sincerely of Plato's opinion, who says, that good or ill tempers are a great indication of the goodness or badness of the heart. Socrates had one settled countenance, but it was serene and smiling; not a settled gloominess, like that of old Crassus, who was never seen to laugh. Virtue is a quality pleasant and gay.

Mon-  
taigne's  
opinion of  
those who  
shall con-  
demn the  
freedom of  
his writ-  
ings.

I know very well that few will quarrel with the freedom of my writings, who have not more reason to quarrel with the freedom of their own thoughts. It is very humorous to play the severe critic on the writings of Plato, and to pass slightly over his pretended connections with Phædo, Dion, Stella, and

\* Corn. Gall. eleg. ii. ver. 125. † In the original it is " et decet."

‡ Hor. Epod. lib. ode 13, ver. 7.

§ Sidonius Apollinaris, lib. i. ep. 9, Heronius, towards the end.

|| Mart. lib. vii. ver. 9.

**Archeanassa.** *Non pudeat dicere, quod non pudet sentire:* "Let no man be ashamed to speak what he "is not ashamed to think." I hate a froward pensive temper, which skims over the pleasures of life, and seizes and feeds upon its misfortunes, like the flies that cannot stick to a body that is well polished and sleek, but fasten and settle upon such as are rough and knotty; and like the cupping-glasses that only suck and draw the bad blood.

As for the rest, I have made it a rule to myself to dare to say all that I dare to do, and I am even displeased at thoughts that will not bear the light. The worst of my actions and qualities do not appear to me so foul as I find it foul and base not to dare to own them. Every one is discreet in the confession, and men ought to be so in the action. The boldness of doing ill is in some measure recompensed and restrained by the boldness of confessing it. Whoever will oblige himself to tell the whole, should oblige himself to do nothing that he must be forced to conceal. God grant that this excessive liberty I take, may draw men to freedom superior to those sneaking squeamish virtues that spring from our imperfections; and that they may be brought to the standard of reason at the expense of my intemperance. A man must see and study his vice in order to reveal it: they who conceal it from others, commonly conceal it from themselves, and do not think they commit sin secretly enough, if they themselves see it. They withdraw and disguise it from their own consciences. *Quare vitia sua nemo confitetur? Quia etiam nunc in illis est: somnium narrare vigilantis est:*\* "Why does no man confess his "vices? Because he yet continues in them: it is for "a man who is awake to tell his dream." The diseases of the body are better known by being increased. We find that to be the gout, which we called a rheum, or a strain. The distempers of the

Of the liberty he takes to say all that he dares to do.

soul, the stronger they are, keep themselves the more obscure; and the most diseased have the least feeling of them. We must, therefore, often bring them to the light with an unrelenting hand, and open and tear them from the bottom of our hearts. As in doing good, so in doing evil, the mere confession of it is sometimes a satisfaction. Is there any deformity in doing amiss that can excuse us from confessing it? It is so great a pain to me to dissemble, that I avoid being trusted with another person's secrets, for I have not the courage to disavow my knowledge of them. I can conceal it, but deny it I cannot, without great pains and vexation. To be very secret, a man must be so by nature, not by obligation. It is of little worth, in the service of a prince, to be secret, if a man be not also a liar. If he, who asked Thales, the Milesian, whether he ought solemnly to deny that he had committed uncleanness, had applied himself to me, I should have told him that he ought not; for I take lying to be a worse crime than the other. Thales advised him to quite the contrary, bidding him swear,\* in order to shield the greater crime by the less: nevertheless this counsel was not so much a choice, as a multiplication of vice: upon which let us say this, by the by, that we deal well with a conscientious man, when we

\* Here Montaigne makes Thales say the very contrary to what he really said; and this, by mistaking the sense of Diogenes Laërtius, the author whom he must have consulted for the answer: "A man," says Diogenes, "who had committed adultery, having asked Thales, 'whether he might not deny it upon oath?'" Thales made answer, "But is not perjury even a worse crime than adultery?" See Diogenes' *Life of Thales*, lib. i. sect. 26. Perhaps Montaigne was deceived by some edition of this author, where the note of interrogation was omitted after the last word, which, indeed, is an omission that I find in Henry Wetstein's edition, which, excepting that, is very correct. But I am more inclined to think, that Montaigne's memory, so wonderfully apt to fail him, as he himself confesses, has here played him a scurvy trick; for whatever construction he put upon the words of Diogenes Laërtius, it cannot be thence inferred that Thales advised the man to take an oath for the sake of shielding the greater evil by the less.

propose to him some difficulty to counterbalance a vice ; but when we shut him up between two vices he is put to a hard choice, as was the case of Origen, The hard choice put to Origen. when it was put to his choice, either to turn idolater, or to suffer himself to be carnally abused by a great Æthiopian slave that was brought to him. He submitted to the first condition, and, as it is said, viciously. Yet those women of our time, who protest that they had rather burden their consciences with ten men than one mass, would be allowed to be women of taste, considering their error. If it be an indiscretion so to publish errors, there is no great danger of its being made a precedent and practice. For Aristo said, that the winds, which men most feared, were those that exposed them. We must tuck up this ridiculous rag, which hides our manners. They send their consciences to the stews, and at the same time keep a starched countenance. They espouse the laws of ceremony, and there fix their duty ; so that neither can injustice complain of incivility, nor malice of indiscretion. It is pity that every bad man is not also a fool ; and that decency should be a cloak for his vice. Such plasterings are only proper for a good substantial wall, which it is worth while to preserve and white-wash.

In complaisance to the Hugonots, who condemn Why Montaigne chose to be confessed in public. our auricular private confession, I confess myself in public religiously and purely. As St. Augustin, Origen, and Hippocrates, published the errors of their opinions, I also discover those of my manners. I am all agog to make myself known, and care not to how many, provided it be truly ; or, to say better, I long for nothing, but I cannot bear to be taken for what I am not by those who happen to know my name. He that does every thing for honour and glory, what does he think to gain by showing himself to the public under a vizard, and by concealing what he really is from the knowledge of the people ? Commend a crooked fellow for his fine stature, he



has reason to take it for an affront. If you are a coward, and yet honoured for being a man of valour, is it you whom they mean? They take you for another person. I should be as fond of that man, who pleases himself with the compliments and congees that are made to him, as if he were the head of the company, when he is one of the meanest in the train. Archelaus, king of Macedonia, walking along the street, a person threw water on him, for which, his attendants said, he ought to punish him. "Nay, but," said the king, "he did not throw the water upon me, but on the man he took me to be." To one who informed Socrates, that the people spoke ill of him, "Not at all," said he, "for there is nothing in me of what they say." As for my part, whoever should commend me for being a good pilot, or very modest, or very chaste, I should owe him no thanks. And in like manner, whoever should call me traitor, robber, or drunkard, I should be as little offended. They, who do not know themselves, may feed their vanity with false applause; but not I, who see myself, and look into the very bottom of my heart, and very well know what belongs to me. I am content to be less commended, provided I am better known. I might be reckoned a wise man in such a sort of wisdom as I take to be folly. I am chagrined that my Essays serve the ladies only as a common moveable, or furniture for the hall. This chapter will advance me to the closet. I love a little private conversation with them; for that which is public, is without favour and without savour. In farewells we are warmed with a more than ordinary affection for the things we take leave of. I take my final leave of this world's joys. These are our last embraces.

Why the action which brings us into the world, is excluded

But, to come to my subject, what is the reason that the act of generation, an action so natural, so necessary, and so justly the men's prerogative, what has it done that people dare not speak of it without a blush, and that it should be excluded from all

serious and regular discourse? We boldly pronounce the words "kill, rob, betray," but the other we dare not mention so as to be heard. Does it mean that the less we exhale of the fact in speech, we have the more authority to swell it in thought? For it is happy that the words which are least spoken or written, and most kept in, are the best understood, and the most generally known. Every age, all ranks, know them as well as they do bread. They are imprinted in every one, without being expressed, and without voice and form. And the sex that is bound to say least of it, does it most. It is an action which we have lost in the sanctuary of silence, out of which it is a crime to force it, instead of accusing and judging it; neither dare we to lash it, but by periphrasis, and in picture. A great favour to a criminal to be so detestable that justice reckons it unjust to touch and see him, and to be obliged to the severity of his condemnation for his liberty and security. Is it not the case here as it is with books, which sell and spread the more for being suppressed? For my part, I am ready to take Aristotle at his word, who says that bashfulness is an ornament to youth, but a reproach to old age. These verses are the doctrine of the old school, to which I adhere much rather than to the modern, as its virtues appear to me greater, and its vices less:

*Ceux qui par trop fuyant Venus estrivent '  
Faillant autant que ceux qui trop la suivent.\**

They err no less, who Venus too much shun,  
Than those who to her altars always run.

*Tu dea, tu rerum naturam sola gubernas,  
Nec sine te quicquam dias in luminis oras  
Exoritur, neque fit lætum, nec amabile quicquam.†*

Thou deity, by whom all nature's sway'd,  
Without whose power nothing can spring to light,  
Or beautiful, or lovely to the sight.

\* Verses, Amyot's translation of Plutarch, chap. 5.

† Lucret. lib. i. ver. 22.

Pallas and  
the Muses  
are in a  
great con-  
nection  
with Ve-  
nus.

I cannot imagine who could set Pallas and the Muses at variance with Venus, and make them cold towards love; for I know no deities that tally better, or are more indebted to one another. He who will not own that the Muses have amorous imaginations, will rob them of the best entertainment they have, and of the noblest subject of their composition; and whoever shall deprive love of the communication and service of poetry, will disarm it of its best weapons. By these means they charge Pallas, the god of familiarity and benevolence, and the Muses, who are the tutelar deities of humanity and justice, with the vice of ingratitude and disrespect. I have not been so long cashiered from the suit and service of that deity, but my memory still retains its strength and power:

*Agnosco veteris vestigia flammæ.\**

Of my old flame there yet remain some sparks.

*Nec mihi deficiat calor hic hyemantibus annis.*

I have some heat left in my winter age.

*Qual l'alto Egeo, perche aquilone o noto  
Cessi, che tutto prima il volse e scosse,  
Non s'achetta ei però, ma'l sono e'l moto  
Ritien de l'onde anco agitate e grosse.†*

As when a storm, which late with furious blast,  
Th' Ægean ocean heav'd, at length is past,  
While the high waves subside into a plain,  
Soft undulations move along the main.

But, as far as I understand of the matter, the abilities and valour of this god are more lively and animated, by the painting of poetry, than in their own essence:

*Et versus digitos habet. ‡*

And there's harmony in verse to charm a Venus.

\* Virg. Æneid. lib. iv. ver. 23.

† Tasso's Gierusalem Liber. canto 12, stanza 68.

‡ Juv. sat. 6, ver. 197.

Poetry represents a kind of air more amorous than love itself. Venus is not so beautiful, stark-naked, alive, and panting, as she is here in Virgil :

*Dixerat, et niveis hinc atque hinc diva lacentis  
Cunctantem amplexu molli fovet : ille repente  
Accepit solitam flammam, notusque medullas  
Intravit calor, et labefacta per ossa cucurrit.  
Non secus atque olim, tonitru cum rupta corusco  
Ignea rima micans percurrit lumine nimbos.*

————— *Ea verba loquutus,  
Optatos dedit amplexus, placidumque petivit  
Conjugis infusus gremio per membra soporem.\**

She said, and round him threw her snow-white arms,  
And warm'd him, wav'ring, with a soft embrace.  
He quickly felt the wonted flame, which pierc'd  
Swift to his marrow through his melting bones ;  
As when in thunder, lanc'd along the sky,  
A streak of fire runs streaming through the clouds.

This having said,  
After the wish'd embrace, he sunk to rest,  
Softly reclin'd, on his fair consort's breast.

All the fault I find in these lines is, that he has represented her a little too much in rapture for a married Venus. In this discreet partnership the appetites are not usually so wanton, but more grave and dull. Love hates that its votaries should be swayed by any motive foreign to itself, and is but cool in such familiarities as are formed and maintained under any other title, as marriage is, wherein it is reasonable to think that kindred and the dowry should have as much, or more weight, than comeliness and beauty. Men, say what they will, do not marry for themselves ; they marry as much, or more, for the sake of posterity and their families. The interest and usefulness of marriage concerns our descendants far beyond our time ; and therefore I like the way of negotiating it by a third hand, and by the judgment of others, rather than by that of

\* Æneid. lib. viii. ver. 387, 392, 404, 405, 406.

the parties that are to be married : and how opposite is all this to the conventions of love ! It is a kind of incest, as I think I have said elsewhere, to exert the efforts and extravagancies of an amorous licentiousness in that venerable and sacred alliance. A man, says Aristotle, should accost his wife with prudence and modesty, lest, by dealing with her too wantonly, the pleasure should make her exceed the bounds of reason. What he says with regard to conscience, the physicians say with regard to health, that pleasure excessively hot, lascivious, and frequent, corrupts the seed, and hinders conception. But it is said, on the contrary, that to supply a languishing congress, as that is naturally, with a due and prolific heat, a man should offer at it but seldom, and at notable intervals.

*Quô\* rapiat sitiens Venerem interiusque recondat.†*

I see no marriages that sooner miscarry, or are disturbed, than those which are spurred on by beauty and amorous desires. The foundations should be more solid and constant, and they should be proceeded in with circumspection. This furious ardour in them is good for nothing.

That love  
is no more  
to be found  
in the mar-  
ried state  
than virtue  
in nobility.

They who think to do honour to the married state, by joining love to it, are methinks like those who, in favour of virtue, hold that nobility is nothing else but virtue. They are indeed somewhat akin, but they differ very much ; and therefore to confound their names and titles is doing wrong to both. Nobility is a fine quality, and with reason introduced ; but, forasmuch as it is a quality dependent on another, and which may fall to a man who is vicious and good for nothing, it is far below virtue in estimation. If it be virtue, it is a virtue that is artificial and apparent, depending on time and chance, differing in form according to the various countries, living

\* Montaigne has explained this verse enough before he quoted it.

† Virg. Geo. lib. iii. ver. 137.

and mortal, without any source more than the river Nile, genealogical and common, of succession and semblance, drawn by a consequence that is a very weak one. Knowledge, power, bounty, beauty, riches, and all other qualities, fall into communication and commerce ; but this is consummated in itself, and of no use to the service of another. There was proposed to one of our kings the choice of two competitors for a certain office, of whom the one was a gentleman, and the other was not. The king ordered that, without respect to quality, they should choose him who had the most merit ; but that when the worth of the competitors should appear to be entirely equal, then they should have respect to nobility. This was justly to give it its due rank. A young man unknown coming to Antigonus, to solicit that he might succeed to the post of his deceased father, a person of worth ; he said to him, “ In such preferences as these,” my friend, “ I do not so much regard the noble extraction of my soldiers as their prowess.”\* And indeed it ought not to fare with soldiers as it did with the king of Sparta’s officers, trumpets, minstrels, cooks, &c. who were succeeded in their offices by their children, how ignorant soever, in preference to those who had more experience in the business.

The people of Calicut exalt their nobility above the human species. They are prohibited marriage, and every employment, but what is military. They may have as many concubines as they desire, and the women as many panders without being jealous of one another : but it is a capital and unpardonable crime to couple with a person of a meaner condition than themselves : nay, they think themselves polluted if they are but touched by one passing along ; and, as if their nobility was strangely injured and wounded by it, they kill such as come but a little too near them ; insomuch that those who are

To what rank the nobility are promoted in the kingdom of Calicut.

\* Plutarch of False Modesty, ch. 10.

not noble are obliged to call out as they go, like the gondoliers of Venice, at the turnings of streets, for fear of running foul of one another; and the nobility command them to step aside to what part they please. By this means the nobility avoid what they reckon a perpetual ignominy, and the others certain death. No length of time, no favour of the prince, no office, or virtue, or riches, can make a plebeian become noble; to which this custom contributes, that marriages are prohibited between families of different trades, insomuch that one descended from a shoemaker may not marry a carpenter; and the parents are obliged to train up their children exactly to the father's business, and to no other; by which means the distinction and continuation of their fortune is kept up.

The idea of  
a good  
marriage.

A good marriage, if there be such, rejects the company and conditions of love: it endeavours to display those of friendship. It is a sweet society of life, full of constancy, trust, and an infinite number of useful and solid offices, and mutual obligations. No woman that has a true taste of it, or

—— *Optato quam junxit lumine tædæ,\**

who is married to her liking, would be willing to be in the stead of a mistress to her husband. If she be lodged in his affection, as a wife, she is then lodged much more honourably and securely. When his love is set upon and importunate for another object, let any one but then ask him on which he had rather a disgrace should fall, on his wife or on his mistress, whose misfortune would trouble him most, and to which of them he wishes most grandeur; such questions admit of no doubt in a good marriage.

A good  
marriage,  
the most  
happy  
state in hu-  
man so-  
ciety.

That we see so few good marriages is the greater token of their value; if well formed and adjusted, there is not a more beautiful scene in human society. We cannot do without it, and yet we are continually

running it down. Just so it is in the cages, where the birds that are within are mad to get out, and those that are without would fain get in. Socrates, being asked whether it was most commodious, to take a wife or not, made answer, "Let a man do " which he will, he will repent of it."\* It is a contract, to which the common saying, *Homo homini, aut deus, aut lupus*: "Man to man is either a god, " or a devil," may very fitly be applied. There must be a concurrence of a great many qualities to constitute it. It is in this age fitter for mean and vulgar souls, which are not so much under the influence of diversions, curiosity, and idleness.

Such wild humours as mine, which hates all sorts of connection and restraint, are not so proper for it ;

*Et mihi dulce magis resoluto vivere collo.†*

For liberty to me is far more sweet  
Than all the pleasures of the nuptial sheet.

Might I have had my will, I would not have married even wisdom itself, if she would have had me. But we may say what we please ; we are carried away by custom, and the common practice of life. Most of my actions are governed by example, not by choice : and yet I did not comply with it properly. I was led and carried to it by strange occasions. For not only things that are most inconvenient, but the most deformed, the most vicious, and those to which we have the greatest aversion, may become acceptable by certain conditions and accidents : so vain is any human state. In reality, I was persuaded to marriage at a time when I was worse prepared for it, and more averse to it, than I am now that I have tried it. And as great a libertine as I am taken to be, I have in truth observed the marriage-articles more strictly than I either promised or expected. It is in vain to kick when a man is once fettered. A man ought to use his liberty sparingly ;

Why Montaigne married, though very ill disposed for it.

\* Diog. Laert. lib. ii. sect. 3<sup>a</sup>. † Corp. Gall. eleg. 1, ver. 6.



but after he has submitted to the marriage tie, he must confine himself within the laws of the common duty, at least endeavour it all he can.

Marriage ought to be exempt from hatred and contempt.

They who enter into this contract with a view to behave in it with hatred and contempt, act unjustly, as well as unhandsomely; and equally harsh and injurious is that fine rule which I find passes from hand to hand among the women, like a sacred oracle :

*Sers ton mary comme ton maistre,  
Et t'en garde comme d'un traistre.*

Serve thy husband like a waiter.  
But guard thyself as from a traitor.

Which is as much as to say, behave to him with a constrained, inimical, and distrustful reverence, which is a style of war and defiance. I am too mild for such rugged designs. To say the truth, I am not yet arrived to that perfection of cunning and complaisance, as to confound reason with injustice, and to ridicule every rule and order that does not agree with my appetite. Because I hate superstition I do not immediately run into irreligion. If a man does not always perform his duty, he ought at least always to love and acknowledge it. There is treachery in the marriage contract, if the affection of the parties be not mutual. We will now proceed.

How Virgil could think a marriage of free choice to be without fidelity.

Our poet represents a marriage full of harmony and good agreement, in which however there is not much fidelity. Did he mean to say that it is not impossible for a person to yield to the importunities of love, and yet reserve some duty towards marriage; and that it may be injured without being totally broken? A footman may happen to ride in his master's boots, and yet not hate him. Beauty, opportunity, and destiny (for destiny has also a hand in it),

——— *Fatum est in partibus illis  
Quas sinus abscondit : nam si tibi sidera cessent  
Nil faciet longi mensura incognita nervi.\**

Fate, which the whole world rules, exerts its spite,  
 Ev'n in the parts conceal'd from common sight :  
 And if the stars to favour you should fail,  
 Your furniture of lust will not avail.

may have attached her to a stranger ; yet not so entirely perhaps but she may have some link of love that still holds her to her husband. They are two designs, which have distinct paths without being confounded. A woman may yield to a man, whom she would by no means choose to marry ; I do not say from a dislike to his circumstances, but even to his person. Few men have made a wife of a mistress, but they have repented it : and, even in the other world, what an unhappy life does Jupiter lead with his, whom he at first intrigued with, and enjoyed as a mistress ? This is what they call disgracing, or undervaluing a thing, in order the sooner to obtain it. I have, in my time, known an instance where love has been shamefully and dishonestly cured by marriage. The considerations are too widely different. We love two things which are not only different, but contrary without any impediment. Isocrates said, that the city of Athens was liked just in the same manner as the ladies of pleasure are. Every body loved to take a turn thither, and to pass away his time, but nobody liked it so well as to be wedded to it ; that is to say, to settle there, and make it his home. I have been vexed to see husbands hate their wives, only because they do them wrong. We should not however love them the less for our own faults ; they should at least, upon the score of repentance and compassion, be dearer to us.

They are ends that are different, and yet somewhat compatible. Marriage has for its share, profit, justice, honour, and constancy ; a flat but more universal pleasure. Love is founded on pleasure only, and has it in truth more ticklish, lively, and acute ; a pleasure inflamed by the difficulty of attaining it. There must needs be a sting and smart in it. It is no longer love if it be without darts and fire. The

Difference  
 between  
 marriage  
 and love.

bounty of the ladies is too profuse in the married state, and blunts the point of affection and desire : to escape which inconvenience, do but see what pains Lycurgus and Plato take in their laws.

The severe laws imposed by the men upon the women before the latter gave their consent to them.

The women are not at all to blame, when they refuse the rules of life that are introduced into the world, forasmuch as they were made by the men, without their consent. There is naturally a contention and brawling between them and us. The strictest agreement we have with them is even mixed with tumult and tempest. In the opinion of our author we deal inconsiderately with them in this. After we have discovered that they are, without comparison, more capable and ardent in the feats of love than we are, and that the priest of old testified as much, who had been one while a man, and then a woman :

*Venus huic erat utraque nota.\**

Tiresias had both sexes try'd.

Likewise, after we have learned from their own mouths the proof that was given of the truth of this by an emperor and empress of Rome, who lived at different times, and were both famous for their superior achievements upon this occasion ; he for deflowering in one night ten Sarmatian virgins, that were his captives ; and she for having really had twenty-five bouts in one night, changing her man according to her necessity and her fancy :

--- *Adhuc ardens rigida tentigine vulvæ,  
Et lassata viris, nondum satiata recessit.†*

Still burning with the rage of furious lust,  
Tir'd with enjoyment, but unquenched her thirst.

And, considering the quarrel that happened once in Catalonia between a man and his wife, wherein the latter complaining of his too frequent addresses to her (not that I think so many as made her uneasy, for I believe no miracles except religious ones), as,

\* Ovid Metam. lib. iii. fab. 3, ver. 23. † Juv. sat. 6, ver. 135.

under that pretext, to curtail and curb in this, which is the very fundamental act of marriage, the authority of the husbands over their wives, and to show that their frowardness and ill nature go beyond the nuptial bed, and spurn under foot the very charms and pleasures of Venus, the husband made answer, like an unnatural brute as he was, that on fast-days he could not content himself with less than ten courses. Upon this came out a remarkable decree of the queen of Arragon; by which, after the mature deliberation of council, this good queen, to give a rule and example to all future times of the moderation and modesty required in lawful marriage, appointed the number of six in any one day to be a legal and necessary stint; releasing and quitting very much of the necessity and desire of her sex, for the sake, she said, of establishing an easy, and consequently a permanent and unchangeable form; whereupon the doctors cry out, what the devil must be the female appetite and concupiscence, since their reason, their reformation, and their virtue are taxed at such a rate, considering the different judgment of our appetites? For Solon, the patron of the law-school,\* only taxed us at three times a month, that this conjugal commerce might not fail. After having, I say, both believed and preached this, we go so far as to enjoin them continency for their peculiar portion, and upon the most rigorous penalties.

Though there is no passion more hard to contend with than this, we require that the women alone should resist it; not barely as a vice, but an execrable abomination, worse than irreligion or parricide? and yet we fall into it without blame or reproach. Even those of us who have endeavoured to master this passion, have acknowledged how dif-

Men give themselves a loose to the passion of love, and severely forbid it at the same time to the women.

\* Plutarch in his treatise, entitled, *'Egarrivōs*, of Love, p. 769, tom. ii. the Paris edition in 1624.

ficult, or rather impossible it is to subdue, weaken, and cool the body by the use of material remedies. We, on the contrary, desire constitutions that are sound, vigorous, in good plight, well fed, and chaste at the same time; that is, both hot and cold; for marriage, which we say was enjoined us to hinder them from burning, is little refreshment to them according to our behaviour. If the women take a man, the vigour of whose age is still boiling, he will be proud of spreading it else where :

*Sit tandem pudor aut eamus in jus ;  
Multis mentula millibus redempta,  
Non est hæc tua, Basse, vendidisti.\**

Bassus ! for shame at length give over,  
Or I to justice must my cause resign ;  
The goods with which you play the rover,  
Were dearly bought, and are no longer thine.

The philosopher Polemon was justly prosecuted by his wife for sowing in a barren field the seed that was due to a fruitful one.† If, on the other hand, they choose decayed men, they will be in a worse condition in marriage than maids and widows. We think them well provided because they have a man always with them ; just as the Romans thought Clodia Læta, a vestal virgin, to have been violated because Caligula approached her, though it was affirmed that he did no more than approach her. But, on the contrary, we by this add to their necessity, forasmuch as the contest and company of any man whatsoever rouses their desire, which, in solitude would be more quiet : and it is likely that it was in order to render their chastity the more meritorious by this circumstance and consideration, that Boleslaus and his wife Kinge, the sovereigns of Poland, united in a vow of chastity, when in bed together on their very wedding night, and kept it in spite of the delights of matrimony.

\* Martial, lib. xii. epig. 99, ver. 10.

† Diog. Laert. in the Life of Polemon, lib. iii. sect. 17.

We train them up from their childhood to the negotiations of love. Their beauty, their dress, their knowledge, their speech, and their whole instruction tend only to this point. Their governesses imprint nothing in them but the idea of love, if it were only by continually representing it to them, to give them a disgust to it. My daughter (the only child I have) is now of an age, whercin forward young women are permitted by the laws to marry. She is of a puny, tender, and delicate constitution, and has been also brought up by her mother in a private particular manner, so that she is but now beginning to be weaned from her childish simplicity. She was one day in my presence reading a French book, wherein the word *Fouteau*\* occurred, which is the name of a tree well known, viz. the beech. The woman, to whose conduct she is committed, stopped her short a little roughly, and made her skip over that dangerous term. I let her alone, rather than break into their rules, for I never concern myself in that sort of government. The polity of the females has a mysterious train which we must leave to them. But if I am not mistaken, a conversation with twenty lacqueys for six months, would not so deeply have imprinted in her fancy the meaning, application, and all the consequences of the sound of those two wicked syllables, as this good old woman did by her reprimand and prohibition :

*Motus doceri gaudet Ionicos  
Matura virgo, et fingitur artubus  
Jam nunc, et incestos amores  
De tenero meditatur ungui.†*

With pliant limbs the ripen'd maid,  
Now joys to learn the wanton tread  
Of dance Ionic, and to prove  
The pleasures of forbidden love.

\* A word very similar in the sound to a term of lechery in the French language.

† Horace, lib. iii. ode 6, ver. 21, &c.

Moreover  
this passion  
is natural  
to them.

Let them but dispense a little with ceremony ;  
let them but enter into the freedom of conversation ;  
we are but children in this science compared to  
them. Were you to hear them set forth our court-  
ship and compliments, they give you plainly to un-  
derstand, that we bring them nothing which they  
did not know before, and had digested without our  
assistance. Would you think with Plato, that they  
were heretofore debauched when very young ? I  
happened one day to be at a place, where I could,  
without being at all suspected, over-hear some of  
the discourse that passed between them. What can  
I say of it ? By our lady (said I) it is high time for  
us to go and study the phrases of Amadis, and the  
registers of Boccace and Aretine, to be able to cope  
with them. We employ our time to good purpose  
indeed. There is not an expression, an example,  
or a proceeding, which they do not know better  
than our books. It is a discipline that has its source  
in their veins,

*Et mentem Venus ipsa dedit.\**

Venus herself did them inspire.

and which those good instructors, nature, youth,  
and health are continually suggesting to their fancy.  
They need not be at the pains to learn, they natu-  
rally breed it :

*Nec tantum niveo gavisæ est ulla columbo,  
Compar, vel si quid dicitur improbius,  
Oscula mordenti semper decerpere rostro,  
Quantum præcipue multicola est mulier.†*

Not more delighted is the milk-white dove,  
(Or any creature that's more prone to love)  
Still to be billing with her mate, than is  
Th' inconstant woman every man to kiss.

Insomuch, that did not fear and honour, of which  
they have their share, give a little check to this na-

\* Virg. Geo. lib. iii. ver. 267.

† Catullus. Carm. Ixvi. ver. 125, &c.

tural violence of their desire, we would become scandalous. All the motion in the world is bent and tends to this copulation; it is a matter infused throughout the whole; it is a centre to which all things point. We even find edicts of old and wise Rome made for the service of love, and precepts of Socrates for the instruction of courtezans:

*Nec non libelli Stoici inter sericos  
Jacere pulvillos amant.\**

The Stoics with all their gravity  
Delighted to write on subjects of gallantry.

Zeno, amongst other laws, regulated the divariations and motions in getting a maiden-head. What was the signification of the philosopher Strato's book of carnal copulation? And of what did Theophrastus treat in those books which he entitled, one the Lover, the other Love? And what did Aristippus write of in his book of ancient delights? What is the purport of those copious and lively descriptions in Plato, of the amours of his time? and of Demetrius Phalareus's book called the Lover? And Clinias, or the ravished Lover, by Heraclides Ponticus? And that of getting Children, or of Weddings, by Antisthenes, and the other of the Master or the Lover? And that of Amorous Exercises, by Aristo? The two books, one of Love, the other the Art of Love, by Cleanthes? The Amorous Dialogues of Spherus? And the fable of Jupiter and Juno by Chrysippus, impudent beyond all toleration? And his fifty lascivious epistles? I choose to set aside the writings of the philosophers of the Epicurean sect, the protectors of sensual pleasures. There were fifty deities in time past assigned to this office.—There is a nation where to assuage the concupiscence of those who went to their devotion, they kept strumpets in the temples for their enjoyment, and it was an act of ceremony to lie with them be-

\* Hor. Epod. lib. ode viii. ver. 15, 16.



fore the service. *Nimirum propter continentiam, incontinentia necessaria est, incendium ignibus extinguitur*: "Incontinence is necessary for the sake of continence, as a blast is to extinguish a fire."

In the greatest part of the world this member of our body has been deified. In one and the same province, some flayed themselves for the sake of offering and consecrating a piece of their skin; others offered and consecrated their seed. In another province, the young men made public incisions between the skin and the flesh of that part, and made several overtures in it, through which they thrust splinters, the longest and biggest that they could endure; of which splinters they afterwards made a fire for a burnt offering to their gods, being not reckoned either over vigorous or chaste if they did but shrink under that cruel torture. Elsewhere, the most sacred magistrate was revered and recognised by those parts; and in several ceremonies the image of them was pompously carried in public procession to the honour of several divinities. The Egyptian ladies, at the Bacchanalian feasts, wore one about their necks carved in wood, exquisitely formed, as large and heavy as each was able to bear; besides that in the statue of their god, there was a representation of one which measured more than the rest of the body.\* The married women in my neighbourhood represent the shape of it in the kerchiefs upon their fore-top, by way of ostentation, for the enjoyment they have had of it, and when they come to be widows they turn it behind and hide it under their coifs. The most sage matrons at Rome were proud of offering flowers and garlands to the god Priapus, and the virgins at the time of their wedding were seated upon his most criminal parts. Nay, I know

\* Herodot. lib. ii. p. 122. Αἰδοῖον ἢ πολλὰ τέω ἔλασσον ἰὸν τῇ ἄλλῃ σαμῶος: "A member which is not much less than the rest of the body." I cannot imagine why Montaigne took it into his head here to improve upon the extravagant exaggeration of the Egyptians.

not whether I have not in my time seen some such air of devotion. What was the meaning of that ridiculous cod-piece worn by our forefathers, and by the Swiss even to this day? To what purpose is the display we make at this time of the form of our implements under our gaskins; and often, which is worse, by a false and imposing representation beyond their natural size? I can scarce help thinking, that this sort of garb was invented in the better and more conscientious ages, that mankind might not be deceived, by every one's giving an account of his talent in public. The most simple nations wear them still with some resemblance to the truth. In those days the workman was informed, as he is now, of the measure of the arm or foot. That honest man who, when I was but a youngster, castrated so many fine antique statues in this great city, for fear of corrupting the sight, according to the opinion of that other honest old gentleman, *Flagitii principium est udare inter cives corpora* :\* “The custom of appearing naked in public has introduced “a depravity of manners amongst us,” ought to have considered, that as in the mysteries of the Bona Dea every masculine appearance was excluded, so it was doing nothing if he did not also cause horses, asses, and, in short, all nature to be castrated :

*Omne adeo genus in terris hominumque, ferarumque  
Et genus æquoreum, pecudes, pictæque volucres,  
In furias ignemque ruunt.*†

All creatures thus the raging passion find;  
For whether they be those of human kind,  
Beasts, wild or tame, fish, or the feather'd choir,  
They're each inflam'd with wanton love's desire.

The gods, says Plato, have furnished us men with an unruly tyrannical member, which, like a furious

\* It was a saying of Ennius, quoted by Cicero, with this mark of approbation, “Bene ergo Ennius Flagitii,” &c. Tusc. Quæst. lib. iv. cap. 33.

† Virg. Geo. lib. iii. ver. 144, &c.

animal, attempts to make all things subject to its violent appetite ; and they have also given the women one like a voracious and craving animal ; which, if nourishment be refused in its season, rages, impatient of delay ; and its fury working in their bodies, stops the passages, hinders respiration, and causes a thousand disorders, till, by having sucked in the fruit of the common thirst, the bottom of their matrix is plentifully sprinkled, and furnished with seed.

Now my legislator should also have considered, that perhaps, it were a more chaste and beneficial practice, to let them know it betimes to the life, than to permit them to guess what it is, according to the freedom and warmth of their imagination.— Instead of the real parts, they therein substitute others that are three times more extravagant, through their desires and hopes ; and a certain friend of mine was ruined by having exposed his, when it was not yet proper to apply them to their more serious use. Who knows what mischief is done by those enormous pictures which the boys draw upon the passages and staircases of the royal palaces ? From hence proceeds a cruel contempt of our natural furniture ; and how do we know but that Plato, by ordering, after the example of other well instituted republics, that both the men and the women, old and young, should expose themselves naked to one another in his gymnastics, had a view to this ? The Indian women, who see the men stark naked, have at least palled their sense of seeing ; and though it is said by the women of the great kingdom of Pegu (who have nothing to cover them below the waist but a cloth slit before, which is so scanty, that with all the ceremonious decency they pretend to, all they have is to be seen at every step), that this was an invention purely to allure the men to them, and to draw off their affection from those of their own sex, to which that nation is entirely addicted ; it may be said, that they lose more than

they get by it, and that an appetite is not so sharp to an object after it has been once glutted by the sight of it. Also Livia said, that to a virtuous woman the sight of a naked man is no more than that of an image.\* The Lacedæmonian women, more virgins when wives than our daughters are, daily saw the young men of their city stripped naked at their exercises, while they themselves were not over careful to hide their thighs as they walked, thinking themselves sufficiently covered by their virtue without any fardingale. But they of whom St. Austin speaks, have ascribed to nakedness a wonderful power of temptation, by making it a doubt whether women, at the day of judgment, shall arise again in their own sex, and not rather in ours, that we may not be again tempted in that state of holiness. In short, we allure and provoke them by all manner of means; we are incessantly heating and stirring up their imagination, and yet we find fault. Let us confess the truth; there is scarce a man of us who is not more afraid of the shame accruing to him from the vices of his wife, than from his own; and who is not more solicitous for the conscience of his good wife (marvellous charity!) than for his own; who had not rather be guilty of theft and sacrilege, and that his wife should be a murderess and a heretic, than that she should be as immodest as her husband. An unjust estimate of vices this! Both we and they are liable to a thousand corruptions, more mischievous and unnatural than lasciviousness. But we form and poise vices, not according to nature, but according to our interest; by which means they assume so many various forms.

The severity of our decrees renders the application of the women to this vice more violent and vicious than is consistent with the nature of it, and involves it in consequences worse than their cause.

\* Δείκνους Τελείους, page 112, printed at Paris by Robert Stevens.

They would be glad to go to the courts of law for gain, and to the field of battle for honour, rather than, in the midst of ease and pleasure, to have to do with what is so difficult to preserve. Do not they see that there is neither merchant, nor lawyer, nor soldier, who does not quit his business for the pursuit of this? and the very porter and cobbler too, jaded and oppressed as they are with labour and hunger?

*Nunc tu quæ tenuit dives Achæmenes,  
Aut pinguis Phrygiæ Mygdonias opes,  
Permutare velis crine Liciniæ,  
Plenas aut Arabum domos?  
Dum flagrantia detorquet ad oscula  
Cervicem, aut facili sævitiâ negat,  
Quæ posente magis gaudeat eripi,  
Interdum rapere occupet.\**

Wouldst thou, for all that Achæmenes had,  
Or all the Phrygian wealth before thee laid,  
Or riches that in Arab's houses are,  
Exchange one lock of dear Licinia's hair?  
While to the fervent kiss her neck she plies,  
Or with a pretty anger then denies  
What she had rather you would snatch by far,  
Than that you should desist out of despair.

Chastity in  
a woman  
hard to be  
kept.

I question whether the exploits of Cæsar and Alexander were performed with a resolution more inflexible than that of a beautiful young woman, bred up in high life, surrounded by so many vicious examples, and yet preserving herself inviolate in the midst of a thousand continual and powerful solicitations. There is no action more difficult, and yet more vigorous than this not-doing. I take it that it is more easy for a person to wear a suit of armour all the days of one's life than a maidenhead; and the vow of virginity is of all others the most noble, as being the most burdensome. St. Jerom says, *Diaboli virtus in lumbis est.*

\* Horace, lib. ii. ode 12, ver. 21, &c.

We have certainly resigned the most arduous, and the most vigorous of human endeavours to the ladies; and let them by all means have the honour of it. This ought to be a singular spur to excite them to hold it out obstinately. It is a fine subject for them to brave us, and to trample under foot that vain pre-eminence in valour and virtue which we pretend to over them. They will find that, if they do but keep a guard upon themselves, they will not only be the more esteemed, but the better beloved for it. A gallant gentleman does not abandon his pursuit because he has met with a denial, provided it be a denial from chastity, and not from aversion. We may swear, threaten, and complain, as much as we will; we lie all the while; for we love them the better for it. There is no allurements like modesty, if it be not with harsh treatment and sour looks. It is stupidity and meanness to be obstinate against hatred and contempt; but against a virtuous and steady resolution, accompanied with a grateful principle, it is the exercise of a noble and generous soul. The ladies may acknowledge our services to a certain degree, and give us civilly to understand that they do not disdain us; for the law which enjoins them to abhor us because we adore them, and hate us because we love them, is certainly a cruel one, were it only for the difficulty of complying with it. Why will they not hear our offers and demands as long as they are circumscribed within the bounds of modesty? Wherefore should we guess that they have a freer meaning to themselves? A certain queen of our time said ingenuously, that to refuse these advantages is a testimony of weakness in a woman, and an impeachment of her own readiness; and that no lady could boast of her chastity who had not been tempted. The limits of honour are not so straitened but it may relax itself a little, and may be dispensed with in some measure without a forfeiture. There lies before its frontier some space free, indifferent, and neuter. He that has drove it by force into its

own nook and fort, is a simpleton if he be not satisfied with his fortune. The value of the conquest is considered by the difficulty of it. Would you know what impression your service, and your merit, have made upon her heart, measure it by her behaviour. There are some women perhaps who may grant more that do not grant so much. The obligation of a benefit is altogether connected with the will of the person that grants it, the other circumstances coincident with the favour being dumb, dead, and casual. It costs her dearer to grant you that little than it would her companion to grant her all. If in any thing rarity enhances the value, it ought in this. Do not consider how little it is that is given, but how few have it to give. The value of money varies according to the coin, and stamp of the place. Whatever the spite and indiscretion of some persons may make them say as to the excess of their discontent, virtue and truth will always regain their advantage. I have known some who, after their reputation had for a long time been blasted, have regained the universal approbation of mankind merely by their constancy, without any care or art; after which every one repented, and recanted what he had believed; and from maids that were a little suspected, they have afterwards held the first rank among the ladies of honour. Somebody said to Plato, that all the world spoke ill of him; "Let them say what they will," said he, "I will live so as to make them change their note." Besides the fear of God, and the value of a renown so uncommon, which ought to incite them to take care of themselves, the corruption of this age compels them to it: and if I was in their place, there is nothing that I would not do rather than trust my reputation in such dangerous hands. I remember formerly that the pleasure of telling (a pleasure little inferior to that of doing) was only indulged to be communicated to one entire faithful friend; whereas now, boasting of favours received, and of the secret liberality of the ladies, has a great

share in the common table-talk and conversation at assemblies. In truth, it is an argument of too abject and too mean a spirit, to suffer those tender and obliging favours to be so insolently persecuted, rummaged, and ransacked by persons so ungrateful, indiscreet, and inconstant.

This our immoderate and unwarrantable exasperation against this vice of incontinence arises from the most trifling and tempestuous disease that afflicts the human mind, which is jealousy: The unreasonable-ness of jealousy.

*Quis vetat appposito lumen de lumine sumi ?  
Dent licet assidue, nil tamen inde perit.\**

Although a torch should lend its flame  
To give another light,  
Its lustre still remains the same,  
And shows as fair and bright.

That passion, and its sister, envy, seem to be the most silly of all the tribe. As to the latter, I can say but little of it. It is a passion, though it is represented so strong and powerful, which, thanks to it, has no room in my breast. As to the former, I have some knowledge of it, at least by sight. The very beasts feel it. Chratis, the shepherd, having fallen in love with a she-goat, the male, while the shepherd was asleep, went, in a fit of jealousy, and butted him with its head till it beat out his brains.†

We have carried this passion to as great an excess as some of the barbarous nations. The best disciplined of them have been tainted with it, and with reason, but not transported to fury by it : The wisest of men and nations have been the least touched with this passion.

*Ense maritali nemo confossus adulter  
Purpureo Stygias sanguine tinxit aquas.‡*

Ne'er did adulterer, by the husband slain,  
With purple blood the Stygian waters stain.

\* The sense of the last verse is in Ovid's *Arte Amandi*, lib. iii. ver. 93, but Montaigne has taken the words from an epigram, entitled, *Priapus in Veterum Poetarum Catalectis*, which begins thus,

“Obscure poteram tibi dicere, da mihi quod tu  
“Des licet assidue, nil tamen inde perit.”

‡ *Ælian*, lib. xii. cap. 42, of his *Treatise of Animals*.

‡ *Ovid*.



Lucullus, Cæsar, Pompey, Antony, Cato, and other brave men, were cuckolds, and knew it without making any disturbance about it ; and in those times there was but one fool, Lepidus, who broke his heart upon it :\*

*Ah tum te miserum malique fati,  
Quem attractis pedibus patente portâ,  
Percurrent mugilesque raphanique.†*

Wretched will then be thy malignant fate,  
When by the heels they drag thee from the gate,  
Through show'rs of rotten roots and stinking scate.

Vulcan not  
very jea-  
lous of his  
wife  
Venus.

And the God of our poet, when he surprised one of her gallants with his wife, satisfied himself with only putting them to shame :

———— *Atque alignis de diis non tristibus optat  
Sic fieri turpes.‡*

One of the gods, to merriment dispos'd,  
Seeing the lovers in the net inclos'd,  
Wish'd that he had to shame been so expos'd.

Yet he takes fire at the soft caresses with which she accosts him, complaining that she thereby showed a jealousy of his affection :

*Quid causas petis ex alto ? fiducia cessit  
Quò tibi, diva, mei ? §*

Why are, my goddess, all these reasons tried ?  
Say why in me no longer you confide ?

Nay, she desires armour of him for her bastard :

*Arma rogo, genitrix nato.||*  
The mother for her son does armour crave.

\* The father of one of the triumvirate, who died, says Plutarch, having broke his heart, not so much by the distress of his affairs, as by a discovery he made from a letter which fell into his hands that his wife had forfeited her honour. The Life of Pompey, ch. 5 of Amyot's translation.

† This was a punishment, more infamous than fatal, inflicted on adulterers when they were taken in the fact, Catull. to Aurelius, carm. 16, ver. 17, &c.

‡ Ovid's Met. lib. iv. fab. 5, ver. 21, 22.

§ Virg. Æneid, lib. viii. ver. 395.

|| Idem, ver. 383.

Which is freely granted : and Vulcan speaks honourably of Æneas :

*Arma acri facienda viro.\**

Armour must for a valiant man be made.

I consent to leave this excess of goodness to the gods :

*Nec divis homines componere æquum est.†*

Nor is it fit to equal men with gods.

As to the confounding of children, besides that the gravest legislators ordain and affect it in their republics, it does not concern the women, in whom this passion of jealousy is, I know not how, still more firmly established :

— *Sæpe etiam Juno maxima cœliolum  
Conjugis in culpa flagravît quotidiana.‡*

And Juno, with fierce jealousy inflam'd,  
Her husband's daily slips has often blam'd.

When jealousy seizes these poor weak souls, incapable of making resistance, it is pity to see how cruelly it drags them on, and tyrannises over them. It insinuates itself into them under the colour of friendship, but after it has once possessed them, the same causes which served for a foundation of good will, serve as a foundation of moral hatred. Of all the distempers of the mind it is that which most things contribute to nourish, and fewest to remedy. the virtue, health, merit, the reputation of the husband, stimulate their spite and rage :

How the women are tortured by jealousy, and how odious they become when they abandon themselves to this passion.

*Nullæ sunt inimicitie nisi amoris acerbæ.§*

No enmities so keen as those of love.

This fever defaces and corrupts all that they have of the beautiful and good in other respects ; and there is no action of a jealous woman, be she ever so chaste,

\* Virg. Æneid. lib. viii. ver. 441.

† Catullus ad Mantium, carm. 66, ver. 141.

‡ Idem, ibid. ver. 138, 139. § Propertius, lib. ii. eleg. 8, ver. iii.

and ever so good a housewife, that does not savour of sourness and impertinence. It is a furious agitation that throws them back to an extremity quite contrary to its cause. This was but too plainly verified by one Octavius,\* at Rome, who, having lain with Pontia Posthumia, found his love so much increased by fruition that he solicited her with all importunity to marry him, which, finding he could not persuade her to,† his extreme love for her hurried him to actions of the most cruel and mortal hatred, so that in fact he killed her. In like manner the ordinary symptoms of this other distemper of love are in intestine hatreds, private conspiracies, and combinations :

—— *Notumque, furens quid fœmina possit.*‡

What a woman is capable of doing in her fury is not unknown.

And a rage the more violent, because it is forced to smother itself under the pretence of good will.

The obligation to chastity hard to observe.

Now the obligation of chastity is very extensive. Is it their will which we would have them curb? This is a very pliant and active faculty, and is very prompt to be stopped. How if dreams sometimes engage the women so far that they cannot deny them? It is not in the power of them, nor perhaps of chastity itself, because it is a female, to defend themselves from concupiscence and desire. If we are only interested in their will, what a case are we in then? Do but imagine what a great throng there would be of men to obtain the privilege of flying, like a feathered arrow, without eyes and tongue, to the arms of every woman that would accept them. The Scythian women caused the eyes of all their slaves and prisoners of war to be plucked out,§ that they

\* Tacitus, *Annales*, lib. xiii. cap. 44, calls him Octavius Sagitta.

† Idem, *ibid.*

‡ Virg. *Æneid*. lib. v. ver. 6.

§ Herodotus, lib. iv. p. 255, does not say that the Scythian women had the eyes of their slaves plucked out for the purpose assigned by Montaigne, but that the Scythians themselves deprived

might make use of them with the more freedom and secrecy. Oh! the furious advantage of opportunity! Should any one ask me what was the first thing to be done in love, I would answer, that it was to know how to nick the happy moment; and the same as to the second, and the third things. It is the critical point that does every thing. Opportunity has often failed me, and sometimes I have miscarried in the attempt. May I never again have the mortifying circumstance to be laughed at. There is in this age more necessity for temerity, for which our youth plead their heat of blood as an excuse. But, were the women to examine the matter more strictly, they would find that it rather proceeded from contempt. I had a superstitious fear of giving offence, and have a hearty respect where I love. Besides, he who in this traffic takes away the reverence of it, defaces its lustre. I would in this affair have a man be a little childish, timorous, and servile. If not altogether in this, I have in other things some airs of that foolish bashfulness which Plutarch speaks of, and the course of my life has been divers ways hurt and blemished by it; a quality very ill suiting my universal form. What is there also amongst us but sedition and discord? I can as ill brook to take a refusal as I can to give one: and it so much troubles me to be troublesome to another person, that in cases where I am forced to try the good will of any one in a matter that is doubtful, and will be chargeable to him, I do it faintly, and against the grain. But if it be to serve myself (though Homer, *Odyssey*, lib. xvii. ver. 347, says very true, that "Modesty is a foolish virtue in an indigent person"), I commonly substitute a third person to blush in my stead, and have the like difficulty to deny those who

all their slaves of sight for the purpose of drawing milk from their mares, which was their food. But it does not appear very plain that there was a necessity of blinding those poor slaves for this work; and, therefore, the reason which Montaigne assigns for it is much more easy to comprehend.

employ me ; so that it has sometimes befallen me to have had a mind to deny when the thing was not in my power. It is a folly therefore to attempt to curb in women a desire that is so vehement in them, and so natural : and, when I hear some of them boast of having a will so innocent and cool, I laugh at them. They retire too far back. If she be an old toothless decrepid trot, or a young dry scrag, though they are not altogether to be believed, they may say it at least with more probability. But they, who are yet capable of love, and still pant with desire, spoil their own market ; forasmuch as indiscreet excuses tend to accuse them ; like a gentleman in my neighbourhood, suspected of impotency :

*Languidior temerâ cui pendens sicula betâ  
Nunquam se mediam sustulit ad tunicam.\**

who, three or four days after he was married, in order to justify himself, swore point-blank that he had rode twenty stages the night before ; which oath was afterwards made use of to dissolve the marriage. Besides, it is saying nothing to the purpose ; for there is no continency nor virtue where there is no contrary effort. It is true, it must be said, but I am not ready to comply. The saints themselves talk in this manner ; I mean those who boast in good earnest of their coldness and insensibility, and who put on a serious countenance in order to be believed ; for when it is spoken with an affected look, where the eyes give the lie to the tongue, and when they use the cant of their profession, which always goes against the hair, I like it well. I adore freedom and simplicity, but there is no remedy ; if it be not altogether simple and childish, it is silly and unbecoming the ladies in this commerce, and immediately verges to impudence. Their disguises and their figures only serve to cozen fools. Lying is there in its seat of honour. It is a by-way that leads us to

\* Catull. carm. 65, ver. 21, 22, of Mattaire's edition,

the truth by a back-door. If we cannot curb their imaginations, what is it we would have them to do? Do, indeed? there are ways enough by which chastity may be violated without any foreign communication :

*Illud sæpe facit quod sine teste fecit.\**

He often does himself apply  
To that he does when none is by.

And they whom we least suspect are perhaps the most to be feared. The crimes that make the least noise are the worst, or as we say, the still sow eats the most malt :

*Offendor mæchâ simpliciōe minùs.†*

A profess'd strumpet gives me less offence.

There are means capable of violating their chastity without immodesty, and, which is more, without their knowledge. *Obstetrix virginis cujusdam integritatem manu velut explorans, sive malvolentia, sive inscitia, sive casu, dum inspicit, perdidit :‡* Some have lost their maidenhead by a too curious search for it, and others by dallying with it have destroyed it. We cannot exactly circumscribe the actions which we forbid them. There is a necessity for couching our law under general and uncertain terms. The very idea which we form for their chastity is ridiculous ; for among the extraordinary examples of it, which I have met with, are Fatua the wife of Faunus, who, after her marriage, never suffered herself to be seen by any man whatsoever ; and the wife of Hiero, who never knew that her husband had a stinking breath, because she imagined that it was a quality common to all men.§ They

\* Martial, lib. vii. ep. 61, ver. 6.

† Idem, lib. vi. ep. 7.

‡ These words are a confirmation of what Montaigne has been saying, and though they are to be met with in St. Augustine's treatise, de Civitate Dei, lib. i. cap. 18, they are too gross to be put into plain English.

§ Plutarch, in his remarkable Passages of ancient Kings.

must be insensible and invisible, or we cannot be easy.

Chastity  
depends on  
the in-  
nocence of  
the will.

But we confess that the best way to form a judgment of this duty, is by an inspection into the will. There have been husbands who have suffered this accident, not only without reproaching or taking offence at their wives, but with special obligation to them, and a recommendation of their virtue. There was a woman that prized her honour above her life, who prostituted it to the furious lust of a mortal enemy, to save her husband's life; and thereby did that for him, which she would by no means have done for herself. This is not a place to produce such instances; they are too sublime and too rich to be set to view by any light that I can throw upon them. Let us reserve them for a nobler place. But as to instances of a more common lustre, are there not women every day amongst us, who let themselves out to hire only for the benefit of their husbands, and by their express order and brokerage? Thus heretofore Phaulius of Argos, to gratify his ambition, offered his wife to king Philip, just as Galba did out of civility; who, having invited Mecænas to supper, and finding that his wife and he made love-signs by their mutual ogling, fell back on his couch, like a man greatly oppressed with sleepiness, to give opportunity to their amours: \* and this he owned too with a very good grace; for, at the same time, a servant presuming to meddle with the plates, &c. that were upon the table, he said to him very frankly; "How now, you rascal? do not you perceive that I only sleep to oblige Mecænas?" There are some licentious men, whose wills may be more reformed than those of others that behave to outward appearance with more regularity. As we see some who complain of having made a vow of chastity before they came to years of discretion; I have also known others complain truly of having as

Women  
prostituted  
by their  
husbands  
for lucre.

\* Plutarch, in his Treatise of Love, p. 16.

early devoted themselves to debauchery. The vice of parents, or the force of necessity, which is a rude counsellor, may be the cause of it. In the East Indies, though chastity be of singular recommendation, yet custom permitted a married woman to prostitute herself to any one that would present her with an elephant; and proud she was that she had such a value set on her. Phædon, the philosopher, after the conquest of Elis, his native country, made it his trade to prostitute the beauty of his youth, as long as it lasted, for money to support him. And Solon, they say, was the first man in Greece, who, by his laws, gave liberty to the women, at the expense of their modesty, to provide for the necessities of life; a custom which, Herodotus says, was received in many governments before his time. Besides, what is any one the better for such a painful solicitude? For be the passion of jealousy ever so just, we ought to consider whether it will turn out to our advantage. Does any man think that, with all his industry, he can put an effectual bar upon the women:

*Pone seram, cohibe; sed quis custodiet ipsos  
Custodes? Cauta est, et ab illis incipit uxor.\**

Lock up your wife, or else, as some advise,  
Set a strict watch; but who shall watch the spies?  
Them first she bribes, and all your art defies.

What convenience can they be at a loss for in so knowing an age as the present?

Curiosity is vicious every where, but here it is also pernicious; it is a folly to be inquisitive into a disease for which there is no medicine that does not inflame and make it worse; a disease which is made more shameful and more public by the means of jealousy; and the revenge of which wounds our issue more than it heals us. You wither and die in the search of so obscure a proof. How miserable

\* Juv. sat. vi. ver. 346.



*have some of my time been made by having attained to the knowledge of it!* If the informer does not apply a remedy and relief at the same time with the discovery, it is an injurious information, and he is more deserving of a stab than a downright liar. We laugh as much at him who takes pains to prevent his being a cuckold, as at him who is really such, and knows it not. The stamp of cuckoldom is so indelible, that he, who once has it, always carries it to his grave. The punishment is more expressive of it than the crime. It is to a very fine purpose, to open the curtain and to lift up the quilt to discover our private misfortunes, and to trumpet them on tragic scaffolds, and such misfortunes too, as only sting us by being reported: for a wife is thought to be good, or a marriage happy, not as they are really so, but because the world is silent about them. A man must be discreet to avoid this tormenting and unprofitable knowledge: and the Romans,\* when they returned from any journey, used to send notice beforehand of their coming, that their wives might not be surprised. To this purpose it is, that a certain nation introduced a custom, that the priest should on the day of any marriage, unlock the bride's cabinet, to free the husband from the doubt and curiosity of examining, by his first trial, whether she comes a virgin to his bed, or has been violated before.

A gentle-  
man is not  
the less ex-  
teemed for  
being dis-  
honoured  
by his  
wife.

But the world will be talking. I know a hundred honest gentlemen that are not very much disgraced by being cuckolds. A gallant man is pitied for it, but not despised. Order the matter so, that your virtue may smother your misfortune, that good men may curse the occasion of it, and that he who wrongs you may tremble but to think of it. But who escapes being talked of at the same rate, from the least even to the greatest?

\* Plutarch, in his Treatise of Questions about the Roman Affairs, chap. ix.

— *Tot qui legionibus imperitavit,\*  
Et melior quam tu multis fuit, improbi, rebus.†*

To whose command whole legions once did bow,  
And who, poor wretch, was better far than thou.

You see how many honest men are reproached with this in your presence, and you may be sure that you are not spared behind your back. Nay, the very ladies will be laughing too; and what are they more apt to banter in this virtuous age, than a peaceable and most happy married couple? There is not a man among you, who has not made somebody a cuckold; for nature deals altogether in retaliation and variety. The frequency of this accident must have lessened the bitterness of it long ago, and it is now passed into custom.

Cuck-  
oldom an  
evil, which  
one is ob-  
liged to  
keep  
secret.

Miserable suffering this! which is also aggravated, because improper to be made known:

*Fors etiam nostris invidet questibus aures.‡*

And fortune spitefully denies  
To lend an ear unto our cries.

For to what friend dare you trust your complaints? who, if he does not laugh at them, will not make use of the occasion as an introduction and instruction to come in for a share of the quarry. Wise folks keep the bitters as well as the sweets of matrimony secret: and among the other teasing articles that are to be met with in this state, to a talkative man as I am, this is the chief, that custom renders it indecent and injurious to communicate to another all that one knows and feels of it.

To give the women themselves any advice to disgust them against jealousy would be time lost; their very being is such a compound of suspicion, vanity, and curiosity, that there is no hopes of curing them

The jea-  
lousy of a  
wife is  
very fatal  
to her hus-  
band.

\* The 1041st verse, of which Montaigne quotes the sense rather than the words, is here inserted before the ver. 1039.

† Lucret. lib. iii. ver. 1039, 1041.

‡ Catullus de Nuptiis Pelei, carm. 62. ver. 170.

by lawful means. They often recover themselves out of this infirmity by a form of health, much more to be dreaded than the malady itself. For as there are enchantments which cannot remove the evil but by throwing it upon another, they are glad to transfer this fever to their husbands, when they are rid of it themselves. Nevertheless, to say the truth, I do not know whether a man can suffer a worse thing from them than jealousy; it is the most dangerous of their qualities, as the head is of all the parts of their bodies. Pittacus said,\* that “Every one had his vexation; that his was the bad head of his wife; but for which he should think himself perfectly happy.” This, sure, was a very sad inconvenience, with which a person so wise, just, and valiant, found the whole course of his life poisoned! What then must we little men do? The senate of Marseilles might well grant the request of him who desired leave to kill himself, in order to be delivered from the clamour of his wife. For this is a mischief never removed but by carrying away the piece, and which there is no compounding for but by flight or patience; both of which are hard terms. In my opinion, he was not a novice, who said, that happy was the marriage where the wife was blind, and the husband deaf.

The dangerous consequences of too great a restraint laid on the wife by the husband.

Let us also consider, whether the great and violent severity of the obligation we lay upon them, does not produce two effects contrary to our end, viz. Whether it does not render the gallants more eager to attack, and the women more forward to surrender. For as to the first, by raising the value of the place, we raise the value and desire of the conquest. Who would not think that Venus herself cunningly enhanced the price of her merchandise, by making the laws her bawds, knowing how insipid that pleasure would be which was not heightened by fancy and its dearness? In short, it is all swine's flesh, only va-

\* Plutarch of the Peace of Mind, chap. xi.

ried, as the host of Flaminius said, by different sauce. Cupid is a sly deity, who makes it his sport to contend with devotion and justice. It is his pride that his power gives a shock to every other power, and that all other rules yield to his :

*Materiam culpæ prosequiturque suæ.\**

And seeks fresh fuel for his fire.

As to the second point, should not we be less cuckolds if we less feared to be so, considering the temper of women whose desires are prompted and excited by prohibition ?

*Ubi velis nolunt, ubi nolis volunt ultro,†*

*Concessa pudet ire via.‡*

In ev'ry varied choice, repugnant still,

They would, you won't, and when you won't, they will.

What better construction can we put on the behaviour of Messalina ? She at first cuckolded her husband in private, as is the common practice : but managing her affairs with too much ease, by reason of her husband's stupidity, she on a sudden scorned privacy, scrupled not to carry on her amours in public, owned her humble servants, and entertained and favoured them in the sight of all the world. She aimed to make her husband sensible of it. But nothing of all this being able to rouse the animal, and rendering her pleasures languid and flat, by that stupid facility with which she seemed to authorise and make them lawful, what does she, but, being the wife of a healthy emperor,§ living at Rome, the theatre of the world, in the face of the sun, and with public feasting and ceremony she one day, as her husband was out of town, married Silius, whom she had enjoyed long before ? Does it not seem as if she was going to become chaste through her husband's indifference for her ? Or that she desired another

\* Ovid. Trist. lib. iv. eleg. 1, ver. 34.

† Ter. Eunuch, act. 4, sc. 7, ver. 43.

‡ Lucan. lib. ii. ver. 446.

§ Tacit. Annal. lib. xi. cap. 26, 27, &c.

husband, who might sharpen her appetite by his jealousy, and by opposing it stir it up? But the first difficulty she met with was also the last. This beast roused on a sudden. These sleepy, sluggish mortals are often the most dangerous. I have known, by experience, that this extreme patience, when it comes to be worn out, produces the most severe revenge; for, by taking fire all on a sudden, anger and fury combined in one, exert all their efforts at the first discharge:

—— *Irarumque omnis effundit habenas.\**

he put her to death, and with her a great number of her correspondents; even one whom she had forced to her bed with scourges.†

What Virgil said of Venus and Vulcan was more suitably expressed by Lucretius, of a stolen enjoyment between her and Mars:

*Belli fera munera Mavors,  
Armipotens regit, in gremium qui sæpe tuum se  
Rejicit, æterno devinctus vulnere amoris:  
Atque ita suspiciens tereti cervice reposta  
Pascit amore avidos inhians in te, dea, visus  
Eque tuo pendet resupini spiritus ore:  
Hunc tu, diva, tuo recubantem corpore sancto  
Circumfusa super, suaveis ex ore loquelæ  
Funde.‡*

—— For furious Mars,

The only governor and god of wars,  
With thee enamoured doth oft resort  
To taste the pleasures of the Paphian court;  
Where on thy bosom he supinely lies,  
Panting, and drinking love at both his eyes;  
Sucking thy balmy breath with eager kiss,  
And rushing to enjoy yet greater bliss;  
Then, while thy tender limbs about him move,  
Involv'd and fetter'd in the clasps of love,  
Thy charms in that transporting moment try,  
And softest language to his heart apply.

\* Virg. *Æneid.* lib. xii. ver. 499.

† Mnester, the comedian, and Traulus Montanus, Tacit. *Annal.* lib. xi. cap. 36.

‡ Lucret. lib. i. ver. 33, &c.

When I consider these words,\* *Rejicit, pascit, inhians, pendet*, and that word *circumfusa*, from whence *infusus* is nobly derived, I have a contempt for those little witticisms and verbal allusions which have started up since.

A lively description of the amours of Venus and Mars, more natural than that which represents the transports of Vulcan for Venus. What constitutes true eloquence.

Those good poets stood in need of no smart subtle turn of phrase. Their language is copious, and full of a natural and constant spirit. It is altogether epigrammatical; with a sting not only in the tail, but in the head, stomach, and feet. There is nothing forced in it, nothing drawling, and it ever keeps the same pace, without variation. *Contextus totus virilis est, non sunt circa flosculos occupati*:†

“The whole texture of it is manly, without the ornament of flowers.” It is not an eloquence merely delicate and inoffensive: it is nervous and solid; and not only pleases, but actually engrosses and captivates, and the finest understandings are the most charmed with it. When I see those sublime forms of expression so lively, so profound, I do not say it is well uttered, but well conceived. It is the sprightliness of the imagination that gives pomp and sublimity to the language. *Pectus est quod disertum facit*:‡ “Eloquence is owing to the frame of the mind.” Our people call language judgment, and fine words, full conceptions. This painting is not so much owing to the dexterity of hand, as to the lively impression of the object on the mind. Gallus’s language is simple, because his conception is simple. Horace is not content with a superficial expression; that would betray him; he sees into things farther and more clearly. His wit breaks into and rummages the whole magazine of words and figures to represent his thoughts, and he must have terms to express himself, which are more than ordinary, because such is his conception. Plutarch says, that he knew the

\* All these words so natural and expressive; some of them in the passage out of Virgil, mentioned in one of the preceding passages of this chapter, and the rest in the quotation here inserted.

† Seneca, epist. 33.

‡ Quintilian, lib. x.

Latin tongue by things :\* so here, the sense illuminates and produces the words, which are no longer words of air, but of flesh and bone. They signify more than they express. The novices in a language have also some idea of this. For in Italy I said whatever I had a mind to in common discourse ; but in serious subjects I did not dare to trust to an idiom, which I could not turn and wind out of its common path. I was for introducing something of my own.

Witsenrich  
language,  
and give it  
fresh vi-  
gour.

Men of wit set off a language by their way of handling and managing it ; not so much innovating it, as by putting it to more vigorous and various services, and straining and bending it to them. They do not introduce new terms into it, but they enrich those they have already, give them more weight, spirit, and energy ; and add new turns, which are however authorised by the wise and ingenious application, which they are not at a loss to make of them. This is the end which all should have in view, who are ambitious of writing well ; and as for those who have not genius to attain to it, they ought to think of something else. And indeed how few have a sufficiency of this talent, is evident from the many French scribblers of the age. They are too bold and haughty to follow the common road ; but the want of invention and discretion ruins them. There is nothing to be seen in their writings but a wretched affectation of a strange novelty of style, with cold and absurd disguises, which, instead of elevating the subject, depress it. Provided they can but trick up themselves with new-fangled terms, they care not what they avail ; and, for the sake of bringing in a new word, though it be by head and shoulders, they

\* In the Life of Demosthenes, chap. 1. I began to take Latin authors in hand, says he, very late, being far advanced in the decline of life, when an odd thing happened to me, which is nevertheless true, viz. That I did not so much learn to understand things by the words, as I came to understand the words, in some degree, by the use and knowledge I had of the things thereby signified.

leave out the common one, though often more nervous and significant.

I find stuff enough in our language, but there is some fault in the modelling of it; for there is nothing that might not be made out of our terms of hunting and war, which is a fruitful soil to borrow from: and the forms of speech, like herbs, improve and grow stronger by being transplanted. I think the language copious enough, but not sufficiently pliable and vigorous. It commonly flags under a powerful conception. If you are upon the sublime, you often perceive it languishes and droops under you, and that then Latin steps in to its relief, as Greek does to other languages. We do not easily discern the energy of some of those words which I have selected, because the common use of them has, in some measure, impaired their beauty, and rendered it vulgar; as is the case in our common talk, wherein there are excellent phrases and metaphors, the beauty of which is faded by their being antiquated, and their lustre sullied by too common handling. But this abates nothing of the relish to men of understanding, neither does it derogate from the glory of those ancient authors who, it is likely, first brought those words into that lustre.

The sciences treat of things with too much refinement, and in an artificial manner, very different from that which is common and natural. My page makes love, and understands it; but read to him Leo, the Hebrew, and Ficinus, where they treat of the lover, his thoughts and his actions, and he knows nothing at all of the matter. I discover in Aristotle most of my common impulses, which are there covered and clothed in another robe for the use of the schools. Well may they speed; but, were I of the profession, I would naturalise art as much as artify nature. Let us leave Bembo and Equicola where we found them.

When I write I care not for the company and the remembrance of books, lest they should break into



have no  
books by  
him but  
Plutarch  
while he  
was writ-  
ing.

my plan : and to say the truth, good authors too much debase and discourage me. I am very much of the mind of that painter who, having made a wretched figure of some cocks, charged his boys not to suffer any natural cock to come into his shop ; and, in order to give myself a little lustre, had need rather of the invention of the musician Antimonydes, who, when he was to perform a piece of music, took care that the auditory should, either before or after him, be entertained with some other sorry songsters. But I can hardly be without a Plutarch ; he is so universal and copious, that upon all occasions, and whatever extravagant subject you pitch upon, he is officious to supply your necessity, and stretches out a liberal hand to you with an inexhaustible store of riches and embellishments. It vexes me that he is so liable to be plundered by those who are conversant with him. I can no sooner make an acquaintance with him but I purloin either a leg or a wing from him.

Why he  
chose to  
write at  
home,  
where he  
had none to  
help him.

For this design of mine I find it also very proper to write at home, in a wild country, where nobody assists or relieves me, where I seldom see a man that understands the Latin of his Pater-noster, or as little, if so much, of the French. I might have performed better elsewhere, but then the work would not have been so much my own ; its chief aim and perfection being to be exactly mine. I should be apt enough to correct some accidental errors, of which I am full, as I write on inadvertently ; but as for my common and constant imperfections, it would be a kind of treason to expunge them. When any one tells me, or I say to myself, “ Thou are too full of figures ; “ that is a word of the Gascon growth ; that is a “ dangerous phrase (I do not reject any that are “ used in the common streets of France ; it is mere “ jest to think of opposing custom with grammar) ; “ that is an ignorant discourse ; a paradoxical sen- “ tence ; that there is too silly ; you often make “ yourself merry ; it will be thought you say a thing in

“good earnest, which you only speak in jest.” Very true, say I; but I correct the errors of inadvertency, not those of custom. Do I not talk at the same rate throughout? Do not I represent myself to the life? It is enough I have done what I designed. Every body discovers me in my book, and my book in me.

Now I have an apish imitating quality. When I used to set about writing verses (though I never made any but Latin), they plainly discovered the poet I had read last; and some of my first essays have a taste that is a little exotic. At Paris I speak a language somewhat different from what I do at Montaigne. Whatever I look upon with attention, easily leaves some impression of it upon me. Whatever I examine I make my own, whether a silly countenance, a disagreeable grimace, or a ridiculous way of speaking; and vices most of all, as they seize and stick to me, and will not leave their hold without shaking off. I swear oftner by imitation than humour. A cruel imitation like that of the apes, so terrible in stature and strength, which Alexander met with in a certain country of the Indies, and which it would have been difficult for him to have mastered any other way. But they afforded him the means, by this their inclination to counterfeit whatever they saw done.\* For thereby the pursuers learned to put on shoes in their sight, and to tie them fast with many knots, to muffle up their heads in caps altogether composed of running nooses, and to make as if they anointed their eyes with glue. Thus did those poor animals employ their mimicking humour indiscreetly to their own detriment. They glued up their own eyes, hamstrung, and bound themselves. The other faculty of mimicking the words and gesture of a person, purposely to raise mirth and admiration, is no more in my power than in that of a stock. When I swear in my own man-

Montaigne  
very apt to  
imitate.

\* Ælian de Animal. lib. xvii. cap. 25, and Strabo, lib. xv. p. 1023.

ner, it is only by God, which of all oaths is the most strict.\* They say that Socrates swore by his dog : Zeno by that same interjection which is at this time in use among the Italians, viz. *Cappari* ; and Pythagoras† by water and air. I am so apt, without thinking of it, to receive these superficial impressions, that if I had in my youth sire or highness three days together, I would repeat them a week after, instead of excellency and lordship ; and what I say one day in sport and jest, I shall repeat next day seriously. Therefore in writing I am fonder of trite arguments, lest I should handle them at another's expense. Every subject is equally fertile to me. A fly will serve me for a subject ; and it is well if what I have now in hand may not have been undertaken at the command of as rambling a will. Let me begin with that which I like best ; for the subjects are all linked to one another.

He generally produced his profoundest thoughts on a sudden.

But I am vexed that my deepest and most ridiculous reveries, yet such as please me best, are produced on a sudden, and when I look for them the least ; and that they as suddenly vanish, for want of something at that instant to apply them to ; be it on horseback, at table, or in bed ; though I am most given to think when I am riding.

Did not like to be interrupted as he was speaking.

My speech is a little nicely jealous of attention and silence if I am engaged in a discourse. Whoever then interrupts me puts me to a stand. In a journey the very necessities wanting on the road break off discourse ; besides that I often travel without the company fit for such regular conversation ; by which means I have all the leisure I would desire to entertain myself. It falls out to me as it does

\* *Ὀῖοντι δὲ (φασὶ) καὶ κάππριν καθανερ Σακράτης τὸν Κῦνα*, Diogenes Laert. lib. vii. sect. 32. *Capparis* is the name of a shrub bearing capers ; others swore by a cabbage, as is the custom in France, even at this day ; witness the word *vertuchou*, a kind of oath, which signifies by the virtue of cabbage ; an expression which many people make use of every now and then.

† Diogenes Laert. in the Life of Pythagoras, lib. viii. sect. 6.

with my dreams. Whilst I am dreaming I recommend them to my memory (for I am apt to dream that I dream), but next day I may well enough call to mind what complexion they were of, whether gay, or sad, or wild; but what they were as to the rest, the more I strive to recollect, the deeper I plunge it in oblivion. So of thoughts that come accidentally into my head, I have no more than a vain image remaining in my memory; only enough to tease and vex me in a fruitless search after them.

Now therefore, laying books aside, and to speak more to the purpose and the truth, I find after all, that love is nothing but the thirst of the enjoyment of it in a desired subject, and that Venus is nothing more than the pleasure of discharging the vessels; like the pleasure that nature gives us in the discharge of the other parts, which becomes vicious by being either immoderate or indiscreet. According to Socrates, love is the appetite of generation by the intervention of beauty. And, having often considered the ridiculous titillation of this pleasure, the absurd, hairbrained, and senseless motions with which it agitates Zeno and Crasippus, the indiscreet rage, the countenance inflamed with fury and cruelty, in the sweetest act of love; and then that sour, grave, and ecstatic one in an action so wanton; that our delights and our excrements are promiscuously shuffled together, and that the highest pleasure is, like pain, attended with fainting and complaining, I think it true what Plato says, that man was made by the gods for their sport.\*

What love is; how it renders a man ridiculous, and like to the beasts.

——— (*Quænam ista jocandi  
Scævitia?*) †

What a strange sporting cruelty is this?

and that it is in derision that nature has ordered the most common of our actions to be the most troublesome; thereby to make us equal, and to parallel fools and wise men, beasts and us. When I imagine

\* *Ἀνθρώπων Θεῶν τε παίσγιον εἶναι*, De Legibus, lib. vii. p. 889.

† Claud. in Eutrop. lib. i. ver. 24, 25.

the most contemplative and prudent man in this situation, I think he has consummate impudence to pretend to be prudent and contemplative. The pride of the peacock is mortified by its legs.

——— *Ridentem dicere verum,  
Quid vetat ? \**

Why may not truth in laughing guise be dress'd.

They who in their sports banish serious thoughts, are, says one, like the person who fears to adore the statue of a saint if it be stark naked. We eat and drink indeed as beasts do; but these are not actions that obstruct the functions of our soul. In those we maintain our advantage over them. This subjects every other thought to it: and, by its imperious authority, makes an ass of all Plato's divinity and philosophy, and yet there is no complaint of it. In every thing else you may preserve a sort of decorum: all other operations submit to the rules of honesty; this cannot so much as in imagination appear other than vicious or ridiculous. Examine if you can therein find a wise and discreet proceeding. Alexander said, that this performance and sleeping were the chief actions by which he knew himself to be mortal.† Sleep suffocates and suppresses the faculties of our soul; the exercise with the sex absorbs and dissipates them in like manner. Doubtless, it is a mark not only of our original corruption, but also of our vanity and deformity.

Why is  
love, with  
which na-  
ture in-  
spires us,  
to be con-  
demned.

Nature impels us to it on the one hand, by having attached to this desire the most noble, useful, and pleasant of all her functions; and, on the other hand, she leaves us to accuse and avoid it as a thing insolent and indecent, to blush at it, and to recommend abstinence. Are not we brutes to call that operation brutish which begets us? People of various religions have concurred in several ceremonies, as sacrifices, lamps, burning incense, fastings, obla-

\* Hor. lib. i. sat 1, ver 24, 25.

† Plutarch, in his Treat of the Means to distinguish the Flatterer from the Friend, chap. 23.

tions, and among others in the condemnation of this action. All opinions centre in this, besides the antiquated practice of circumcision. We have perhaps cause to blame ourselves for contributing to so silly a production as man; if we call the act and the parts that are employed in it shameful; as mine are properly so at this time. The Essenians, of whom Pliny speaks, kept up their nation several ages,\* without nurses or cradles, by the arrival of foreigners, who, following this pretty humour, came among them continually; a whole nation running the hazard of total extinction, rather than engage themselves in female embraces, and rather to lose a succession of men than to beget one. They say that Zeno† never had to do with a woman but once in his whole life, and then out of civility that he might not be deemed a woman-hater. Every one shuns the sight of a birth; every one runs to see an execution. To destroy, a spacious field is sought out, and that in the face of the sun; but to beget, we creep into as dark and close a corner as we can. It is a man's duty to withdraw himself from the light to do it; but it is his glory, and the fountain of many virtues, to be able to destroy it. The one is an injury, the other a favour; for Aristotle said, that to do any one good was, according to a proverb in his country, to kill him. The Athenians, for the sake of paralleling the disgust of those two actions, being to cleanse the island of Delos, and to justify themselves to Apollo, prohibited all births and burials in the precincts thereof. *Nostri nosmet pœnitent*; ‡ “We are ashamed of ourselves.”

\* “Gens sola, et in toto orbe præter cæteras mira, sine ullâ fœminâ, omni Venere abdicatâ.—In diem ex æquo convenarum turbe renascitur, large frequentibus quos vitâ fessos ad mores eorum fortune fluctus agitat. Ita per sæculorum millia (incredibile dictu) gens æterna est, in quâ nemo nascitur.” Nat. Hist. lib. v. cap.

17

† Diog. Laert. in the Life of Zeno, lib. vii. sect. 13.

‡ Seneca tells his friend Lucilius, in his 115th epistle, that he would reap a very considerable advantage from philosophy, viz. that

There are  
people who  
do not care  
that any  
should see  
them eat.

There are nations where the people do not love to be seen to eat. I know a lady, and of the greatest quality too, who thinks also that chewing gives a disagreeable air to the face, which takes off much of its grace and beauty; and therefore she does not care to appear in public with an appetite: and I know a man too who cannot bear to see another, or be seen himself to eat; and is more shy of company to see him in the act of repletion than that of evacuation.

Turkish  
mad men,  
who are  
proud to  
debase  
their own  
nature.

In the Turkish empire there are a great many men, who, aiming to be thought more excellent than others, never suffer themselves to be seen when they are at their meals, who make but one in a week, who cut and mangle their face and members, and never speak to any one: a frantic people, who think to honour their nature by being unnatural to it, who value themselves upon despising themselves, and become better by growing worse. What a monster is the animal that becomes horrible to himself; whose delights are his plagues, and who sticks to misfortune!

There are some who hide themselves as long as they live,

*Exilioque domos et dulcia limina mutant;  
Atque alio patriam quærunt sub sole jacentem.\**

Leaving their native seats, in exile run  
To lands that lie beneath another sun.

Men who  
conceal  
themselves  
from sight,  
and are in-  
genious in  
using them-  
selves ill.

stealing from the sight of other men; and avoid health and cheerfulness, as qualities that are prejudicial, and enemies to the human being. Not only many sects, but many individuals, curse their birth, and bless their death: and there is a place where the sun is abhorred, and darkness adored. We are only ingenious to use ourselves ill. In quest of this game

he would never be ashamed of himself; and it is not unlikely that this passage ran in Montaigne's head, though he employs it in a sense quite different.

\* Virg. Geo. lib. ii. ver. 511.

we employ all our wit, which is a dangerous tool if it be used intemperately :

*O miseri quorum gaudia crimen habent ! \**

O wretched man, whose very joys are crimes ! . .

Alas ! poor man ! thou hast misfortunes enough that are unavoidable, without stretching thy invention to increase them ; and art miserable enough by constitution, without being so by art ; thou hast real and essential deformities enough, without forging such as are imaginary. Dost thou think thyself too easy in thy circumstances if one half of thy enjoyments does not disquiet thee ? Dost thou think that thou hast performed all the necessary offices to which thou art engaged by nature : and that she is idle in thee if thou dost not oblige thyself to new offices ? Thou dost not scruple to offend her universal and undoubted laws, and art very tenacious of thy own favourite whimsies, which, the more particular, uncertain, and repugnant they are, the more pains thou dost take in their favour. Thou art attached to the positive laws of thy parish, but those of the world concern thee not. Run but a little over the examples of this kind ; thy whole life is full of them.

In my opinion, the verses of those two poets, in treating so reservedly and discreetly of lasciviousness, discover it, and lay it fuller in view. The ladies cover their breasts with net-work, as the priests do several sacred things ; and painters throw a shade over their works to give them the greater lustre : and the sun and wind are said to strike more violently by reflection than in a direct line. When the Egyptian was asked, what he carried so secretly under his cloak : he gravely answered, It is hid under my cloak, to the end that thou mightest not know what it is.† But there are some other things that are hid only on

To talk discreetly of love only stimulates it the more.

\* Cornel. Gal. eleg. 1, ver. 118.

† Plutarch, of Curiosity, chap. 3.



purpose to be shown. Hear this man who speaks plainer :

*Et nudam pressi corpus adusque meum.\**

And in these naked arms of mine  
Her naked body I did twine.

Methinks I am emasculated by this expression. If Martial turn up Venus's coats ever so high, he cannot show her in such perfection. He who says all that might be said, surfeits and disgusts us. He who is afraid to speak out, inclines one to think more of the matter than there is in reality. There is a kind of treachery in this sort of modesty, and especially whilst they half open, as they do, so fair a path to imagination. And both the action and the description must show they are stolen.

The love of the Spaniards and the Italians; the more respectful and timorous it is, the more agreeable.

The love of the Spaniards and Italians the more respectful and timorous, the more coy and secret it is, the better it pleases me. I know not which of the ancients it was who wished his weasand as long as the neck of a crane,† that he might be the longer in tasting what he swallowed. Such a wish would have been more proper in this pleasure, which is so quick and precipitant, especially in such natures as mine, which has the fault of being too sudden in its motion. To stop its flight, and delay it with preambles, a wink, a bow, a word, a sign, stand all for favour and recompence between them. Would it not be excellent frugality in him that could dine on the steam of roast-meat?

Love ought to be made gradually, and without precipitation.

It is a passion in which solidity has very little share, but vanity and a feverish dotage much greater; and it must be recompensed and served in the same manner. We teach the ladies to value and esteem themselves, and to amuse and cheat us. We give the last discharge at the first onset. The French impetuosity always attends it. By spinning out

\* Ovid. de Amor. lib. i. eleg. 5; ver. 24. \*

† See in Athenæus, lib. i. cap. 6.

their favours, and exposing them in small parcels, even wretched old age finds some share of them according to a man's value and merit. He who has no fruition but in fruition, who wins nothing unless he sweep the stakes, who only loves the chase for the sake of the quarry, has no business to come to our school. The more steps and gradations there are, the uppermost seat is the higher, and the more honourable. We should take a pleasure in being conducted to it, as is the way in magnificent palaces, by divers porticos and passages, long and pleasant galleries, and by many turnings and windings. This management would redound to our advantage. We should then stay longer and love longer. Without hope, and without desire, our progress is not worth a rush. Our conquest and entire possession is what they ought always to dread.\* When they surrender themselves up to the mercy of our fidelity and constancy, they run not a little hazard. These are virtues rare and hard to attain to. They are no sooner ours but we are no more theirs :

— *Postquam cupidæ mentis satiatæ libido est.  
Verba nihil metuerè, nihil perjuria curant.\**

When our desires and lusts once sated are  
For oaths and promises we nothing care.

Thrasonides, a young man of Greece, was so fond of his amour that, having gained his mistress's heart, he refused to enjoy her, that he might not by fruition consume, quench, and satiate that uneasy passion, of which he boasted, and with which he fed his fancy. The dearness of a dish heightens the relish of it.

Do but observe how much the fashion of saluting, which is peculiar to our nation, does, by the facility of granting them, rob kisses of that charm which Socrates said is so powerful and dangerous for stealing our hearts. It is a disagreeable and offensive fashion for the ladies that they must be obliged to lend their

Kisses rendered contemptible by being too common in salutes.

\* Catullus de Nuptiis Pelei et Thetidis, carm. 62, ver. 147.

lips to every man that has three footmen to attend him, be his person ever so disgusting :

*Cujus livida naribus caninis  
Dependet glacies, rigetque barba :\**

— — — — —  
*Centum occurrere malo cummilingis.†*

Nor are we ourselves at all gainers by the bargain ; for as the world is divided we are obliged to kiss fifty ugly faces for three beauties ; and to tender stomachs, like those of my age, a bad kiss is too dear a purchase for a good one.

In Italy they passionately court, and even fall into raptures of devotion to the very women who prostitute themselves for money ; and justify their conduct by pleading that there are degrees of fruition, and that they pay them so much compliment with a desire of obtaining that fruition which is the most entire. The women only sell their bodies : their wills are too free, and too much their own to be put to sale. Therefore, say these gentlemen, it is the will they aim at, and so far they are in the right. It is the will that must be obliged and managed. I should abhor to think that mine was a body deprived of affection. This madness is, methinks, akin to that of the boy,‡ who longed to ravish the beautiful image of Venus, which was carved by Praxiteles ; or that of the furious Egyptian, who violated the dead corpse of a woman that he was embalming ; which gave occasion to the law § made afterwards in Egypt, that the bodies of beautiful young women, and those of a good family, should be kept three days before

\* Martial. lib. vii. epig. 94.

† The Latin is the only language that is so licentious as to convey ideas so gross and nasty. Seneca says it is better to suppress some things in silence, though it be to the detriment of the cause, rather than to transgress the bounds of modesty. Senec. Controvers. lib. i. Controv. 2, towards the end.

‡ “ Venerem Praxiteles in marmore quasi spirantem in templo  
“ Guidiorum collocavit, propter pulchritudinem operis, a libidinoso  
“ cujusdam complexu parum tutam.” Valer. Max. lib. viii. cap.  
11, in Externis, sect. 4.

§ Herodot. lib. ii. p. 136.

they were put into the hands of those persons who had the charge of their interment. Periander acted more wonderfully, who extended his conjugal affection (more regularly and legal) to the enjoyment of his wife Melissa after she was dead.\* Does it not seem a lunatic humour in the moon, when she could no otherwise enjoy her darling Endymion, to lay him asleep for several months, and to please herself with the fruition of a boy, who stirred not but in a dream? I likewise say, that to love a body without its consent and without its desire, is to love a body without a soul. All enjoyments are not the same. There are some that are hectic and languishing. A thousand other causes, besides good will, may procure us this grant from the ladies. This is not a sufficient testimony of affection. Treachery may lurk there as well as elsewhere. They go to it sometimes but with half a mind :

*Tanquam thura merumque parent,†  
Absentem marmoreâmvē putes.‡*

So coldly they the sacrifice prepare,  
You'd think they absent, or else marble are.

I know some ladies who had rather lend than their coach, and who only impart themselves that way. You are to observe whether your company pleases them upon any other account, or only for that same, the endowment of some strong-chined groom; and in what degree of favour you stand with them :

— *Tibi si datur uni  
Quo lapide illo diem candidiore nolet.§*

Whether thy mistress favour thee alone,  
And mark thy day out with the whiter stone.

What if she sops the bread she eats of yours in the sauce of a more pleasing imagination ?

\* Diog. Laertius, in the Life of Periander, lib. i. sect. 96.

† Mart, lib. xi. ep. 105, ver. 12.      ‡ Id. lib. xi. ep. 61, ver. 8.

§ Catull. ad Manlium, carm. 66, ver. 147.

*Te tenet, absentes alios suspirat amores.\**

While in her arms intwin'd you don't discover,  
She pants with longing for an absent lover.

In France  
there are as  
many  
charming  
women and  
men of un-  
common  
merit as in  
Italy.

What? have we not known a man in our own times who made this act subservient to a horrid piece of revenge, by that means to poison and kill an honest woman? They who know Italy will never think it strange if I seek not elsewhere for instances of this kind. For that nation may be called the mistress of the world in this respect. They have generally finer women, and fewer ordinary ones than we; but for uncommon and excellent beauties I reckon that we are upon a par. I form the same judgment of the wits of the common class, of which it is plain that they have many more. Brutality is, without comparison, more uncommon there. As for singular geniuses, and those of the first rate, we are not at all indebted to them. Were I to extend the comparison, I think I might say as to prowess, it is with us popular and natural, contrary to what it is with them; but we have seen it sometimes in their hands to a degree so full and vigorous that it surpasses the greatest instances we have of it.

The incon-  
veniences  
of the too  
great re-  
straints in  
which the  
Italians  
keep their  
wives.

The marriages of that country are very unhappy upon this account: their custom commonly imposes so harsh and slavish a law upon their wives, that the most remote acquaintance with a stranger is as great a crime with them as the closest; the consequence of which law is, that all reproaches become necessarily substantial; and, since all comes to the same account, they have a very easy choice to make. And, when they have broke down those fences, depend on it they are all on fire, *Luxuria ipsis vinculis, sicut fera bestia, irritata, deinde emissæ*: "Lust, like a wild beast, being enraged by being bound, breaks from its chain." It is necessary they should have a little more rein:

\* Tibull. lib. i. el. 6, ver. 35.

*Vidi ego nuper equum contra sua fræna tenacem,  
Ore reluctanti fulminis ire modo.\**

I saw, spite of his bit, a head-strong colt  
Run with his rider like a thunderbolt.

The desire of company is abated by giving it some liberty. It is a fine custom we have in our nation that our children are admitted into good families, to be entertained and bred up pages as in a school of nobility. And it is looked upon as an incivility and an affront to refuse a gentleman. I have taken notice (for so many families, so many different styles and forms), that the ladies who have chosen to subject the maids of their retinue to the most austere rules, have had no better luck than those who have allowed them greater liberty. There is a necessity for using moderation. A good part of their conduct should be left to their discretion; for when all comes to all, there is no discipline that can totally restrain them. But it is very true, that she who comes off safe and sound from a school of liberty, is more to be trusted than she who comes away sound from a severe and cloistered education.

Our ancestors formed the countenances of their daughters to bashfulness and fear (their courage and desires being always alike), we ours to assurance. We understand nothing of the matter. This is the business of the Sarmatian ladies, who are not allowed to lie with a man till they have killed another in battle with their own hands. For me who have no other demand upon them than that they would give me hearing, it is sufficient if they retain me for council according to the privilege of my age. I advise them, therefore, as well as my own sex, to abstinence; but, if the times we live in will not admit of this, let them be at least discreet and modest. For as Aristippus† is reported to have said to certain young men, that blushed at seeing him go into a bawdy-house, the

Modesty  
necessary  
to women.

\* Ovid. Amor. lib. iii. eleg. 4, ver. 13, 14.

† Diog. Laert. in the Life of Aristippus, lib. ii. sect. 69.

crime is not in going in, but in not coming out.— Let her that has no care of her conscience have some regard however for her character ; and, though she be rotten within, let her carry a fair outside.

Montaigne's  
taste as to  
the article  
of love.

I commend a gradation and length of time in the bestowing of their favours. Plato shows that, in all sorts of love, facility and readiness are prohibited to the defendants. For the women to yield so entirely and rashly, without fear or wit, discovers a greedy appetite, which they ought with all their art to conceal. By their orderly and regular deportment in their grant of their favours, they much more whet our desire, and hide their own. Let them always fly before us ; I mean those who wish nevertheless to be overtaken. They conquer us the better by flight, like the Scythians. In truth, according to the law that nature has imposed on them, it is not properly their prerogative either to will or desire : their part is to suffer, obey, and consent ; for which nature has given them a perpetual capacity, which in us is uncertain. They have always their call, to the end that they may be always ready for ours. *Pati Natare* : \* “ They are born to be passive ; ” and whereas she has ordered that our appetites should be manifested by a prominent show and declaration of it, she has caused theirs to be hidden and internal, and furnished them with parts improper for ostentation, and such as are merely defensive. Such proceedings as this that follows must be left to the Amazonian licence. Alexander, passing through Hyrcania, Thalestris, queen of the Amazons, met him with three hundred light-horse, of her own sex, finely mounted and well armed, having left the remainder of a great army that followed her, behind the neighbouring hills ; and when she came into his presence, she spoke aloud to him, and said, “ That

\* These two words are taken out of Seneca, who, speaking of the women of his time, says, that the sex born of the passive gender was as lustful as that of the active gender, epist. 95.

“ the fame of his victories and valour had brought her thither to see him, and to make him an offer of her forces to assist him in his enterprises; and that, finding him so handsome, young, and vigorous, she, who was also perfect in all those qualities,\* advised him that they might lie together, to the end that, from the most valiant woman in the world, and the most valiant man then living, there might hereafter spring some great and wonderful issue.” Alexander thanked her, and, to give time for the accomplishment of her demand, he stayed there thirteen days, which were spent with as much mirth as possible to welcome so heroic a princess.

We are, almost in every instance, unjust judges of their actions, as they are of ours. I pay the same acknowledgment to the truth when it makes against me, as when it is on my side. It is an abominable intemperance that prompts them so often to change, and that hinders them from limiting their affection to any one person whatsoever, as is evident in that goodness, to whom are attributed so many changes, and so many different paramours. But it is true, at the same time, that it is contrary to the nature of love if it be not violent, and contrary to the nature of violence if it be constant. And they who make it a wonder, who exclaim against it, and make such an inquiry into the causes of this frailty of theirs, as if it were unnatural and incredible, whence happens it that they do not perceive how often they are themselves guilty of the same without any astonishment or miracle at all? It would, perhaps, be more strange to see the passion fixed. It is not a passion

Why in love it is wrong for the men to blame the levity and inconstancy of the women.

\* Diodorus of Sicily, lib. xvii. cap. 16. But this historian does not say that this queen of the Amazons offered Alexander troops, to aid him in his military expeditions; and Quintus Curtius, lib. vi. sect. 5, says expressly, that Alexander having asked her if she would go to the wars with him, she excused herself by saying, that she had left nobody to be guardian of her kingdom; “ Causata, sine custode regnum reliquisse.”



merely corporeal. If there be no end in avarice and ambition, there is no end neither in carnal concupiscence. It exists even after satiety, and it is impossible to prescribe either lasting satisfaction or end to it. It always longs for something unpossessed ; and yet inconstancy is, perhaps, somewhat more pardonable in them than in us. They may plead, as well as we, the inclination to variety and novelty, which is common to both sexes ; and secondly, they might plead, whether we will admit it or not, that they buy a pig in a poke. Joan, queen of Naples,\* caused Andreosso, her first husband, to be hanged at the bars of her window in a halter of gold and silk, wove with her own hand, because that in the matrimonial duties she found he had not the parts, and could not make the efforts answerable to the expectation she had conceived from his stature, beauty, youth, and disposition, whereby she had been caught and deceived. There is more labour required in doing than in suffering ; so that they are on their part always at least provided for the supply of our exigency, but it may happen otherwise on our part. For this reason Plato wisely made a law, that before every marriage, in order to prove its fitness, certain judges should view the youths, who claimed it, stark naked, and the women naked too, but not lower than the waist. In their trial of us, perhaps, they do not find us worthy of their choice :

*Experta latus madidoque simillima loro  
Inguina, nec lassâ stare coacta manu  
Deserit imbelles thalamos.†*

It is not enough that the will be good. Impotency

\* Andrew, the son of Charles, king of Hungary, and the husband of Joan I. queen of Naples. The Italians called him Andreosso. As to the tragical death of this prince, see Bayle's Dictionary, in the article of JOAN I. of Naples.

† As was the case of Galla mentioned in Martial (lib. vii. ep. 57, ver. 3, &c.) who, being dissatisfied with six or seven husbands whom she quitted, was likewise deceived by other husbands equally deficient.

and insufficiency are lawful reasons for dissolving a marriage :

*Et quærundum aliunde foret nervosius illud,  
Quod posset zonam solvere virgineam.\**

And why should not she look out for an amorous being, more licentious and active according to her own standard ?

——— *Si blando nequeat superesse labori.†*

The pleasing labour if he can't perform.

But is it not great impudence to bring our insufficiency and impotency to the place where we desire to give pleasure, and to leave a good opinion and character of ourselves? For the little that I am able to do now,

——— *Ad unum  
Mollis opus.‡*

But once a night.

I would not tease a person whom I esteem and fear to offend :

——— *Fuge suspicari  
Cujus undenum trepidavit ætas  
Claudere lustrum. §*

Let not your mind indulge suspicious fears  
Of him who trembling draws to threescore years.

Nature ought to be satisfied with having rendered this age miserable, without exposing it also to ridicule. I hate to see it, for one poor inch of pitiful vigour which warms thrice a week, to strut and push on with as much eagerness as if it had length and strength to perform mighty feats, which end in a mere blaze of flax; and wonder to see its violent itching so suddenly chilled and extinguished. This is an appetite which can be in none but the flower of

\* Catullus ad januam mæhæ cujusdam, carm. 65, ver. 27, 28.

† Georg. lib. iii. ver. 127. ‡ Hor. epod. lib. xii. ver. 15, 16.

§ Horace, lib. ii. ode 4, ver. 22.

beautiful youth. If you trust to nature, expecting she will second that indefatigable, full, constant, and magnanimous ardour which is in you, she will certainly leave you in the lurch. Return it, therefore, boldly to some tender, bashful, and ignorant boy, who still trembles under the lash and blushes at it :

*Indum sanguineo veluti violaverit ostro  
Si quis elur, vel mista rubent ubi lilia, multâ  
Alba rosâ.\**

So Indian iv'ry, stain'd with crimson, shows,  
Or lilies white, mix'd with the damask rose.

He who can, without hanging down his head for very shame, expect next day to face the disdain of those fair eyes conscious of his fumbling impertinence,

*Et taciti fecere tamen convicia vultus.†*

—And, though she nothing says,  
How ill she lik'd my work her look betrays.

he never felt the satisfaction and pride of having tired them, and tarnished their lustre, by the vigorous performance of one active heroic night. When I have observed any one of them to be disgusted with me, I have not presently accused her levity, but have been in doubt if I had not reason rather to find fault with nature, which has certainly treated me very unkindly and unjustly,

*(Si non longa satis, si non bene mentula crassa :  
Nimirum sapiunt videntque parvum  
Matronæ quoque mentulam illibenter.)‡*

and done me a most enormous prejudice. Every member I have is equally mine, as much one as another ; and no other more properly makes me a man than this.

\* Æneid, lib. xii. ver. 67.

† Ovid. Amor. lib. i. eleg. 7, ver. 21.

‡ Of these three verses the first is the beginning of a sort of epigram, entitled, Priapus in Veterum Poetarum Catalectis, and the two others are taken from one of the first epigrams of the same book, Ad Matronas, composed of five verses, two of which are parodied by Montaigne.

I ought to give the public my picture entire, with all its lights and shades. 'The wise part of' my lecture wholly consists in truth, liberty, and essence; Montaigne's apology for the licentiousness of his style. disdaining to admit those little feigned, common, and provincial rules into the catalogue of its real duties; it is altogether natural, constant, and general; of which civility and ceremony are daughters indeed, but spurious. We are sure we shall have the appearance of vices when we shall have had them in reality. When we have done with these we run full drive upon others, if we find it must be so: for there is danger that we fancy new duties, to excuse our neglect of the natural ones, and so confound them. That such is the case, it is visible that in places where mistakes are mischiefs, the mischiefs are only mistakes: that in nations where the laws of decency are most rare and most remiss, the primitive rules of common reason are best observed; such numberless duties stifling and dissipating all our care. The application to trifling things diverts our attention from those which justly require it. What an easy, plausible course, do these superficial men take, compared with ours? These are shadows, wherewith we palliate and pay one another. But, instead of paying, we inflame the reckoning towards that great judge, who tucks up our rags and tatters round our pudenda, and thoroughly scrutinises every part of us, even to those that are the inmost and most secret. It were a decent and useful quality of our virgin modesty, could it prevent this discovery. In fine, he that could reclaim man from so scrupulous a verbal superstition, would do the world no great damage. Our life is divided between folly and prudence. Whoever writes nothing of it but what is reverend and regular, leaves above one half behind. I do not excuse myself to myself; and if I did, it should be rather to apologise for my excuses than for any other fault of mine. I excuse myself as to certain humours which, I think, are more in number than those that I can justify. With regard to them

I have also this to say (for I desire to please every body, as hard a matter as it is for a single man, *esse accommodatum ad tantam morum ac sermonum et voluntatum varietatem* :\* “ To accommodate himself to so great a variety of manners, discourses, and determinations ”), that they cannot condemn me for making use of authorities which have been received and approved of for many ages ; and that there is no reason that, for want of rhyme, they should refuse me the dispensation which they allow even to the churchmen of our nation and time. Of this the two lines that follow are the most signal examples :

*Rimula, dispeream, ni monograma tua est.*†  
*Un vit d' amy la contente et bien traitte.*‡

What would you think of many others of the like kind ? I love modesty ; and it is not from judgment that I have chosen this scandalous sort of discourse ; it is nature that has chosen it for me. I commend it not any more than all other terms of speaking contrary to received custom : but I excuse it, and, by circumstances, both general and particular, mitigate the accusation.

To pursue this subject : from whence can proceed that usurpation of sovereign authority which you pretend to over those ladies who favour you at their own peril :

*Si furtiva dedit migrâ munuscula nocte.*§  
 If in the silence of the night  
 She has permitted stol'n delight.

Such favourites of the ladies so that you presently take upon you the interests, coldness, and authority of a husband ? It is a free

\* Q. Cic. de *Petitione Consulat*us, cap. 14.

† As to the too free poems which Beza composed in his youth, they, who are curious in inquiries of this sort, may consult Bayle's *Critical Dictionary* in the article of BEZA, note x.

‡ Beza, St. Gelasius.

§ Catull. ad Manlium, *carm.* 66, ver. 145.

convention ; why then do you not stick to it, as you are desirous they should ? There is no prescription as to things that are voluntary. It is not the fashion ; however, it is certain that I have, in my time, carried on this bargain as far as the nature of it will admit, as conscientiously as any other contract whatsoever, and with some air of justice ; and that I never pretended to declare any affection for them but what I really had, and ingenuously discovered to them the decay, strength, and source of it, together with his fits and intermissions. A man does not always hold on in the same pace. I have been so shy of promising, that I fancy my performances have exceeded my promise, and even what I was obliged to do. They have found me faithful, even to the service of their inconstancy ; even an inconstancy avowed, and sometimes multiplied. I never broke with them whilst I had the least hold of them ; and, what occasion soever they have given me, never broke with them so far as to scorn or hate them. For such privacies, when even obtained upon terms the most scandalous, yet oblige me to some benevolence. I have sometimes discovered a little indiscreet anger and impatience upon their tricks and subterfuges, and in our disputes : for I am, by my constitution, subject to hasty sallies, which, though slight and short, often spoil my market. If at any time they were pleased to take my free thoughts, I have not failed to give them fatherly, but sharp advice, and to pinch them in the sore place. If ever I left them to complain of me, it was rather that they found my love foolishly conscientious in comparison with the modern custom. I have kept my word in things wherein I might easily have been dispensed with. They then surrendered sometimes with reputation, and on such articles of capitulation as they easily suffered to be violated by the conqueror. I have more than once made pleasure, in its greatest effort, truckle to the interest of their honour ; and, when reason urged me, have armed them against me ; so that

as a  
to them-  
self, an  
unreason-  
able autho-  
rity over  
their mis-  
tresses  
blamed for  
it, and not  
at all imi-  
tated by  
don-  
taigne.

they conducted themselves with greater security and gravity by my rules, when they frankly referred themselves to them, than they would have done by their own. I have ever, to my utmost, taken upon myself alone the hazard of our assignations, in order to save them harmless : and have always brought about our interviews by intrigues the most unpleasant and unexpected, that they might be least mistrusted, while yet, in my opinion, they were the more practicable. They are chiefly open in those places where they think themselves sheltered. Things that are the least feared are the least defended and observed. One may more easily dare what nobody thinks you would dare to do, which, through its difficulty, becomes easy. Never had any man his approaches more impertinently genital. This way of loving is more according to discipline ; but who knows better than I how ridiculous and ineffectual it is to our people ; yet I shall not repent of it : I have nothing more to lose by it :\*

— *Me tabula sacer  
Votiva paries indicat uvida  
Suspendisse potenti  
Vestimenta maris Deo.*†

My votive table makes it plain  
That I have quit the briny main,  
And now in Neptune's fane my vest  
Will show the evidence confess'd.

It is now high time to speak out : but perhaps I might say, as I would do at another time, thou talk-est idly, my friend. The love of thy time has little correspondence with faith and integrity :

*Hæc si tu postules  
Ratione certa facere, nihilo plus agas,  
Quàm si des operam, ut cum ratione insanias.*‡

\* Montaigne would signify by this, that, having been exposed by love to many traverses, he had at length extricated himself from that dangerous passion for ever.

† Hor. lib. i. ode 5, ver. 13, &c.

‡ Terence Eunuch, act i. scene 1, ver. 16, &c.

These things should'st thou undertake,  
 By reason permanent to make;  
 This will be all thou'lt get by it,  
 Wisely to run out of thy wit.

So, on the contrary, were I to begin, it should certainly be by the same tract, and the progress should be the same, how fruitless soever it might prove. Incapacity and stupidity are commendable in an action that is not praise-worthy. The farther I deviate from their humour in this, the nearer I approach to my own. As for the rest, in this bargain I did not suffer myself to be totally captivated; I was pleased with it, but did not forget myself. I reserved the little sense and discretion which nature has given me, entire for their service and my own; a little rapture, but no dotage. My conscience was also engaged in it, even to an excess of debauchery; but never so far as to be guilty of ingratitude, malice, and cruelty. I did not purchase the pleasure of this vice at any rate; but contented myself with its proper and simple expense. *Nullum intra se vitium est*.\* “Nothing is in itself a vice.” I hate a stupid, sluggish laziness almost as much as I do a crabbed and painful employment. The one pinches me, the other lays me asleep. I like wounds as well as bruises, and cuts as well as dry blows. I found in this commerce, when I was best qualified for it, a just medium between the two extremes. Love is a wakeful, sprightly, and gay agitation. I was not sick nor sorry with it, but warmed; and, moreover, changed by it. There it is necessary to make a stop. It hurts none but fools. A young man asked Panætius,† the philosopher, if it was becoming a wise man to be in love? “Let the wise man look to “that,” said he, “but let not thou and I, who “are not so, engage ourselves in an affair of so “much agitation and violence as will enslave us to “others, and render us contemptible to ourselves.”

\* Senec. epist. 95.

† Idem, epist. 117.



He spoke the truth, that we ought not to trust a passion, so giddy of itself, to a soul that has not fortitude to withstand its assaults, nor to disprove the saying of Agesilaus,\* that prudence and love cannot associate. It is, in truth, a vain occupation, indecent, scandalous, and unlawful ; but, to carry it on after this manner, I reckon it wholesome, proper to enliven both the body and soul when dull and sluggish ; and, in quality of a physician, I would prescribe it to a man of my make and condition as soon as any other recipe whatsoever, to rouze and keep him in vigour when far advanced in years, and to make him dally with the attacks of old age. Whilst we are but in the suburbs of it, and while the pulse yet beats,

*Dum nova canities, dum prima et recta senectus,  
Dum superest Lachesi quod torqueat, et pedibus me  
Porto meis, nullo dextram subeunte bacillo.†*

Whilst my gray hairs do just approach in sight,  
Whilst my old age is fresh, and stands upright ;  
Whilst on fate's spinning-wheel remains more thread,  
And whilst, without a staff, firm is my tread.

we have need to be prompted, and tickled by some such provocative. Do but observe with what youth, vigour, and gaiety it inspired the sage Anacreon ; and Socrates, when he was older than I now am, speaking of an amorous object, " Leaning," said he, " my shoulder to her shoulder, and touching " her head with mine, as we were reading both together in one book, I perceived, without jesting, " a sudden sting in my shoulder, like some flea-bite, " which crept about me five days after ; and was " accompanied with a continual titillation in my " heart."‡ What ! did only an accidental touch, and that by the shoulder, raise a heat, and create an al-

\* " O ! how hard a matter is it," said Agesilaus, " for a man to " be in love and his sober senses at one and the same time !" Plutarch, in the Life of Agesilaus, chap. 4 of Amyot's translation.

† Juv. sat. iii. ver. 26, &c.

‡ Xenophon's Symposiacs, chap. 4, sect. 27, 28.

teration in a breast that was chilled and enervated by age; and one too that was the first reformer of the human race! And pray why not? Socrates was a man, and would neither be, nor seem to be, any thing else. Philosophy does not combat natural pleasures, provided they be used moderately; and preaches up moderation, but not total abstinence. It raves most against such pleasures as are foreign to nature, and adulterated. It says, that the appetites of the body ought not to be augmented by the mind; and cautions us not to stuff instead of filling the belly, to avoid all enjoyment that may bring us to want, and all meats and drinks that create thirst or hunger. So, in the service of love, philosophy prescribes to us to take an object that may purely satisfy the necessity of the body, and not move the soul, which ought to have no share in the fact, but simply to follow and assist the body. But have I not reason to judge that these precepts, which are, I think, however, in other respects a little too severe, are only directed to a body that performs its office; and that for a body in a state of decay, like that of a weak stomach, it is excusable to warm and support it by art; and, by the intervention of the fancy, to restore the appetite and alacrity because it went off of itself?

May we not say that there is nothing in us, during this terrestrial imprisonment, that is purely either corporeal or spiritual; that we injuriously dismember a man alive; and that it seems but reasonable that we should act as favourably with regard to pleasure as to pain? This was (for example) vehement, even to perfection, in the souls of the saints by repentance; the body had naturally a share therein by the right of its union, and yet might have little share in the cause; nevertheless, they were not contented that the body should barely follow and assist the afflicted soul. They afflicted it by itself with grievous and peculiar torments, to the

Mon-  
taigne's  
opinion  
that both  
the body  
and mind  
ought to  
assist each  
other in  
the use of  
pleasure.

end that both the body and the soul should strive to plunge man in misery, by so much the more wholesome as it is more piercing. So, in the pleasures of the body, is it not injustice to deny the soul a share in them, and to say that it must be dragged into them as into some forced and servile obligation and necessity? It is rather her part to hatch and foment them; to present and invite herself to them, the governing part being her prerogative; as it is also her province, in my opinion, in those pleasures that are peculiar to her, to inspire and infuse into the body, all the sensation of them which its condition can admit of; and to study how to make them agreeable and salutary to it. For it is highly reasonable, as they say, that the body should not pursue its appetites to the prejudice of the soul; and why is it not as reasonable that the soul should not pursue her's to the prejudice of the body?

The advantages that may be reaped from love in an advanced age.

I have no other passion that keeps me in breath. The same effect that avarice, ambition, quarrels, and law-suits have upon other persons, who, like me, are of no particular profession, love would cause to much more advantage. It would render me vigilant, sober, graceful, and careful of my person. It would settle my countenance, so that it could not be spoiled by the crabbed looks of old age, those looks that are so ugly and so lamentable: it would again put me upon solid and wise studies, by which I might render myself more esteemed and beloved, clearing my mind of the despair of itself, and of its use, and making it again acquainted with itself. It would divert me from a thousand uneasy thoughts, a thousand melancholy chagrins, which inactivity and an ill state of health bring upon us at such an age. It would, in a dream at least, put fresh warmth into that blood which nature has deserted. It would hold up the chin, and a little stretch out the nerves, as well as add vigour and alacrity to the life of that poor man, who is making

large strides towards his dissolution. But I am far from being ignorant that it is a benefit very hard to recover ; by weakness and long experience our taste is become more delicate and exquisite. We desire most when we bring least ; and are willing to have the most choice when we least deserve to be accepted. From our consciousness of this we are less daring and more diffident ; and, considering our condition and theirs, nothing can assure us of being beloved. I am ashamed of myself when in company with those young bucks :

*Cujus in indomito constantior inguine nervus,\*  
Quam nova collibus arbor inhæret.†*

To what end should we carry on our misery where there is such mirth?

*Possint ut juvenes visere fervidi  
Multo non sine risu,  
Dilapsam in cineres facem.‡*

That youths, in fervent wishes bold,  
Not without laughter, may behold  
A torch, whose early fire  
Could ev'ry breast with love inflame,  
Now faintly spread a sickly gleam,  
And in a smoke expire.

They have both strength and reason on their side ; let us give way to them ; we have nothing more to say for ourselves ; and this blossom of springing beauty is not to be touched by hands so stiff with the cold, nor to be dealt with by methods that are purely material. For as the ancient philosopher said to his friend, that jeered him because he could not gain the favour of a girl whom he passionately courted, “ Such new cheese will not stick to my

\* Epod. lib. ode xii. ver. 19, 20.

† i. e. “ We are always in a capacity of performing well.” This is a short paraphrase on the distich, by la Fontaine, which those, who do not understand the Latin, must be content with; for the terms, made use of by Horace, convey such gross ideas, that we do not choose to translate them literally.

‡ Hor. lib. iv. ode 13, ver. 26, &c.

“hook.”\* It is a commerce that stands in need of relation and correspondence. Other pleasures that we receive are capable of being acknowledged by returns of a different kind; but this is only to be paid with the same coin. Really, in this sport, the pleasurè which I give tickles my imagination more than that which is given to me. Now, as he has not a spice of generosity in him, who can receive pleasure where he gives none; it must needs be a mean soul that desires to owe all, and can be contented to maintain a conversation with persons to whom he is a charge. There is no beauty, grace, or privacy, so exquisite that a man of honour ought to desire upon such terms. If they only can be kind to us out of pity, I had much rather not to live at all, than live upon charity. I would have right to demand it of them, in the style that I saw used in Italy, *Fate ben per voi*: “Do good for our own sake;” or in the manner that Cyrus exhorted his soldiers: “Let him that loves me follow me.” Consort yourself (I shall be told) with women of your own condition, who will, therefore, be more ready to oblige you. O! sottish and insipid:

————— *Nolo*  
*Barbam vellere mortuo leoni.†*

I will not twitch a dead lion by the beard.

Xenophon lays it for an objection, and an accusation against Menon,‡ that none but women that had passed their bloom were the objects of his amours. I really take more pleasure in the bare sight of the just and sweet mixture of two young beauties, or only contemplating it in my fancy, than to act as a second in such a sad disagreeable medley. I leave this whimsical appetite to the emperor Galba,§ who

\* Diog. Laertius, in the Life of Bion, lib. iv. sect. 47.

† Mart. lib. ii. epig. 10, ver. 9, 10.

‡ Αἰδὼς (Menon) παιδὶνα εἶχε θαυροῦται, ἀγνοῖεν δὲ γυναικῶνα Κίρεσ ἀναβας, lib. ii. cap. 6, sect. 15.

§ Suetonius, in the Life of Galba, sect. 22.

fancied no flesh but what was tough and old ; and to that poor wretch in Ovid :

*O ego di faciant talem te cernere possim,  
Charaque mutatis oscula ferre comis  
Ampletique meis corpus non pingue lacertis !\**

O ! would to heav'n I such might thee behold,  
To kiss those locks when thou in years art old,  
And thy lank body in my arms enfold.

Amongst the chief deformities, I reckon beauties that are artificial and forced. Emonez, a young wench of Chios, thinking, by her fine head-geer, to acquire the beauty which nature had denied her, went to Arcesilaus,† the philosopher, and asked him whether it was possible for a wise man to be in love ? “ Yes truly, ” replied he, “ but not with an artificial and counterfeit beauty like thine.” The deformity of an avowed old face is not so ugly, in my opinion, as another that is painted, or rather plastered. Shall I say it without danger of being taken by the collar for it ? I do not take love to be properly and naturally in season but in the age next to childhood :

*Quem si puellarum insereres choro,  
Mille sagaces fulleret hospites,  
Discrimen obscurum, solutis  
Crinibus, ambiguoque vultu.‡*

Who, plac'd amongst the maids, defies  
A skilful stranger's prying eyes,  
So smooth his boyish looks appear,  
So loose, so womanish his hair.

Nor beauty neither ; for, though Homer extends it to the budding of the chin, Plato himself has observed it to be uncommon. And the reason why the sophist Dion called the first down of beards Aristogitons and Harmodians, is notorious. I think

\* Ex Ponto, lib. i. ep. 4. To his wife, ver. 49, 50.

† Diog. Laert. in the Life of Arcesilaus, lib. iv. sect. 34.

‡ Horace, lib. ii. ode 5, ver. 20, &c.

that in virility love is a little out of its place, but much more in old age.

*Importunus enim transvolat aridas  
Quercus.\**

O'er wither'd oaks the wanton flies.

Margaret, queen of Navarre, like a very woman as she was, extends the advantage of the women to a great length, ordering that thirty years of age should be the season for changing the title of beautiful into that of good woman. The shorter time that we allow to love to keep possession of us, it is so much the better for us. Do but observe its carriage. He is a heedless boy who knows not how they behave in his school contrary to all order.—Study, exercise, and practice, are ways for insufficiency to proceed by. Novices are the regents in that school. *Amor ordinem nescit* :† “Love knows no order.” Doubtless, its conduct is more graceful when mixed with inadvertency and trouble. Mis-carriages and disappointments give it a spirit and a grace. Provided it be sharp and eager, it is no great matter whether it be prudent. Do but observe how it goes staggering, tripping, and playing tricks. To guide it by art and wisdom is putting it in the stocks; and it is cramping its divine liberty to put it into clutches so hairy and callous. For the rest, I have often heard women represent this being as spiritual, and scorn to take any notice of what interest the senses have therein. Every thing is of service to it; but I can say, I have often seen that we have excused the weakness of their understandings for the sake of the beauty of their persons; but I never yet saw, that, for the sake of the beauty of the mind,

\* Horace, lib. iv. ode 13, ver. 9.

† Mr. Cotton, in his translation, quotes St. Jerome for this, but does not mention chapter nor page. Anacreon said, long before him, that Bacchus, aided by love, was irregular in his frolics, ode 52, ver. ult.

how sedate and mature soever, the ladies were ever inclined to lend a hand to support a body that was fallen ever so little to decay. Why does not some woman or other take it into her head to make that noble Socratical barter of the body for the mind, purchasing a philosophical and spiritual intelligence and generation, at the price of her thighs, the highest price which she can set upon them? Plato orders, in his laws, that whoever performed any signal and advantageous exploit in war, should not, while it lasted, be denied a kiss, or any other amorous favour, by any woman whatsoever, his deformity or age notwithstanding. What he thinks to be so just in recommendation of military valour, why may it not be the same for the encouragement of any other valour? And why does not some woman take a fancy to forestal her companions in the glory of this chaste love? I may well say chaste :

*Num si quando ad prælia ventum est\*  
Ut quondam in stipulis magnus sine viribus ignis  
Incassum furit.†*

For when to join love's battle they engage,  
Like fire in straw they vainly spend their rage.

The vices that are stifled in thought are not the worst. To conclude this notable commentary, which has escaped from me in a torrent of babble ; a torrent impetuous sometimes, and offensive :

*Ut missum sponsi furtivo munere malum  
Procurrit casto virginis è gremio :  
Quod miseræ oblitæ molli sub veste locatum,  
Dum adventu matris prosilit excutitur,  
Atque illud prono præceps agitur decursu,  
Huic manat tristi conscius ore rutor.‡*

\* Geo. iii. ver. 97.

† The application which Montaigne here makes of Virgil's words is very extraordinary, as will appear immediately to those who will be at the pains of consulting the original.

‡ Catull. ad Hortalum, carm. 63, ver. 19, &c.



As a fair apple, by a lover sent  
 'To his mistress for a private compliment,  
 Which tumbles from the modest virgin's lap,  
 Where she had quite forgot it, by mishap ;  
 When, starting as her mother opes the door,  
 And falls out of her garments on the floor !  
 While as it rolls and she betrays surprise,  
 A guilty blush her fair complexion dies.

I say that males and females are cast in the same mould ; and that education and custom excepted, the difference between them is not great. Plato calls upon both sexes indifferently to associate in all the studies, exercises, offices, and professions, military and civil, in his republic. And the philosopher Antisthenes\* says, " The virtue of both is the same." It is much more easy to accuse one sex, than to excuse the other, according to the proverb, which says, " Vice corrects sin."

## CHAPTER V.

### *Of Coaches.*

IT is very easy to make it appear that great authors, when they treat of causes, not only mention those which they judge to be the true causes, but those also which they think are not so ; provided they have any invention or beauty to recommend them. If what they say be ingenious, it is true and useful enough. We cannot be positive what is the chief cause, and, therefore, muster up several to see if it may not accidentally be amongst them :

*Namque unam dicere causam  
 Non satis est, verum plures unde una tamen sit.†*

\* Diog. Laert. in the Life of Antisthenes, lib. vi. sect. 12.

† Lucret. lib. vi. ver. 703.

And thus my muse a store of causes brings ;  
 For here, as in a thousand other things,  
 Though by one single cause th' effect is done,  
 Yet since 'tis had a thousand must be shown  
 That we may surely hit that single one.

Will you ask me whence comes the custom of blessing those who sneeze? We produce wind three several ways; that which sallies from below is filthy; that which is vented by the mouth bears some reproach of gluttony; the third eruption is sneezing, which because it comes from the head, and is without offence, we give it this civil reception. Do not laugh at this crafty distinction; for they say it is Aristotle's. I think I had read in Plutarch (who, of all the authors I know, is he who has best mixed art with nature, and judgment with science), giving for a reason of the rising of the stomach in those who go to sea, that it is occasioned by their fear; he having found out some reason, by which he proves that fear is capable of producing such an effect.† I, who am very much subject to this effect, know very well that it is not owing to this cause; and I know it not by argument, but by unavoidable experience. Without instancing what I have been told, that the same thing often happens to the beasts, especially to swine, when free from any apprehension of danger; and what an acquaintance of mine has told me of himself, that, being very subject to it, his inclination to vomit has gone off two or three times, being terrified to a great degree in a violent storm: as it happened to that ancient, who said, *Pejus verabar quàm ut periculum mihi succurreret*.‡ “I was too much disordered for the apprehension of danger to relieve me.” I never was afraid upon the water; nor, indeed, elsewhere (and have often had just reasons for fear, if death be such a cause), so as to be disturbed and change countenance. Fear

\* In a tract, entitled Natural Causes, chap. 11. *Ἐν τῇ περὶ φυσικῶν αἰτιῶν πραγματείᾳ, κεφάλαιον α'*  
 † Senec. ep. 53.

springs sometimes as well from want of judgment as from want of courage. All the dangers which I have been in I have looked upon, without winking, with a free, solid, and entire countenance; and besides, to be afraid requires courage. It has formerly served me better than other courses, so to conduct and regulate my flight, that it was, if not without fear, yet without terror and astonishment. It was stirred indeed, but without amazement or stupefaction. Great souls go much farther, and represent flights, not only calm and temperate, but, moreover, intrepid. We will mention that which Alcibiades\* relates of Socrates, his companion in arms; "After our army was routed, I found him and Lachez in the very rear of those who fled, and viewed him at my leisure, and in security, for I was mounted on a good horse and he on foot; and thus we had fought. I took notice in the first place with what deliberation and resolution he fought, compared with Lachez, and then the gallantry of his step nothing different from his ordinary gait, his firm and regular countenance, viewing and judging what passed about him, looking one while on those, and another while upon other friends and enemies, after such a manner as encouraged the one, and signified to the other, that he would sell his life dear to any one that offered to take it from him; and so they saved themselves, for such men are not so liable to be attacked as those who run away are to be pursued." That was the testimony of this great commander, which teaches us what we experience every day, that nothing throws us so much into dangers as an inconsiderate eagerness to keep clear of them. *Quo timoris minus est, eo minus ferme periculi est*:† "Where there is the least fear, there is generally the least danger." When a man is ready to declare that he thinks of death, and foresees it,

\* Plato in his Banquet, p. 1206, of the Francfort edit. in 1602.

† Titus Livy, lib. xxii. cap. 5.

our people are in the wrong to say that therefore he is afraid of it. Our foresight of the good or ill that affects us, is equally proper for us. To consider and judge of danger is, in some sort, the reverse of being astonished at it. I do not find myself strong enough to sustain the shock and impetuosity of this passion of fear, or of any other that is vehement. If I was once conquered and beaten down by it, I should never rise again entire. Whoever should once make my soul lose its footing, would never restore it to its right place. It searches, and probes itself too deeply and too much to the quick, and would never suffer the wound it had received to be closed and skinned over. It has been well for me that no sickness has yet dismounted it. Every attack made upon me I oppose with a high hand ; by which means the first that should rout me would put it out of my power ever to rally again. I have no after-game to play. On which side soever the inundation breaks my banks, I lie open, and am drowned without remedy. Epicurus said, that a wise man can never turn fool ; and I have an opinion the reverse of this sentence, that he who has been once an arrant fool will never after be very wise. God gives me cold according to my clothing, and passions proportionable to the strength I have to bear them. Nature, having laid me open on the one side, has covered me on the other. She has disarmed me of strength, but has armed me with insensibility, and an apprehension that is either moderate or dull. I have not for some time (and much less when I was young) been reconciled to a coach, litter, or boat : and hate all other riding but on horseback, both in town and country. But to me a litter is more intolerable than a coach ; and for the same reason I had rather be tossed upon the water, so as to give me fear, than be rocked in a dead calm. By the little jerks I feel from the oars stealing the vessel from under me, I find both my head and stomach disordered I know not how, since I cannot endure that my seat should

tremble. When the sail, or the current of the water, keeps us upright, or when we are in tow, that regular agitation gives me no uneasiness. It is an interrupted motion that offends me, and most of all when it is most languid ; I know not how to express it otherwise. The physicians have ordered me to squeeze and gird the bottom of my belly with a napkin as a remedy ; which, however, I have not tried, being accustomed to struggle with my own infirmities, and to overcome them by myself.

The use of  
coaches in  
battle.

Did my memory serve me, I would not think my time ill spent in setting down here the infinite variety that we find in histories as to the use of chariots in the service of war ; various according to the nations, and according to the ages ; and, in my opinion, of great effect and necessity, insomuch that it is a wonder we have lost all knowledge of them. I will only say this, that very lately, in the time of our fathers, the Hungarians made very advantageous use of them against the Turks ; every one of them having a targeteer and a musketeer, and a number of harquebusiers ready charged, and all covered with a target-fence, like that which defends the rowers in a galley. They set three thousand such chariots in the front of their battle, and, after their cannon had played, made them all pour in their shot upon their enemy, and force them to swallow that discharge, before they tasted of the rest, which was no little advance ; or else they drove the said coaches into their squadrons to break and open a passage through them ; besides the use which they might make of them in a dangerous place to flank the troops marching into the field, or to cover a lodgment speedily, and fortify it. In my time a gentleman, in one of our frontier places, who was unweildly, and could procure no horse able to carry his weight, having a quarrel upon his hands, rode through the country in a chariot of this fashion, and found great convenience in it. But we will leave these military chariots.

The last kings of our first race, as if their effo-

minacy had not been sufficiently manifest by other proofs of it,\* travelled through the country lolling in a chariot drawn by four oxen. Mark Antony† was the first that caused himself to be drawn at Rome by lions harnessed to his coach, in which a singing wench rode with him. Heliogabalus did as much afterwards, calling himself Cybele, the mother of the gods,‡ and was also drawn by tigers, counterfeiting the god Bacchus; he also one while harnessed a brace of stags to his coach, at another time four dogs, and at another four whores, by whom he was drawn in state, both himself and they stark naked. The emperor Firmis caused his coach to be drawn by ostriches of a prodigious size, so that it seemed rather to fly than run upon wheels.§

The use of coaches for luxury.

The strangeness of these inventions puts this other fancy into my head, that it is a kind of pusillanimity in monarchs, and a proof that they are not sufficiently sensible what they are, when they court honour, and affect a grand appearance by excessive expense. It were, indeed, excusable when in a foreign country; but when a prince is among his own subjects, where

Extravagant expenses unbecoming in a prince.

\* Mr. Cotton, by not adverting to a transposition made here by his author, has been deceived in his meaning, and begins the paragraph thus, "As if the insignificancy of coaches had not been sufficiently known by better proofs," &c. This mistake of so able a translator, has obliged me to explain this passage, which is liable to be misunderstood also by many others. I shall only add, that this kind of transposition, in which all the difficulty lies, being very familiar to Montaigne, his translator ought to be well acquainted with it. As every man has his particular gait and tone of voice, so every author has his peculiar style. If a translator duly considers, before-hand, the turn, the manners, and, as one may say, the very steps of his original, he would often understand it by half a word; but if he neglect to make it familiar to him, by contenting himself with a vague understanding of it that is merely grammatical, he will every now and then make the author, whom he translates, speak the very contrary to what he means; and generally, instead of entering into the spirit of his author, will only express his meaning in a very imperfect manner.

† Plutarch, in the *Life of Mark Antony*, chap. 3.

‡ *Ælius Lampridius*, p. 110, 111. *Hist. August.*

§ *Flavii Vopisse Firmus*, p. 244, *Hist. August.*

he may do what he list, it derogates from his dignity, which is the highest degree of honour that he is capable of attaining to. So methinks, it is superfluous in a private gentleman to go finely dressed at home, since his house, his retinue, and his table, answer sufficiently for him. The advice that Isocrates gives to his king seems to be grounded upon reason, viz. that he should be splendid\* in his furniture and utensils, as it is an expense in what is durable, and will pass to his successors; and that he should avoid all sorts of magnificence which soon grow out of fashion, and are forgot. I loved to go fine when I was a younger brother, for want of other ornament, and it became me well. There are some people upon whom fine clothes are an eye-sore. We have admirable stories of the frugality of our kings with respect to their persons and gifts: kings that were great in reputation, merit, and fortune. Demosthenes pleads strenuously against the law of the city that assigned the public money for the pomp of their games and festivals. He would have their grandeur displayed in a number of ships well equipped, and good armies well provided for: and Theophrastus† is justly to be blamed, who, in his book of Riches, has established a contrary opinion, and maintains that an expense of this nature is the true fruit of opulence. These are pleasures, says Aristotle,‡ that only affect the lowest class of the people, that vanish from their remembrance as soon as they are glutted with them, and of which no serious and judicious man can have any esteem.§ Such expense would, in my opinion, be much more royal, as well as more

\* Orat. ad Nicoclem, p. 32, Paris edit. for John Libert, anno 1621.

† The author of this censure was Cic. de Offic. lib. ii. cap. 16, where he says, “Miror quod in mentem venerit Theophrasto, in eo libro quem de divitiis scripsit; in quo multa præclare, illud absurdè. Est enim multus in laudandâ, magnificentiâ, et apparatione popularium munerum; taliumque sumptuum facultatem fructum divitiarum putat.”

‡ All this is also taken from Cic. de Offic. lib. ii. cap. 16.  
§ And this likewise, ibid. cap. 17.

useful, just, and durable, in ports, docks, walls, and fortifications; in sumptuous fabrics, churches, hospitals, colleges, the repair of streets and highways; for which the memory of pope Gregory XIII. will be reverend to late posterity: and wherein our queen Katharine would manifest her natural generosity and magnificence to succeeding ages, if she had it as much in her power, as she has it at heart. Fortune has vexed me much by interrupting the fine structure of the Pont-neuf of our great city, and depriving me of the hopes of ever seeing it finished.

Moreover, the subjects, who are spectators of these triumphs, are apt to think that the riches displayed before them are their own, and that they are entertained at their own cost. For the people are

The people are disgusted with it, and not without reason.

ready to presume of kings as we do of our servants, that they ought to take care to provide us abundantly with all that we want; but that they ought not to finger any part of it themselves. And, therefore, the emperor Galba, being pleased with the performance of a certain musician who played to him at supper, called for his coffer, and gave him a handful of crowns which he took out of it, with these words, "This is not the public money, but my own."

But so it is, that the people are most commonly in the right, and that their eyes are fed with what they had once to feed their bellies.

Liberality itself shines not with its true lustre in a sovereign hand. It best becomes private people; for, to consider the matter nicely, a king has nothing properly his own; and he owes even himself to others. Jurisdiction is not granted in favour of the magistrate, but of the people that become subject to it. A superior is never created such for his own profit, but that of the inferior; and a physician for the sick person, nor for himself. All magistracy, as well as every art or mystery, is designed for external application. *Nulla ars in se versatur*.\* "No art

Whether liberality well becomes a king, and to what degree.

\* Cicero has these words, "Semper illud extrinsecus est quod arte



“ is confined within itself.” Therefore the governors of young princes, who study to imprint this virtue of liberality on their minds, and preach to them to deny nothing, and to reckon nothing so well laid out as what they give (a lesson which I have known to be very much in vogue), either have more regard to their own profit than that of their sovereign, or do not well understand whom they speak to. It is a very easy matter to imprint liberality in the person who has as much as he will to supply it with at the expense of another. And the estimate of it not being formed according to the value of the present, but upon the wealth of the giver, it dwindles to nothing in such able hands. They become prodigal before they are liberal : and yet their liberality is but of small recommendation compared with the other royal virtues ; yet it is the only one, as Dionysius said, that suits well with tyranny itself. I would rather teach him that verse of the ancient husbandman :

Τῇ χειρὶ δεῖ σπείρειν, ἀλλὰ μὴ ὀλω τῷ θυλακῷ.\*

“ That whoever hopes for a good crop, must sow  
“ with his hand, and not pour the seed out of the  
“ bag.” The grain should be scattered, and not  
cast on the ground in heaps ; and that since he is to  
give, or rather pay and make amends to so many  
people, according to their deserts, he ought to dis-  
tribute with justice and deliberation. If the bounty

“ comprehenditur. Nihil opus est exemplis hoc facere longius ; est  
“ enim perspicuum *nullam artem in se versari* sed esse aliud artem  
“ ipsam, aliud quod propositum sit arti.” De Finib. Bon. et Mal.  
lib. v. cap. 6. How happy would be the subjects of Persia, Indos-  
tan, &c. if their princes and ministers had the wisdom and virtue to  
draw from this great principle the conclusion which naturally flows  
from it, and which Montaigne here points out to them ?

\* This maxim Montaigne has quoted from a small tract of Plu-  
tarch, entitled Whether the Athenians were more excellent in  
Arms than in Learning, chap. 4, where Corinna makes use of it to  
convince Pindar that he had in one of his poems inserted too many  
fables.

of a prince be without discretion, and without measure, I had rather he were covetous.

The virtue of royalty seems to consist most in justice; and of all the parts of justice, that best denotes the king, which accompanies his liberality; for this they have particularly reserved to their own province, whereas all other justice they remit to the administration of others. Lavish bounty is a very weak means to acquire them good will; for it disgusts more people than it brings over to them. *Quo in plures usus sis, minus in multos uti possis.—Quid autem est stultius, quàm, quod libenter facias, curare, ut id diutiùs facere non possis?*\* “The more you dispense to some, the less you will be able to dispense to many; and what greater folly can there be than to order it so, that what you are heartily inclined to do, you put it out of your power to perform long?” And if it be conferred without regard to merit, it puts him to the blush who receives it, and is received with an ill grace. Tyrants have been sacrificed to the hatred of the people by the hands of those very men whom they have unjustly advanced; such kind of men thinking to secure to themselves the possession of benefits unduly received, if they discover a contempt and hatred of him from whom they derived them; and in this they join with the common judgment and opinion.

When a prince makes exorbitant grants, his subjects make exorbitant demands, and accommodate themselves not to reason, but example. We have reason, certainly, very often to blush at our own impudence. We are overpaid, according to justice, when the recompense equals our service; for do not we owe something to our prince by natural obligation? If he bears our expense he does too much; it is enough that he contributes to it: the overplus is called a benefit which cannot be demanded, for the very

What is properly the truly royal virtue, and that ought to accompany the bounty of kings.

It is not in the power of a prince to satisfy the cravings of his subjects.

\* Cicero de Offic. lib. ii. cap. 15.

name of liberality sounds of liberty. As we use it there is no end of it. We never reckon what we have received. We are only for that liberality which is to come. For which reason, the more a prince exhausts himself in giving, the poorer he becomes in friends. How should he satisfy those longing appetites, which the more they are fed the more they crave? He whose thoughts are bent upon grasping, never more thinks of what he has grasped. There is nothing so peculiar to covetousness as ingratitude.

Example of  
the libera-  
lity of a  
prince,  
from  
whence  
princes  
may learn  
to bestow  
their gifts  
properly.

The example of Cyrus will not do amiss in this place, to serve the kings of the age as a touchstone to know whether their bounties are well or ill bestowed, and to show them how much better that emperor proportioned them than they do. By this means they are reduced afterwards to borrow of their unknown subjects; and rather of them to whom they have done wrong, than of those to whom they have done good; and so receive aids from them, wherein there is nothing of a free gift but the name. Cræsus reproached him for his largess,\* and cast up how much his treasure would have amounted to if he had been closer fisted. Cyrus longed to justify his liberality, and therefore sent dispatches into all parts to the grandees of his dominions, whom he had particularly advanced, requesting every one of them to assist his necessity with as much money as he could spare, and to send it to him with a note of the sums. When all the bills were brought to him, every one of friends, not thinking it enough to offer him only so much as he had received from his bounty, and adding to it a great deal of his own,† it happened that this sum amounted to much more than if he had been as frugal as Cræsus would have had him: whereupon Cyrus said,‡ “ I am as much

\* In Xenophon's *Cyropædia*, lib. viii. sect. 9.

† Idem, *ibid.* sect. 10. Δέγεται δὲ λοχίζομενος ὁ Κροῖσος πολλὰ πλάσιμα  
ἀνέχεσθαι, ἢ ἢ φησὶ Κυρου ἀνέειναι ἐν τοῖς ἀριστοῦσι ἡδὴ, εἰ συνέλεγον.

‡ Idem, *ibid.* sect. 11.

“ in love with riches as other princes, but rather a better manager. You see with what a small deposit I have gained the inestimable treasure of so many friends, and how much more faithful treasures they are to me than mercenary men would be without obligation, without affection ; and that my cash is better lodged than in chests, which would bring upon me the hatred, envy, and contempt of other princes.”

The emperors alleged the dependency of their authority in some measure (at least in appearance) on the good will of the Roman people, as an excuse for the superfluity of their plays and public spectacles ; they having been accustomed at all times to be humoured with such extravagant shows and entertainments. But they were private men who had brought up this custom to gratify their fellow-citizens and companions by such profusion and magnificence, chiefly at their own expense ; the custom had quite another taste when it came to be kept up by the sovereigns. *Pecuniarum translatio a justis dominis ad alienos non debet liberalis videri* :\* “ The transferring of money from the right owners to others ought not to be deemed liberality.”

Philip, perceiving that his son went about to gain the affection of the Macedonians by presents, reprimanded him in a letter, after this manner, viz. “ What could mislead you to think that those will be faithful to you whom thou hast bribed with money ? Have you a mind that the Macedonians should look upon you not as a sovereign, but as their cash-keeper and corrupter ? If you would practise upon them, do it by the good deeds of virtue, and not by bounty from thy coffers.”†

It was, however, a fine thing to bring to the theatre, and therein plant a great number of large trees, with all their branches in full verdure, representing a great shady forest, beautifully disposed in

The expenses of the emperors at the public spectacles, why not justifiable.

Alexander reproved by his father for endeavouring to gain the affection of the Macedonians by presents.

A digression touching the magnificence of the spec-

\* Cicero de Offic. lib. i. cap. 14.

† Idem, lib. ii. cap. 15.

tales with  
which the  
Roman em-  
perors en-  
tertained  
the people.

just symmetry ; and, on the first day, to throw into it a thousand ostriches, a thousand stags, a thousand boars, and as many fallow-deer, and abandon them to the prey of the people ; and the next day to cause a hundred great lions, as many leopards, and three hundred bears to be knocked on the head in his presence ; and, on the third day, to make three hundred couple of gladiators fight in earnest ; all which was done by the emperor Probus. It was also very fine to see those vast amphitheatres cased with marble, curiously set off with figures and statues, and the inside shining with rare decorations :

*Baltheus en gemmis, en illita porticus auro.\**

Behold a belt, with jewels glorious made,  
And a brave portico with gold o'erlaid.

All the sides of this great space filled and environed,  
from the bottom to the top, with sixty or eighty  
rows of seats, all of marble also, and covered with  
cushions :

*Exeat, inquit,  
Si pudor est, et de pulvino surgat equestri,  
Cujus res legi non sufficit.†*

They who by law can't make a title fit,  
Let such, for shame, th' equestrian cushion quit.

where an hundred thousand spectators might sit at  
their ease ; and to make the stage, where the plays  
were performed, first open by art, and to cleave into  
chasms representing dens, from which issued out  
the beasts designed for the spectacle ; and then,

\* I know not what is strictly to be understood here by the word *baltheus*. In the amphitheatres this term was applied to certain steps that were higher and wider than the others, as may be seen in the Antiquities of Father Montfaucon, tom. iii. part ii. p. 256. Father Tachart, in his Latin and French Dictionary, says, that the word is used by Vitruvius to denote a belt or girdle round the bottom and top of a column. Whether jewels would make a better figure there than on Montfaucon's steps, I leave to the determination of the connoisseurs.

† Calphurnius, eclog. 7, entitled *Templum*.

‡ Juv. sat. iii. ver. 153.

secondly, to bring a deluge of water upon the stage, carrying sea-monsters, and ships of force to represent a sea-fight; and, thirdly, to drain and dry the stage again for the combat of the gladiators; and, for the fourth scene, to have the stage strewed with vermilion and storax, instead of sand, there to make a solemn feast for all that vast multitude of people; which is the last act of one day only: .

————— *Quoties nos descenditis arenæ  
Vidimus in partes, ruptæque voragine terræ  
Emersisse feras, et iisdem sæpe latebris  
Aurea cum croceo creverunt urbuta libro.  
Nec solum nobis silvestria cernere monstra  
Contigit, æquoreos ego cum certantibus ursis  
Spectavi vitulos, et equorum nomine dignum,  
Sed deforme pecus.\**

How often, when spectators, have we seen  
Part of the spacious theatre sink in,  
And, from a sudden chasm in the earth,  
Start up wild beasts: then presently give birth  
Unto a shining grove of golden bow'rs,  
Of shrubs that blossom'd with enamell'd flow'rs?  
Nor yet of sylvan monsters had we sight  
Alone; I saw sea-calves with wild bears fight;  
And a deformed sort of cattle came,  
Which river or sea-horses we might name.

Sometimes they have made a high mountain rise full of fruit-trees, and others of verdure; from the tops of which trickled down a current of water, as from the mouth of a fountain. One while a great ship came rolling in, which opened and divided of itself; and after having disgorged from its hold four or five hundred beasts for fight, closed again, and disappeared of itself. At other times, from the bottom of this stage, they caused sweet-scented waters to spout upwards, and dart their threads to such a prodigious height as to sprinkle and perfume the vast multitude of spectators. Then, to defend themselves from the wind, rain, or heat, they had that

\* Calphurn. eclog. 7, ver. 64 to 72.

huge fabric covered over with purple curtains of needle-work, or of silk of various colours, which they could either draw or undraw as they pleased :

*Quamvis non modico caleant spectacula sole  
Vela reducuntur cum venit Hermogenes.\**

The curtains, though the sun does scorch the skin,  
Are, when Hermogenes † appears, drawn in.

The net-work also, that was set before the people to defend them from the fury of those wild beasts, was of gold-tissue :

— *Auro quoque torta refulgent  
Retia.†*

And woven nets refulgent are with gold.

If there be any thing excusable in extravagances of this kind, it is where the invention and novelty furnish admiration, and not the expense. In the same vanities we discover how fruitful those ages were in wits of a different kind from ours. It fares with this sort of fertility as it does with all other productions of nature. Not that she therein employed her utmost effort at that time. We do not travel, we rather roam up and down, and whirl this way and that ; and tread the same ground over again. I am afraid our knowledge is weak in every respect. We do not look far, and scarce at all behind us. Our understanding comprehends little, and exists but a little while, it being short, not only in extent of time, but of matter :

*Vixere fortes ante Agamemnona  
Multi, sed omnes illacrymabiles  
Urgentur, ignotique longâ  
Nocte.§*

\* Martial, lib. xii. ver. 15, 16.

† This Hermogenes was an arrant thief, and they took down the curtains for fear he should find some means or other to steal them away.

‡ Calphurnius, eclog. 8, entitled Templum, ver. 53.

§ Horace, lib. iv. ode 9, ver. 25, &c.

Before great Agamemnon reign'd,  
 Reign'd kings as great as he, and brave ;  
 Whose huge ambition's now contain'd  
 In the small compass of a grave :  
 In endless night they sleep, unwept, unknown.

*Et supera bellum Thebanum et funera Trojæ,\**  
*Multi alias alii quoque res cecinere poetæ.†*  
 And long before the wars of Thebes and Troy,  
 On other things bards did their song employ.

Solon's account of what he had learned from the Egyptian priests, of the long duration of their state, and of their way of learning and preserving foreign histories, is not, methinks, a testimony to be slighted upon this consideration. *Si interminatam in omnes partem magnitudinem regionum videremus et temporum,‡ in quam se injiciens animus et entendens, ita late longeque peregrinatur, ut nullam oram ultimi videat, in qua possit insistere : in hac immensitate—infinita vis innumerabilium, appareret formarum.§* “ Could we see that boundless extent of countries “ and ages, in all their parts, on which the mind, “ being fixed and intent, might ramble where and “ when it list, without meeting with any limits to “ its sight, we would discover innumerable forms in “ that immensity.” Though all that is arrived to our knowledge of the time past should be true, and known by any one person, it would be less than nothing compared with what is unknown. And of

\* Montaigne diverts himself here in giving Lucretius's words in this distich, a construction directly contrary to what they bear in that poem.

† Lucret. lib. v. ver. 327, &c.

‡ Here also Montaigne puts a sense quite different from what the words bear in the original ; but the application he makes of them is so happy that one would declare they were actually put together only to express his own sentiment. “ Et temporum ” is an addition by Montaigne, and, instead of “ infinita vis innumerabilium, appareret formarum,” it is in Cicero “ infinita vis innumerabilium volitat atomorum.” These two last are sufficient to show that Cicero treats of quite another thing than what Montaigne does here.

§ Cic. de Natura Deorum, lib. i. cap. 20.



this very image of the world, which glides away while we are in it, how scanty and contracted is the knowledge of the most curious inquirers? Not only of particular events, which fortune often renders exemplary and important, but of the state of great governments and nations, not above a hundredth part has reached our knowledge. We make a parade of the wonderful invention of our great guns, and of our printing, which other men, at the other end of the world, in China, enjoyed a thousand years before us. Did we but see as much of the world as we do not see, it is probable we would perceive a perpetual multiplication and vicissitude of forms. There is nothing single and rare in respect to nature, nor, indeed, with regard to our knowledge, which is a wretched foundation for our rules, and fondly presents us with a very false image of things. As we, now-a-days, vainly infer the world to be in a state of declension and decrepitude by the arguments we draw from our own weakness and decay :

*Jamque adeò affecta est ætas, effectaque tellus.\**

So much the age, so much the earth decays.

In like manner did he, of old, vainly conjecture the birth and youth of the world, by the vigour he observed in the wits of his time abounding in novelties, and the invention of divers arts :

*Verùm, ut opinor, habet novitatem summa, recensque  
Natura est mundi, neque primum exordia cæpit :  
Quare etiam quædam nunc artes expoliuntur,  
Nunc etiam augescunt, nunc addita navigiis sunt  
Multa.†*

But sure the nature of the world is strong,  
And, since it first began, it can't be long ;  
The reason, why I think so, is, we know  
That arts increase, and still politer grow ;  
And many things, from former times conceal'd,  
Are by extensive commerce new reveal'd.

\* *Lucret.* lib. ii. ver. 1150.

† *Idem*, lib. v. ver. 331, &c.

This world of ours has lately found out another (and who will assure us that this is the last that will be discovered, since the Demons, the Sibyls, and we too were, till now, quite ignorant of it), altogether as big, populous, and fruitful as this ; and yet such a novice, so much a child, that it still learns its A, B, C. It is not fifty years ago that it knew neither letters, weights, measures, vestments, corn, nor vines. It was even quite naked in its mother's lap, and only lived upon what she nursed it with. If we rightly judge of our period, and this poet also, of the youth of the age he lived in, this other world will be but just entering into light when ours shall make its exit. The universe will be paralytic ; one member will be benumbed, another in vigour. I fear, indeed, that we shall have very much hastened the decay and ruin of the new world by our infection, and that it will pay very dear for our opinions, and our arts. It was an infant world ; yet we have not whipped, nor subjected it to our discipline by our valour and natural strength ; we have neither won the people by our justice and goodness, nor subdued them by our magnanimity. Most of their answers, and the negotiations we have had with them, prove that they were not inferior to us in the clearness of natural understanding and apprehension. The astonishing magnificence of the cities of Cusco and Mexico, and, among many things of the like kind, the garden of that king, wherein all trees, fruits, and herbs, according to the order and size they are of in a garden, were curiously figured in gold ; as were in his closet all the animals bred in his dominions and the sea ; and the beauty of their manufactures in jewels, feathers, cotton, and painting, show that they likewise did not yield to us in industry. But as for devotion, observance of the laws, goodness, liberality, loyalty, and plain dealing, it was of service to us that we had not so great a share of those virtues as they. For, by this advantage, they ruined, sold, and betrayed themselves.

Of the new world, and the genius of its inhabitants when it was first discovered.

The Spaniards subdued the Americans by craft and surprise, rather than by valour.

As to boldness and courage, steadiness, constancy, and a resolution to bear pains, hunger, and even death, I would not fear to set the examples I find among them in comparison with the most noted instances in antiquity that are to be met with in the memoirs of our side of the globe. For as those who have subdued them, take away but the tricks and frauds which they made use of to gull them, and the just cause which those nations had of astonishment to see so sudden and unexpected an arrival of men with beards, differing in language, religion, form, and countenance, from so remote a part of the world, which they never heard was at all inhabited, mounted on great monsters to them unknown, against such as had not so much as ever seen a horse before, or any other beast trained up to carry a man or any other burden; to see those men cased with a shining, impenetrable shell, and armed with a cutting and glittering blade, brandishing it against those who, out of wonder at the brightness of a looking-glass or a knife, would truck great wealth in gold and pearls for them; and who had neither the skill nor matter wherewith to penetrate our steel, if they had ever so much time: add to this the thunder and lightning of our cannon and muskets, enough to have frightened Cæsar himself had he been surprised when so unexperienced, and now against a naked people, except where they had the apparel of quilted cotton, without other arms, at the most, but bows, stones, staves, and bucklers of wood: a people over-reached, under the colour of friendship and good faith, by a curiosity of seeing things strange and unknown: take away, I say, this disparity from the conquerors, and you take away from them all the source of so many victories. When I consider that invincible ardour wherewith so many thousands of men, women, and children so often presented and threw themselves into unavoidable dangers, for defence of their gods and their liberties; that generous obstinacy to suffer all extremities and difficulties, and even death, rather

than submit to the government of those by whom they were so shamefully abused ; and some choosing to die of hunger, and to starve themselves to death, after being made prisoners, rather than to accept of nourishment from the hands of their enemies so basely victorious : I foresee, that whoever should have attacked them, supposing an equality of arms, experience, and numbers, would have had a dangerous, if not a more desperate task to manage than in any other war we have seen. What pity it is that so noble a conquest did not fall to Alexander, or to those ancient Greeks and Romans ; and that so great a revolution and change of so many empires and nations had not been effected by hands that might have used them courteously, and refined them by grubbing up what was savage amongst them, cherishing, and propagating the good seed which nature had produced there ; and by not only mingling in the culture of their lands, and the ornament of their cities, the arts of this part of the world, but incorporating the virtues of the Greeks and Romans with those that were originals of their country ! What a reparation, and what an amendment would it have been to the whole world, had our first examples and deportment in those parts allured the people to the admiration and imitation of virtue, and formed a fraternal society and understanding between them and us ! How easy would it have been to have made advantage of minds so undisciplined and so thirsty for knowledge, and such as, for the greatest part, had good natural parts to work upon.

On the contrary, we have taken advantage of their ignorance and inexperience, with the greater ease to incline them to treachery, luxury, avarice, and to all sorts of inhumanity and cruelty, by the example and pattern of our manners. Was paltry traffic ever promoted at so dear a rate ? So many cities demolished, so many nations exterminated, so many millions of people put to the sword ; and the richest and most beautiful part of the world turned up-side

The Americans would have been happy if they had fallen into the hands of conquerors more humane and polite.

With what barbarity they were treated by the Spaniards.

down for the traffic of pearls and pepper! Mean victories! Never did ambition, never did national animosities provoke men to the commission of such horrid hostilities against one another, attended with such miserable calamities.

The answer  
of some A-  
mericans to  
those exe-  
crable rob-  
bers.

Certain Spaniards, coasting along the sea in quest of their mines, landed in a very fruitful, pleasant country, well inhabited, where they made their usual remonstrances to the people: "That they were  
" peaceable men, who had made a long voyage,  
" being sent on the part of the king of Castile, the  
" greatest prince in the habitable world, to whom  
" the pope, God's vicegerent upon earth, had grant-  
" ed the principality of all the Indies: that if they  
" would become tributaries to him they should be  
" used very courteously; at the same time requiring  
" provisions of them for their nourishment, and  
" gold for their use in medicine: they also recom-  
" mended to them the belief of one God alone, and  
" the truth of our religion, which they advised them  
" to embrace, adding thereto some menaces." The  
answer was this, viz. "That as to their being peace-  
" able, they did not seem to be such, if they were  
" so. As to their king, because he asked, he must  
" certainly be poor and necessitous; and the person  
" who had allotted him this part of the world must  
" be a man fond of strife, by attempting to give  
" away that which was not his own, and to bring the  
" title of the ancient possessors into dispute. As to  
" provisions, they would furnish them; that of gold  
" they had but little, and, indeed, made no account  
" of it, forasmuch as it was of no use to the service  
" of life, which all their care was to pass happily and  
" pleasantly; that, however, they were welcome to  
" take what they could find, except that which was  
" employed in the service of their gods. As to the  
" one God only, they liked what they said of him,  
" but they were not inclined to change their reli-  
" gion, having so long lived in it to their advantage;  
" and that they were not accustomed to take advice

“ from any but their friends and acquaintance. As  
 “ to menaces, it discovered a wrong judgment to  
 “ offer to threaten those whose nature and power  
 “ was to them unknown : that, therefore, they had  
 “ best quit their coast without delay, for they were  
 “ not used to take the civilities and remonstrances  
 “ of armed men, and foreigners too, in good part ;  
 “ otherwise they should do by them as they had  
 “ done by those others ;” showing them, at the same  
 time, the heads of several men executed, which  
 were set up round the walls of their city. Whe-  
 ther this was childish babble, from an infant state,  
 let the instance here given determine. But so it is,  
 that the Spaniards, neither in this, nor many other  
 places, where they did not find the merchandise they  
 wanted, made no seizure nor attack, whatever other  
 commodity was to be had there : witness my can-  
 nibals.

Of two of the most potent monarchs of that world, The Spaniards' inhuman usage of the king of Peru, after they had made him prisoner of war.  
 and, perhaps, of this ; kings of so many kings, and  
 the last the Spaniards drove from thence, the king  
 of Peru being taken in battle, and put to a ransom  
 so excessive as is beyond all belief ; which, however,  
 was punctually paid ; and having, by his conversa-  
 tion, given evident proof of a frank, generous, and  
 constant spirit, and of a clear and undisturbed ima-  
 gination, the conquerors, after having exacted of  
 him a million, three hundred twenty-five thousand,  
 five hundred weight of gold, besides silver, and other  
 things that amounted to no less (insomuch that their  
 horses were now shod with solid gold), had a mind  
 to see (how perfidious soever it might be deemed)  
 what might be the rest of this king's treasure, and  
 to make that also their property. To this end, a  
 false charge was preferred against him, and false evi-  
 dence suborned to prove that he had formed a design  
 to raise an insurrection in his provinces for recovering  
 his liberty. Upon this, by the virtuous sentence of  
 the very men who had hatched this plot against him,  
 he was condemned to be hanged in public, making

him compound for the torture of being burned alive, by submitting to baptism, at the place of execution. A horrid and unheard-of barbarity, which he underwent, however, with an air truly brave and royal, without alteration either of his looks or language. And after this, to appease the people, who were astonished and confounded at so strange a scene, the Spaniards put on a show of deep mourning for his death, and ordered him a sumptuous funeral.

Their execrable cruelty to the king of Mexico, who had also the misfortune to fall into their hands.

The other was the king of Mexico, who, after having been long besieged in his capital city, wherein, if ever a prince and people showed it in this world, he discovered the utmost that patience and perseverance are capable of doing, had the misfortune of being delivered up alive into the hands of his enemies, upon articles of being treated as a king (neither, during the time of his imprisonment, was any part of his behaviour unworthy of that title); but his enemies, after their conquest, not finding so much gold as they expected, when they had ransacked and rummaged every place, they proceeded to extort new discoveries, by inflicting the most hellish torments they could invent upon the prisoners whom they had taken; but, as they gained no advantage by it, their courage being greater than their tortures, they were at last so enraged that, contrary to their faith, and contrary to the law of nations, they condemned the king himself, and one of the chief courtiers, to be put upon the rack in the presence of one another. The nobleman, finding his spirits near spent with the pains and the heat of burning coals all round him, pitifully turned his dying eyes upon his master, as if it were to ask his pardon that he could hold out no longer. The king, darting a fierce and severe look at him, as reproaching his cowardice and meanness of spirit, said only these words to him with a harsh and steady voice, "And what dost thou think of me, that I am in a bagnio? Am I more at ease than thyself?" Upon this the courtier suddenly sunk under his pains, and died on the spot. The

king, being half roasted, was carried from thence, not so much out of pity (for what compassion could ever reach souls so barbarous that, for giving a dubious information of some vessel of gold to be pillaged, they caused not a private man only, but a king, so great both in fortune and merit, to be broiled before their eyes), but it was because his constancy rendered their cruelty still the more shameful. They afterwards hanged him for having had the courage to attempt to set himself free by force of arms from so long a state of captivity and subjection; and he made his exit in a manner becoming so magnanimous a prince.

At another time they burned alive, in one and the same fire, four hundred and sixty men, viz. four hundred of the common people, and sixty of the chief lords of a province, whom they had taken prisoners of war. These narratives we have from themselves; for they do not only confess the facts, but boast of, and justify them: could it be to prove their justice, or their zeal for their religion? Certainly, these are methods too different from, and contrary to so holy an end. Had it been their view to extend our religion, they would have considered that it is not propagated by the possession of territories, but of hearts; and would have thought the blood spilled by the necessities of war too much, without increasing the effusion by a slaughter, like that of wild beasts, as universal as fire and sword could make it, having only chose to save as many as they intended to make wretched slaves of, to the work and service of their mines: so that many of the Spanish generals were put to death on the place of conquest, by order of the kings of Castile, justly offended with the horror of their behaviour; and they were almost all of them hated and despised. God justly permitted that all this great plunder should be swallowed up by the sea in its transportation, or by the civil wars, in which they devoured one another; and the greatest part of

The horrid  
butchery  
which the  
Spaniards  
committed  
in America  
on their  
prisoners  
of war.



them was buried on the spot, without gaining any fruit of their victory.

The treasure of the Americans not so considerable as was believed at first.

As for the revenue, and what was in the treasury of a provident and prudent king, the reason why it was so far short of the hopes those who came before had conceived, and of that abundance of riches which the Spaniards found at their first arrival in this new world (for, though a great deal was fetched from thence, we find it nothing in comparison of what might be expected), was because the use of money was entirely unknown there; and that, by consequence, their gold was all a dead stock, being of no other use but for ornament and ostentation, as so much furniture reserved from father to son by many powerful kings, who continually exhausted their mines to form this heap of vessels and statues for the ornament of their palaces and temples; whereas our gold is all in circulation and traffic. We cut ours into a thousand-bits, cast it into as many forms, and scatter and disperse it a thousand ways. Let us only suppose that our kings had, in like manner amassed all the gold they could collect in several ages, and have let it lain idle by them.

The Mexicans made the world to consist of five ages, and thought themselves to be in the last when the Spaniards came to extirpate them.

The people of the kingdom of Mexico were somewhat more civilised, and greater artists than the other nations in that part of the world. They judged also, as we do, that the universe was near its period; and they looked upon the desolation we brought amongst them as a sign of it. They believed the duration of the world to be divided into five ages, under five successive suns, four of which had already finished their career, and what now gave them light was the fifth. The first sun perished, say they, with all other creatures, by an universal deluge. The second by the fall of the firmament upon us, which suffocated every thing living? and in this age they place the giants, whose bones they showed to the Spaniards; according to the proportion of which the stature of men amounted to twenty hands high. The

third sun they say was annihilated by fire, which burned and consumed every thing. The fourth by a commotion of air and wind, which even threw down several mountains : at which time men did not die, but were transformed into baboons. What impressions will not the laziness of human credulity admit ! After the extinction of this fourth sun, the world, say they, lay twenty-five years in continual darkness ; in the fifteenth year of which were created a man and a woman, who renewed the human race. Upon a certain day, ten years after this, the sun appeared newly created, and from this day begins their computation of years. The third day after it was created, the ancient gods died, and new ones have been born every day since. After what manner they think this last sun will perish my author has not learned. But their calculation of this fourth change agrees with the great conjunction of the planets, which, eight hundred and odd years ago, as the astrologers compute, produced many great alterations and innovations in the world.

As to pomp and magnificence, neither Greece, Rome, nor Egypt, can, either for utility, difficulty, or grandeur, compare any of their works with the road made in Peru, by the kings of that country, from the city of Quito to that of Cusco (three hundred leagues in length), it being straight, even, twenty-five paces in breadth, paved, and inclosed on both sides with noble high walls ; along the innermost of which two brooks are continually running, with beautiful trees, named Moly, on their banks. In this work, where they met with rocks and mountains, they cut through and levelled them, and filled up the chasms with stone and lime. At the end of every day's journey there are fine palaces, furnished with provisions, clothes, and arms, as well for travellers as for soldiers that pass that way. In my estimation of this work, I have computed the difficulty, which is particularly considerable in that place. They did not build with any stones less than such as were ten

The magnificent works in Peru, superior to those of Greece, Rome, and Egypt.

foot square, which they had no other way to transport but by dragging them along by the strength of their arms ; nor did they know so much as the art of scaffolding, nor had they any other way to go to work but to raise the ground with the building, taking away the earth when the whole was erected.

The last king of Peru carried in a chair of gold to the midst of the field of battle.

We return now to our coaches. Instead of these or any other vehicles, they were carried upon men's shoulders. The last king of Peru, on the day that he was taken, was thus carried upon poles or staves of gold, and sitting in a chair of gold, to the middle of the field of battle. As fast as these chairmen were killed in the attempt to dismount him (for they were determined to take him alive) others strove to supply their room ; so that they could never get him down, what slaughter soever they made of those chairmen, till he was seized and pulled to the ground by a man on horseback.

## CHAPTER VI.

### *Of the Inconvenience of Greatness.*

He who knows what greatness is, may avoid it without much trouble.

SINCE we cannot attain to it, let us take our revenge by railing at it: yet to find fault with a thing is not absolutely railing at it, there being some faults in all things how beautiful and desirable soever. In general, greatness has this evident advantage, that it lets itself down at pleasure, and has almost the choice of either condition. For a man does not fall from all heights, but may come down from the greatest part of them without falling. Indeed, it seems to me that we value it at too high a rate, and that we also overvalue the resolution of those whom we have either seen or heard to have contemned it, or let themselves down from it of their own accord. Its essence is not so manifestly commodious but it

may be refused without a miracle. I find it a very hard thing to bear misfortunes ; but to be content with a moderate fortune, and to avoid greatness, is a thing, in my opinion, of very little trouble. This is a virtue, methinks, to which I, who am no conjurer, could arrive at without much struggle. What then ought they to do who would even put into the balance the glory attending this refusal, wherein there may be more ambition lurking than even in the desire and enjoyment of greatness? Forasmuch as ambition never conducts itself better, according to its own manner, than by a path which is unfrequented, and out of the road.

I spur up my courage to patience ; but slacken its rein towards desire. I have as much to wish for as another, and allow my wishes as much liberty and indiscretion ; but yet it never was my lot to wish for either empire or royalty, nor for the eminency of those high and commanding fortunes. I do not aim that way. I love myself too well. When I think of growing greater, it is but very moderately, and by a constrained and timorous increase, such as is proper for me, in resolution, in prudence, in health, beauty, and even in wealth. But that reputation, and that so mighty authority oppress my imagination. And, quite contrary to some others, I would, perhaps, rather choose to be the second or third man in Perigord than the first in Paris ; at least, without lying, be the third than the first officer in Paris. I would neither dispute with a porter at the gate, a wretch whom I knew not, nor make crowds open to adore me as I pass. I have been trained up to a middle rank in life, as well by my inclination as my fortune ; and have made it appear, by the whole course of my behaviour and undertakings, that I have rather avoided than otherwise to climb above the degree of fortune to which I was born. Every natural constitution is equally just and easy. I have, therefore, so mean a spirit that I measure not good fortune by its height, but by its easy attainment.

Montaigne  
was never  
ambitious  
of very  
high pre-  
ferment.

His preference of a quiet life to that of Regulus, who was so admirable for his fortitude in the greatest perils.

But if I have not a heart great enough, I am made amends by an open heart, which enjoins me boldly to proclaim its weakness. Were I desired to compare the life of L. Thorius Balbus, a fine gentleman, learned, healthy; a man of an excellent understanding, and abounding in all manner of conveniences and pleasures, leading a tranquil life, and all after his own way, with a soul duly prepared to meet death, and fortified against superstition, pain, and other incumbrances of human necessity, dying at last in battle with his sword drawn for the defence of his country: should I compare his with the life of M. Regulus, so grand and sublime as every one knows it was, together with his admirable exit; the one without name, without dignity, the other exemplary and wonderfully glorious, I would doubtless say as Cicero did,\* could I speak as well as he. But, were I to set them together in my own phrase, I would say also that the life of the former is as much within my capacity and within my desire, which I make conformable to my capacity, as the latter is beyond it; that I could not approach the last without veneration, but to the first I would readily attain by habit.

He loved not to command nor be commanded.

Return we now to our temporal greatness, from which we have digressed. I neither like to command nor be commanded. Otanez, one of the seven who had a right to lay claim to the kingdom of Persia, did, as I would readily have done myself, i. e. he gave up to his competitors† his right of attaining to it, either by election or by lot, provided that

\* Cicero, from whom Montaigne has taken this parallel, plainly gives the preference to Regulus. Thorius, he says, wallowed in pleasures of every kind, and was a contemner of the sacrifices and temples of his country: that he was a handsome man, perfectly healthy, and so valiant that he died in battle for the cause of the republic; inasmuch, adds Cicero, that I dare not name the man who was preferable to him; but virtue shall speak for me, who will not hesitate a moment to give M. Regulus the preference, and to proclaim him the more happy man. De Finib. Bon. et Mal. lib. ii. cap. 20.

† Herodot. lib. iii. p. 222, 223.

he and his might live in the empire free of all subjection and obedience, that to the ancient laws excepted; and that they might enjoy all liberty that was not to the prejudice thereof, he having as great an aversion to command as to obey.

The most painful and difficult employment in the world is, in my opinion, worthily to discharge the office of a king. I excuse more of their failings than men commonly do, in consideration of the vast weight of their function, which really astonishes me. It is difficult for such boundless power to preserve any decorum. Yet so it is that, even to those who are not of the most happy disposition, it is a singular incitement to virtue to be stationed in such a place, where whatever good you do is recorded, and placed to account, where the least benefaction extends to so many men, and where your talent, like that of preachers, chiefly addresses itself to the people, who are not very nice judges, easily deceived and easily satisfied. There are few things wherein we can give a sincere judgment, because there are few wherein we have not in some sort a particular interest. Superiority and inferiority, command and subjection, are naturally liable to envy and cavil, and must necessarily be continually encroaching upon one another. I believe neither the one nor the other touching its respective rights; let reason, therefore, which is the inflexible and dispassionate, when we can find it, determine the case. It is scarce a month ago that I turned over two Scotch authors who contended with each other upon this point. He who takes the part of the people renders the condition of a king worse than that of a carter; and the writer for the monarch lifts him up some degrees above almighty God in sovereignty and power.

Now the inconvenience of greatness, which I have here taken upon me to consider upon some occasion that lately put it into my head, is this: there is not, perhaps, any thing more pleasant in men's dealings with one another than their competitions and

Kings the more excusable because their office is one of the most difficult.

Great men are excluded from the exercises of honour and valour.

contentions, through an emulation of honour and valour, either in the exercises of the body or of the mind, wherein sovereign greatness has no real share. Indeed I have often thought, that, out of pure respect, men have used princes injuriously and disdainfully in that particular. For the very thing I was vehemently disgusted at, when a lad, was to see, that those who performed their exercises with me forbore to do their best, as if they thought me unworthy of such effort; and this is what we see happen to them daily, every one thinking himself unworthy to contend with them. If we discover that they have the least passion to get the better, there is not a man that will not make it his business to give them the victory, and that will not choose to betray his own honour rather than offend theirs. They employ no more force in it than is necessary to contribute to their honour. What share then have they in an engagement wherein every one is of their side? Methinks I see those paladins of the ancient times presenting themselves to the justs and tournaments, with their bodies and armour enchanted. Brisson,\* running against Alexander, purposely committed a fault in his career, for which Alexander chid him; but he ought to have whipped him. Upon this account Carneades said, "That the sons of princes learned nothing right but how to ride the managed horse, by reason that in all other exercises every one bends and yields to them; but a horse, being neither a flatterer nor a courtier, makes no more scruple to fling the son of a king than the brat of a porter."† Homer was forced to consent that Venus, so perfect,

\* Plutarch, in his Treatise, How a Flatterer may be distinguished from a Friend, where this man, who suffered Alexander to conquer him, is called Crisson instead of Brisson, as it is spelled in all the editions of Montaigne that I have met with. Indeed, in Plutarch's Tract, entitled Of the Satisfaction or Tranquillity of the Mind, it is spelled *Βρίσσων*, in the Paris edit. fol. 300p-1624. But it is an error of the press, because in the Latin version, which accompanies it, Alexander has put Crison.

† Plutarch, *ibid.* chap. 15.

soft, and delicate a beauty, should be wounded at the battle of Troy, for the sake of ascribing courage and boldness to her, qualities never known in those who are exempt from danger. The gods are made to be angry, to fear, to run away, to be jealous, to grieve, and to be transported with passion, to honour them with the virtues that amongst us are composed of those imperfections. He that does not participate in the hazard and difficulty, cannot pretend to an interest in the honour and pleasure that attend hazardous actions. It is pity you should have such a power that all things give way to you. Your fortune throws society and good fellowship too far from you, and plants you in too great a solitude. That easiness, that mean facility of making all things stoop to you, is an enemy to all manner of pleasure. It is sliding, not going; it is sleeping, not living. Conceive a man accompanied with omnipotence, you plunge him in an abyss, and put him under a necessity of begging molestation and opposition from you as an alms. His being and his welfare are in a state of indigence. The good qualities of kings are dead and lost, for these are only to be perceived by comparison, and we put them out of the way of it. Their ears are so tingled with a continual uniform approbation, that they have scarce any knowledge of true praise. Have they to do with the greatest fool of all their subjects? They have no way to take advantage of him : by his saying, " It is because he is my king," he thinks he has said enough to imply that he therefore suffered himself to be overcome. This quality stifles and confuses the other true and essential qualities, which are sunk deep in the kingship, and leaves them nothing to set themselves off but actions that are actually contiguous and subservient to royalty, viz. the functions of their office. It is so much to be a king, that he is only so by that very denomination. This strange lustre that surrounds him, conceals him, and robs us of the view of him. Our



sight is thereby repelled and dissipated, being engrossed and dazzled by this glaring splendor. The senate awarded the prize of eloquence to Tiberius, but he refused it, as thinking that, though the award had been ever so just, he could not have a true relish of it from a judgment so restrained.

How the  
faults of  
kings are  
hid from  
their eyes.

As we yield them all the advantages of honour, so do we sooth and give a sanction to their very defects and vices, not only by approbation, but even by imitation. Every one of Alexander's attendants carried their heads on one side as he did; and the flatterers\* of Dionysius ran foul of one another in his presence, stumbled at, and kicked up every thing in their way, to denote that they were as purblind as he. Even ruptures have sometimes been a recommendation to favour. I have actually seen deafness affected; and, where the sovereign hated his wife, Plutarch observed that the courtiers actually divorced theirs, whom they loved.† And, what is yet more, uncleanness, and all manner of dissolution, disloyalty, blasphemy, cruelty, heresy, superstition, irreligion, effeminacy, and worse crimes, if worse there can be, have at times been the reigning fashion; and by an example yet more pernicious than that of the flatterers of Mithridates,‡ who, because their sovereign pretended to the honour of being a good physician, came to him to have incisions and caustics applied to their bodies; for those others suffered their souls, a more noble and delicate part, to be cauterised. But, to conclude the subject I began with, Adrian, the emperor, disputing with the philosopher Favorinus about the mean-

\* Plutarch, Of the Difference between the Flatterer and the Friend.

† Plutarch only says, that he knew a man who, because his friend divorced his wife, turned away his wife also, whom, nevertheless, he went to visit, and sent for sometimes privately to his house, which was discovered by the very wife of his friend. Plutarch, Of the Difference between the Flatterer and the Friend, chap. 8 of Amyot's translation.

‡ Plutarch, *ibid*, chap. 13.

ing of a word, Favorinus soon yielded him the point; for which his friends blaming him, “ You talk simply,” said he, “ would you make me believe that he who commands thirty legions is not a man of more learning than I am?”\* Augustus wrote verses against Asinius Pollio; “ And I,” said Pollio, “ say nothing, for it is not prudent to take up the pen against him who has power to proscribe.” And these were both in the right; for Dionysius, because he could not equal Philoxenus in poetry,† and Plato in reasoning,‡ condemned the one to the quarries, and sent the other to the isle of Ægina to be sold for a slave.

## CHAPTER VII.

### *Of the Art of Discoursing.*

IT is the custom of our justice to condemn some for a warning to others. To condemn them for no other reason but because they have done amiss, were

The end of  
punish-  
ments; and  
how the

\* Ælii Spartiani Adrianus Cæsar, p. 7 and 8, Hist. Aug.

† Or rather because he was not able to bear the slight opinion which Philoxenus showed of his poetry. Diodorus of Sicily, lib. xi. cap. 2, says, that one day, at supper-time, as they were reading some worthless poems of this tyrant, that excellent poet Philoxenus, being charged to give his opinion of them, was too free in his answer to please Dionysius, for which the tyrant was so much incensed against him that he ordered him to be sent immediately to the quarries.

‡ Montaigne is mistaken here with regard to Plato, who was sold a slave in the island of Ægina, by order of Dionysius the tyrant, because he had spoken too freely to him; as Diodorus of Sicily says positively, lib. xv. cap. 2, and more particularly also Diog. Laert. in the Life of Plato, lib. iii. sect. 18, 19. In these two last notes the fault I have found with Montaigne I might, indeed, have as well placed to the account of Plutarch, who says the very same thing as Montaigne, in his treatise Of Contentment, or Peace of the Mind, chap. 12, yet I cannot but think that Plutarch has here been guilty of some inaccuracy of expression.

vices of  
some men  
may serve  
for instruction to  
others.

downright stupidity, as Plato says, for what is done cannot be undone ; but it is to the end they may offend no more, and that others may not commit the like offence. We do not reform the man whom we hang, but we reform others by him. I do the same. My errors are sometimes natural, and neither to be corrected nor remedied ; but the benefit which virtuous men do the public, by making themselves imitated, I may do, perhaps, in making my conduct avoided :

*Nonne vides Albi ut malè vivat filius, utque  
Barrus inops ? magnum documentum, ne patriam rem  
Perdere quis velit.\**

Don't you behold the wealthy Albus' son,  
How wretchedly he lives, how he's undone ?  
There's Barrus too, how shabby is he grown !  
Barrus, the greatest rake of all the town :  
A good instruction for young heirs, that they  
Should not their patrimony fool away.

Whilst I proclaim and condemn my own imperfections, another person will be taught to fear them. The parts that I most esteem in myself derive more honour from accusing, than from recommending myself ; which is the reason I the oftener relapse and stick to them. But, when all is said and done, a man never speaks of himself without loss. Self-condemnation is always believed, but self-praise never. There may, perhaps, be some of my own constitution, who instruct me better by contrariety than by similitude, and more by avoiding than imitating me. This was that sort of discipline which the elder Cato had in his thoughts, when he said, that " Wise men have more to learn of fools, " than fools of wise men : " and that ancient player upon the harp, who, Pausanias said, used to compel his scholars to go and hear one that lodged opposite to him, who played very ill, that they might thereby learn to hate his discords and false measures. The

\* Hor. lib. i. sat. 4, ver. 109, &c.

horror of cruelty more inclines me to mercy than any example of clemency could possibly do. A good riding-master does not so much mend my seat in the saddle, as an attorney or a Venetian gondolier on horseback; and a sorry speaker reforms my language better than a good one. The silly look of another person always advertises and advises me; and that which is pungent awakes and rouses much better than what is pleasing. It is fit time for us to reform the backward way by disagreement rather than by agreement, by discord rather than accord. As I learn little by good examples, I make use of bad, which are very common. I have endeavoured to render myself as agreeable as I see others offensive, as constant as I see others fickle, as affable as I see others rough, as good as I see others wicked; but I proposed to myself measures invincible.

The most fruitful and natural exercise of the mind, in my opinion, is conversation, the use of which I find to be more agreeable than any other exercise in life. For this reason, were I now forced to make my choice at this instant, I think I would agree rather to lose my sight, than my hearing, or my speech. The Athenians and the Romans also held this exercise in great honour in their academies: and the Italians to this day retain some footsteps of it to their great advantage.

The study of books is a languid, feeble motion, that does not warm; whereas conversation at once instructs and exercises. If I discourse with a man of strong sense, and a shrewd disputant, he smites me hip and thigh, goads me on the right and left, and his imaginations give vigour to mine. Envy, glory, contention, stimulate and raise me above myself; whereas an unison of judgment is a quality that is a perfect nuisance in conversation. But as the mind gathers strength by the communication of vigorous and regular understandings, it is not to be expressed how much it loses and degenerates by the continual correspondence and company which we

The usefulness of conversation.

It is an exercise more instructive than the study of books.

keep with such whose imaginations are vulgar and distempered. There is no contagion which spreads like that. I have sufficient reason to know the evil of it by dear experience. I love to discourse and dispute; but it is with few men only, and for my own sake; for to be put up as a spectacle before a great assembly, and to make a parade and boasting of a man's flow of wit and words, is, I think, very unbecoming a person of honour.

Not to be able to bear with nonsense is a very troublesome disorder of the mind.

Nonsense is a contemptible quality; but not to be able to bear with it, and to fret and vex at it as I do, is another sort of disease, altogether as troublesome as nonsense; and this is the very thing of which I will now accuse myself. I enter into a conference and dispute with great freedom and ease, forasmuch as opinion meets in me with a soil very unfit for penetration, and too hard for it to take any deep root. No propositions astonish me, no belief offends me, how contrary soever it be to my own. There is no fancy so frivolous and extravagant that does not seem to me to be very suitable to the product of the human understanding. As for such of us, who deprive our judgment of the right of making decrees, we look upon the various opinions with indifference; and if we do not incline our judgments to them, yet we readily lend an ear to them. Where one scale of the balance is quite empty, I let the other waver under the dreams of an old woman: and I think myself excusable if I choose the odd number, Thursday rather than Friday; if I had rather be the twelfth or fourteenth than the thirteenth at table; if I had rather, on a journey, see a hare run by me than cross my road, and that my stocking be put on my left foot first. All such whimsies as are current about us, deserve least to be hearkened unto. As to me they are all mere vanity, and that is what they really import. Moreover, vulgar and casual opinions, considered in their weight, are, indeed, something more than nothing in nature; and he who will not suffer himself to proceed so far,

falls, perhaps, into the vice of obstinacy, for the sake of avoiding that of superstition. The contradictions of judgments, therefore, neither offend nor alter me; they only awake and exercise me. We shun correction, whereas we ought to put ourselves in the way of it, especially when it comes by way of conference, and not of authority. As to every opposition, we do not consider whether it be just, but how we shall, right or wrong, disengage ourselves from it. Instead of extending our arms, we thrust out our claws. I could suffer myself to be roughly handled by my friends telling me that I am a fool and a dreamer. I love to hear gentlemen speak, as they think, with courage. We must fortify and harden our organ of hearing against this ceremonious sound of words. I love a strong and manly familiarity and conversation; a friendship that is pleased with the sharpness and vigour of its communication, as love is with biting and scratching. It is not vigorous nor generous enough if it be not quarrelsome, if it be civilised and artificial, if it treads gingerly, and is afraid of a shock. *Neque enim disputari sine reprehensione potest.\** “Nor can there be any disputation without contradiction.” When I am contradicted, it rouses my attention, but not my indignation. I incline towards him who contradicts and instructs me. The cause of truth ought to be the common cause of both the one and the other. What answer will he make? The passion of anger has already given a blow to his judgment. Anguish has taken possession of it before reason. It would be of service that our disputes were decided by wagers; that there might be a material mark put upon what we lost, to the end that we might keep an account of it, and that my man might tell me, “My ignorance and obstinacy cost me last year a hundred crowns at several times.” I cherish and caress truth in what hand

\* Cic. de Finibus Bon. et Mal. lib. i.

soever I find it ; I cheerfully surrender to it ; I open my conquered arms to it as far off as I can see it approaching, and I take a pleasure in being reprov'd, provided it be not with an air too deriding and imperious. And I accommodate myself to my accusers more frequently for civility sake than for the sake of amendment, choosing to gratify and encourage a freedom to admonish me, by my ready submission to it. Nevertheless it is hard to bring the men of my time to it. They have not the courage to correct, because they cannot bear to be corrected themselves. And they always speak with dissimulation in one another's presence. I take so great a pleasure in being judg'd and known, that it is in a manner indifferent to me in which of the two forms I am so. My imagination so often contradicts and condemns itself, that it is all one to me if another do it, especially considering that I grant no more authority than what I think fit to his reproof. But I am angry with the man who is so surly, which I know some are, as to be sorry for his admonition if it be not credited, and takes it for an affront if it be not immediately followed. As Socrates always received the contradictions to his arguments with a smile, it may be said that his strength of reason was the cause, and that the advantage being certain of falling on his side, he accepted them as matter of new victory. Nevertheless we see, on the contrary, that there is nothing in the case that renders our sentiment so delicate as an inclination to pre-eminence, and a disdain of the adversary ; and that, therefore, the weaker disputant has reason to take in good part those contradictions that correct and set him right. In earnest, I rather choose to keep company with those who gall me than those who fear me. It is an insipid and a hurtful pleasure to have to do with people who admire and make way for us. Antisthenes commanded his children " Never to take it kindly, or " as a favour, from any man who commended

“ them.”\* I find I am much prouder of a victory which I gain over myself, when, in the very heat of the contention, I surrender to the strength of my adversary’s argument, than I feel pleasure in a victory which I obtain over him by means of his weakness. In short, I receive and admit of all manner of attacks that are direct, how weak soever; but I am quite out of patience with those that are not made in form. I little care what the subject is; the opinions are all one to me, and the victory is to me a thing almost indifferent. I can argue a whole day together peaceably, if the debate be carried on with order. I do not require strength and subtlety so much as method; I mean the order which is every day observed in the wranglings of shepherds and shop-boys, but never among us. If they start from the subject it is uncivil in them; and yet it is no more than what we do ourselves: but their tumult and impatience does not carry them from their point. They pursue the thread of their argument. If they prevent, and do not stay for one another, they at least understand one another. Any one answers too well for me, if he answer what I say. But when the dispute is confused and irregular, I quit the substance, and adhere to the form with anger and indiscretion, and fall into a testy, malicious, and imperious way of disputing, of which I am afterwards ashamed. It is impossible to deal sincerely with a fool. My judgment is not only depraved under the hand of so impetuous a master, but my conscience also.

Our disputes ought to be prohibited and punished as well as other verbal crimes. What vice † do they not

Disputes  
that are  
conducts

\* Plutarch, Of False Shame, chap. 12. Ὁ Ἀντισθένης Ἡρακλῆς παρήναι τοῖς πᾶσι διακελευόμενος μὴδὲν χάριν ἔχειν ἐπαυθεῖς αὐτοῖς. Montaigne has confounded this Antisthenius, or Antistheneus, as the Latin translation of Plutarch calls him, with the chief of the Cynic sect, who never had the surname of Hercules, which Plutarch gives to Antisthenius, and is constantly called Antisthenes.

† The description which Montaigne gives, from this place, to the mark †, in page 173, of the faults that commonly attend our disputes, is very just, and very agreeably expressed. Pere Bou-



ought to be  
prohibit-  
ed; the ill  
conse-  
quences of  
them.

create and accumulate, being always governed and commanded by passion? We first quarrel with the arguments, and then with the men. We learn to dispute purely for the sake of contradicting; and whilst every one contradicts, and is contradicted, it falls out that all that is got by the dispute is the loss and annihilation of the truth. Plato, therefore, in his Republic, prohibits this exercise to fools and ill-bred people. To what end do you go about to inquire into a subject of one who knows not any thing that is worth knowing? It is doing no injury to the subject when a man leaves it in order to see which way to treat it. I do not mean a way that is artful and scholastic, but one that is natural and obvious to a solid understanding. What will it be in the end? One goes to the east, the other to the west. They lose the main point, and scatter it in a crowd of incidents. After storming for an hour, they know not what they are looking for. One is low, the other high, and the third sideling. One is taken with a word and a simile: another is no longer sensible of the opposition made to him, he is so engaged in his pursuit, and thinks of following his own course, and not yours: another, finding himself too weak to hold the argument, fears all, refuses all, and, at the very beginning, mixes and confounds the subject, or, in the very height of the dispute, stops short and grows silent by a peevish ignorance, affecting a haughty contempt, or a silly modesty of avoiding contention. This man, provided he strikes, cares not how much he lays himself open. The other counts his very words, and weighs them for reasons. Another is beholden only to his (Stentor-

hours was so pleased with it, that he has inserted it almost verbatim in lib. iii. of his *Art de Penser*, chap. 20, sect. 7, but without directly ascribing the honour of it to Montaigne, whom he only points out by the vague character of the Celebrated Author; whereas he ought most certainly to have named Montaigne expressly, especially after having just criticised him in the same chapter with great severity, to call it no worse, when he not only quoted his words, but named him without any scruple.

like) voice, and his lungs. Here is one that draws inferences against himself, and another that deafens you with prefaces and impertinent digressions.† Another falls into downright railing, and picks a quarrel for nothing, in order to get clear of the company and conversation of a wit that is too hard for him. This last looks not into the reason of things, but draws a line of circumvallation about you, with the logic of his clauses, and the rules of his art.

Who now does not enter into a distrust of the sciences, and doubt whether he can reap any solid advantage from them for the necessities of life, considering the use we put them to. *Nihil sanantibus literis,\** as Seneca calls it. Who has got understanding by logic? Where are all its fine promises? *Nec ad melius vivendum, nec ad commodius disserendum*: “It neither makes a man live better, nor “discourse more pertinently.” Is there more balderdash in the brawls of fish-women than in the public disputes of the men of this profession? I would rather that a son of mine should learn the language of the taverns than the babble of the schools. Take a master of arts, and discourse with him, does he not make us sensible of this artificial excellency? Does he not captivate the women, and such ignoramuses as we are, by the admiration of the strength of his reasons, and the beauty of his method? Does he not govern and persuade us as he will? Why does a man, who has so great advantage in matter and management, mix railing, indiscretion, and rage, in his disputations? Strip him of his gown, his hood, and his Latin; let him not batter our ears with Aristotle, in his *puris naturalibus*, you will take him for one of us, or worse. By that complication and confusion of language with which they overpower us, they appear in the light of jugglers, whose feats of activity strike and impose upon our senses, but do not at all shock our belief; and, their slight of hand excepted, they

The strange  
abuse that  
is made of  
science.

\* Seneca, ep. 59.

do nothing but what is common and mean. They are not the less fools for their being more learned ; I love and honour knowledge as much as they who possess it ; and, if a right use be made of it, it is the most noble and powerful acquisition of mortals : but in those (of whom there is an infinite number) who establish their sufficiency and value upon that basis, who appeal from their understanding to their memory, *sub alienâ umbrâ latentes*,\* and can do nothing but by book, I hate it, if I may venture to say it, something worse than stupidity itself. In my country, and in my time, learning has improved fortunes sufficiently, but the mind not at all. If it meets with dull souls it overcharges and suffocates them, leaving them a crude and undigested mass ; but, as for such as are free of all clogs, it readily purifies and subtilises them. It is a thing of a quality almost indifferent ; a very useful accomplishment to a sublime soul, but to others pernicious and mischievous ; or rather a thing of very precious use, that will not suffer itself to be purchased at a low rate. In some hands it is a sceptre, in others a rattle.

It is method and management, that give a value to disputation.

But to proceed : what greater victory do you hope for, than to convince your enemy that he is not able to encounter you ? When you get the better of your position, it is truth that wins ; when you get the advantage of order and method, it is you that win. I am of opinion that, in Plato and Xenophon, Socrates disputes more for the sake of the disputants than of the dispute, and more to instruct Euthydemus and Protagoras in the knowledge of their impertinence than in the impertinence of their art. He grasps at the first subject, like one who has a more profitable aim than to explain it, namely to clear the understandings which he takes upon him to cultivate and exercise. It is our proper

\* Seneca, epist. 33. i. e. We are always translators, and never authors.

business to be stirring, and upon the hunt after truth; and, if we prosecute the chase ill and impertinently, we are inexcusable. To fail in seizing, it is another thing. For we are born to search after truth, though it is the province of a greater power to possess it. It is not, as Democritus said, concealed in the unfathomable deeps, but rather elevated to an infinite height in the divine knowledge. The world is but a school of inquiry. It is not who shall enter the field, but who shall perform the best courses. He may as well play the fool who speaks the truth, as he who utters a falsehood; for we are upon the manner, not the matter of speaking. It is my humour to regard the form as much as the substance, and the advocate as much as the cause, according to the rule laid down by Alcibiades. And I amuse myself every day in reading authors, without minding their learning; their method being what I look for, not their subject. Just so too I hunt after the conversation of some celebrated genius; not that he may teach me, but that I may know him; and that then, if he be worth it, I may imitate him. It is in every man's power to speak truly, but the talent of a few only to speak methodically, prudently, and fully. By consequence, the falsity which proceeds from ignorance, does not offend me, but the folly of it. I have broke off several advantageous bargains by reason of the impertinent wrangling of those with whom I treated. I am not moved once in a year at the faults of those over whom I have any power; but for the stupidity and obstinacy of their allegations, and their foolish and brutish excuses, we are every day ready to seize one another by the collar. They neither understand what is said, nor why; and answer accordingly, which is enough to make a man mad. I never feel any severe shock in my head but when it is knocked by another head; and am more ready to compound for the crimes of my domestics than their rashness, impertinence, and folly. Let them do less, provided they are capable

of doing it right. You live in hopes of warming their affection to you; but from a blockhead, there is nothing worth to be had, or hoped for.

A great fault in a man not to be able to bear with the follies of others.

But what if I take things otherwise than they are? It is possible I may; and, therefore, I accuse my own impatience; and hold, in the first place, that such impatience is as vicious in him who is in the right as in him who is in the wrong. For it is always a tyrannical sourness not to be able to bear a form different from one's own. Besides, there really is not a greater, more constant, and more unaccountable folly than to be moved and provoked at the follies of mankind; for it chiefly makes us quarrel with ourselves, and the ancient philosopher never wanted occasion for his tears whilst he considered himself. Miso,\* one of the seven sages, who was of the temper of Timon and Democritus, being asked, "What he laughed at, being alone?" made answer, "For the very reason 'because I laugh alone.'" How many silly things, in my opinion, do I say and answer every day of my life; and then how many more according to the opinion of others? If I bite my own lips at it, what must others do? In short, we must live among the living, and let the river run under the bridge without our care, or at least without our being disturbed. To speak the truth, how comes it that we can meet a man with a hump-back, or any other deformity, without being angry at it; and cannot bear to meet with a person who is of a wrong head, without putting ourselves into a passion? This criminal sourness sticks more to the judge than to the crime. Let us always have this saying of Plato in our mouths, "Do not I think things wrong because I am wrong myself? Am not I myself in fault? May not my admonition rebound upon myself?" A wise and divine check this, which lashes the most universal and common error of mankind. Not only the re-

\* Diog. Laert. in the Life of Miso, lib. i. sect. 108.

proaches that we cast upon one another, but our reasons also; our arguments and controversies are generally liable to be retorted upon us, and we are hurt with our own weapons. Of this antiquity has left me very grave examples. It was said ingeniously, and very pertinently, by Erasmus, in his *Adages*, *Stercus cuique suum bene olet*. We see nothing behind us. We expose ourselves to laughter a hundred times a day, while we laugh at our neighbour, and detest in others the very faults that are more conspicuous in ourselves, and which we admire with wonderful impudence and inadvertency. It was but yesterday that I saw a man of good sense pleasantly and justly ridiculing the folly of another, who batters the ears of all companies with the catalogue of his genealogies and alliances, above half of them false (for they whose titles are most dubious and uncertain, are the most apt to fall upon such ridiculous topics), and, at the same time, had he looked at home, he would have found, that he was altogether as intemperate and impertinent in publishing and crying up the pedigree of his wife. O! the impertinent assurance with which the wife sees herself armed by her own husband! If he understood Latin we would say to him,

*Agesis hæc non insanit satis suâ sponte, instiga.\**

If of herself she be not mad enough,  
Be sure to urge her to the utmost proof.

I do not say that no man should accuse who is not clear himself; for then the one would ever accuse, not even he that is clear from the same sort of stain; but I mean, that while our judgment falls upon another whose name is then in question, it does not exempt us from an internal and severe jurisdiction. It is an office of charity that the man who cannot reclaim himself from a vice, should, nevertheless, endeavour to remove it in another, in whom, per-

\* Ter. Andria, act iv. scene 2, ver. 9.

haps, it may not have taken so deep and malignant a root. Neither do I think it a pertinent answer to him, who admonishes me of my fault, to tell him that he is guilty of the same. What does this signify? The admonition is, notwithstanding, true and useful. If we had a good nose our ordure would be the more offensive to us, because it is our own. And Socrates is of opinion, that whoever should find himself, his son, and a stranger, guilty of any violence and wrong, ought to begin with himself, to present himself first to the sentence of justice; and, in order to purge himself, to implore the assistance of the hangman. The son should take place next, and then the stranger. If this precept seem a little too severe, he ought, at least, to present himself the first to the sting of his own conscience.

That which strikes our senses determines our judgments. The gravity, robe, and fortune of the speaker gives weight to a thousand silly things that fall from his lips.

The senses, which perceive things only by external accidents, are our proper and first judges; and it is no wonder if, in all the parts of our social duty, there is so perpetual and universal a mixture of ceremonies and superficial appearances, insomuch that therein consists the best and most effectual part of our civil government. It is still man with whom we have to do, whose condition is wonderfully corporeal. As for those who, of late years, have aimed to erect such a contemplative and immaterial exercise of religion for us, let them not wonder if there be some who think it had slipped and vanished through their fingers, had it not continued among us as a mark, title, and instrument of division and partition, more than by itself. As in a conference, the gravity, the robe, and the fortune of the speaker, often give a reputation to vain and silly arguments; it is not to be presumed, but that a gentleman so attended, and that strikes such an awe, has some sufficiency in him that is more than common; and that the man to whom the king has given so many commissions and offices, a man of so solemn and supercilious a countenance, must be a person of greater abilities than

another who salutes him at a great distance, and who has no employment. Not only the words, but the grimaces of those people, are considered, and put to the account, every one making it his business to give them some fine and solid construction. If they condescend to common conversation, and you offer them any thing but approbation and reverence, they knock you down with the authority of their experience: they have heard, they have seen, they have done so and so; you are crushed with examples. I would choose to tell them that the fruit of a surgeon's experience is not the history of his practice, and his calling to mind that he has cured four people of the plague, and three of the gout, unless he knows how to extract something from it on which to form his judgment, and make us sensible that he is thereby become the wiser in the use of his art. As, in a concert of music, we do not hear a lute, a harpsichord, and a flute alone, but one blended harmony of all the instruments together. If they are improved by travelling, or by their posts, their understanding will make it appear. It is not enough to count the experiments: they must be weighed and sorted, digested and distilled, in order to extract the arguments and inferences which they carry with them. There were never so many historians. It is always good and useful to attend to them, for they furnish us every where with excellent and commendable instructions from the magazine of their memory, which, doubtless, is of great importance to the support of life. But it is not this we seek for now: we examine whether these relaters and collectors of things are commendable themselves. I hate every kind of tyranny, both in words and deeds. I heartily set myself against those vain circumstances which deceive our judgment through the senses; and, whilst I narrowly observe these extraordinary grandees, I find that, at best, they are but men as others are:



*Rarus enim fermè sensus communis in illâ  
Fortunâ.\**

For 'tis rare

If wealth uncommon, common sense can share.

Why great  
men ap-  
pear some-  
times to be  
more  
foolish  
than they  
are in fact.

Perhaps, we think them less than they are, by reason they undertake more, and make a greater parade, and at the same time do not perform what they engaged in. There must be more vigour and strength in the bearer than the burden. He who has not exerted his full strength, leaves you to guess whether he has still more, and whether he has been tried to the utmost of what he is able to perform. He who sinks under his burden, discovers the measure of his strength, and the weakness of his shoulders. This is the reason why we find so many more silly mortals among the learned than there are others. Some of them would have made good husbandmen, good merchants, and good artificers: their stock of natural vigour was proportioned to those callings. Knowledge is a thing of great weight: they faint under it. Their genius has neither vigour nor dexterity enough to display and distribute this rich and powerful matter, nor to make use and advantage of it. It has no prevailing virtue but in a strong nature; and such natures are vary rare. The weak ones, says Socrates, spoil the dignity of philosophy by handling it. It appears useless and vicious when it is not well placed.† Thus it is that they spoil and make fools of themselves:

*Humani qualis simulator simius oris,  
Quem puer, arridens, pretioso stamine serum  
Velavit, nudâsque nates ac terga reliquit,  
Ludibrium mensis.‡*

\* Juv. sat. viii. ver. 73.

† Like precious liquor which is spoiled if poured into a vessel that is not clean.

*Sincerum est nisi vas, quodcumque infundis, acescit.*  
Tainted vessels sour their contents.

‡ Claudian in Eutrop. lib. i. ver. 303, &c.

Just like an ape that, sprung from mimic race,  
 With various aspects counterfeits man's face,  
 Which boys, for sport, with silken vest adorn,  
 But leave its buttocks bare, to raise their scorn.

Nor is it enough for those who govern and command us, who have the world, as we say, in a string, to be men of common understanding, and to be able to do what we can; for if they are not very much superior to us they are far below us, since as they promise more they ought to perform more.

Yet silence in them not only gives them an air of respect and gravity, but often also conduces to their profit and service. Megabysus, going one day to see Appelles in his painting room, sat still a long time without speaking a word; but at last, beginning to discourse of his performances, he received this harsh reprimand from him: "Whilst thou wast silent\* " thou seemedst to be some person of great account, because of thy chains, and thy pompous appearance; but now that we have heard thee speak, there is not the meanest boy in my workshop that does not despise thee." His magnificent habit, and his great state, condemned his ignorance the more, while he talked of painting so impertinently. He ought to have said nothing at all, and not betrayed his superficial and conjectural knowledge. How many fools, in my time, have passed for men of prudence and capacity, by reason of their gravity and taciturnity!

Dignities and offices are of necessity conferred more by fortune than by merit, and kings are often blamed for it wrongfully. On the contrary, it is a wonder that they should have so much fortune with so little skill:

*Principis est virtus maxima, nosse suos.†*

\* Plutarch, in his treatise *How to distinguish the Flatterer from the Friend*, chap. 14.

† Martial. lib. viii. epig. 15, ver. ult.

No greater virtue can a prince enjoy  
Than well to know the men he would employ.

For nature has not given them a sight that can extend to so many people, to discern where lies the preference, and to penetrate into our breasts, where our will and worth are best to be known. They must make choice of us by conjecture and trial; by our family, wealth, learning, and by the voice of the people; all very weak arguments. Whoever could find out a way to form a right judgment of this, and to choose men by reason, would, by so doing, establish a perfect form of government.

Whether  
success be  
always a  
proof of  
sufficiency.

Nay more, he has brought this grand affair to a point. This is saying something, but not enough: for this opinion is justly admitted, that we are not to judge of counsels by events. The Carthaginians\* punished their generals for giving wrong advice, though it was attended with happy success; and the people of Rome often refused triumph for great and very advantageous victories, because such success was not to be expected from the general's conduct. We commonly see, in the transactions of the world, that fortune, to show us her power in all things, and which takes pleasure in mortifying our presumption, not being able to make fools wise, she makes them happy in spite of virtue, and is forward to favour those operations which are most purely of her own plan. Hence it is that we daily see the simplest among us bring very great business, both public and private, to an issue: and as Sirannez,† the Persian, made answer to those who wondered how his affairs succeeded so ill, considering that his

\* The Carthaginians are said to have hanged up their generals, though victorious, if the advice they acted by was wrong, Tit. Liv. lib. xxxviii. cap. 48.

† Or rather, Seirammes *Σειράμης*, as we read it in Plutarch, in his prologue to the Remarkable Sayings of the ancient Kings, Princes, and Generals

deliberations were so wise : “ That he was sole master of his purposes, but the success of his affairs was wholly in the power of fortune.”\* These may return the same answer, but with a contrary bias. Most of the affairs of this world are performed by accidents :

*Fata viam inveniunt.*†

The Fates are sure to find a way.

The event often justifies very foolish conduct. Our interposition is as it were but a thing of course, and more commonly a consideration of use and example than of reason. Being amazed at the greatness of a deed, I have formerly been acquainted, by those who have performed it, of their motives and their address, and have found nothing therein but very ordinary advice ; and the most common and customary are also, perhaps, the most sure and convenient for practice, if not for show. What if the plainest reasons are the best planned ? What if the lowest, the basest, and most beaten, are best adapted to affairs ? In order to preserve the authority of the counsels of kings, it is not necessary that prophane persons should participate in them, or see farther into them than the first out-line. My consultation skims over the subject a little, and slightly considers it by the first appearances. The stress and main of the business I have been used to resign to heaven :

*Permitte divis cætera.*‡

Leave to the gods the rest.

Good fortune and ill fortune are, in my opinion, Chance a very great st in huma actions. two sovereign powers. It is a folly to think that human prudence can play the part of fortune ; and vain is his attempt who presumes to comprehend causes and consequences, and to lead the progress of his design, as it were, by the hand : vain, espe-

\* Plutarch, in the preface, above mentioned, to the Remarkable Sayings.

† Virg. *Æneid.* lib. iii. ver. 395.

‡ Horat. lib. i. ode 9, ver. 9.

cially in military deliberations. There never was greater circumspection and military prudence than has been sometimes seen amongst us. Could it be that men were afraid of perishing by the way, that they reserved themselves for the catastrophe of the game? I even affirm, that our very wisdom and consultation, for most part, follow the conduct of chance. My will and my reason are sometimes moved by one impulse, and sometimes by another; and many of those movements govern themselves without me. My reason has uncertain and casual agitations :

*Vertuntur species animorum, et pectora motus  
Nunc alios, alios, dum nubila ventus agebat,  
Concipiunt.\**

Now one impression in their bosoms dwells ;  
Another, when the wind the clouds dispels.

If we but observe who are the men of the greatest sway in cities, and who do their own business best, we shall commonly find that they are men the least qualified. Women, children, and fools, have had the fortune to govern large dominions equally well with princes of the greatest abilities ; and we find, says Thucydides, that the stupid governors out-number those of better understandings. We ascribe the effects of their good fortune to their prudence :

*Ut quisque fortunâ utitur,  
Ita præcellet ; atque exinde sapere illum omnes dicimus.†*

According to their wealth all men we prize ;  
The rich are sure to be cried up for wise.

Wherefore I make no manner of scruple to declare, that events are slender proofs of our worth and capacity.

How we  
are impos-  
ed upon by  
rank.

Now I was upon this point, that there needs no more than to see a man raised to honour ; though we knew him but three days before to be a man of little

\* Virg. Geor. lib. i. ver. 420, &c.

† Plautus in Pseud. act ii. sc. 3, ver. 13.

consequence, yet an idea of his greatness and sufficiency insensibly steals upon our opinions; and we persuade ourselves that as he increases in equipage and credit, so he increases in merit. We judge of him not according to his worth, but, as we do of counters, according to the prerogative of his rank. Let luck but turn, so that he fall again, and be mixed with the common crowd, every one inquires with astonishment into the cause of his having been raised so high. "Is it he?" say they. "Did he know no better when he was in place? Are princes so easily satisfied? Really we were in fine hands." This very thing is what I have often seen in my time. Nay the mask of greatness, which is represented in comedies, in some measure affects and deceives us. What I myself adore in kings, is the crowd of their adorers. All reverence and submission is due to them, except that of the understanding. My reason is not obliged to bow and bend, but my knees are. Melanthius, being asked what he thought of the tragedy of Dionysius, said, "I have not seen it, it is so obscured with language."\* And most of those, who judge of the discourses of great men, should say, I did not understand its drift, it was so obscured with gravity, grandeur, and majesty. Antisthenes one day persuaded the Athenians† to give order that their asses might be as well employed in the tillage of their lands as their horses. The answer made to him was, that "The ass was an animal not born for such service." "It is all one," replied he, "you need only command it to be done; for the most ignorant and incapable men that you employed in your military orders, immediately become worthy

\* Plutarch, in his treatise of Hearing, chap. 7 of Amyot's translation.

† Diog. Laert. in the Life of Antisthenes, lib. vi. sect. 8, where this is told in a manner somewhat different, but in the main it amounts to the same thing.

“ by your employing them.” This is much like the custom of many nations who, when they have chosen a king, canonize him; and do not think it enough to honour him, if they do not also adore him. The people of Mexico, after the ceremonies of his coronation are over, dare no more to look him in the face; but, as if they had made him a god, as well as a king, among the oaths they make him take, to maintain their religion, laws, and liberties, to be valiant, just, and courteous; he swears also to make the sun travel with its usual light, to make the clouds distil at the proper season, the rivers to run in their channels, and to make the earth bear all things necessary for his people.

Mon-  
taine apt  
to suspect  
a man's  
ability  
from the  
moment  
that he is  
preferred  
to a great  
post.

I dissent from this common practice, and have the more distrust of a man's capacity when I see it accompanied with a great fortune, and the public applause. We ought to consider of how great advantage it is for a man to speak when he pleases, to choose his subject, to break off the argument, or change it with a magisterial authority, to defend himself against those who argue with him by a nod of the head, a smile, or by silence, in the presence of an assembly trembling with reverence and respect. A man of a monstrous fortune, offering to give his judgment in a slight dispute that was foolishly set on foot at his table, began in these very words “ He who says otherwise than so or so, must be a liar, or an ignoramus.” Pursue this philosophical point sword-in-hand.

Important  
advice for  
forming a  
right judg-  
ment of a  
man's ca-  
pacity in  
conversa-  
tion.

There is another observation I have made, that has been of great service to me, which is, that in disputes and conferences, all the phrases which we think good, are not immediately to be accepted. Most men are rich in borrowed stock. One man may happen to say a good thing, to give an excellent answer, and advance a notable sentence without knowing the force of it. That a man is not master of all that he borrows may be, perhaps, verified in myself. It is not always necessary to yield presently

to what is advanced, whatever truth or beauty it has. Either a man must heartily oppose it, or draw back, on pretence of not understanding it, to try in all parts how it is lodged in its author. It may happen that we may embarrass ourselves, and help to push the argument too far. I have sometimes, in the necessity and heat of combat, made pushes that have gone through and through, beyond my design and expectation. I only gave them in number, but they were received by weight: in like manner, when I contend with a brisk disputant, I please myself with anticipating his conclusions; I ease him of the trouble of explaining himself, I endeavour to prevent his imagination whilst it is yet springing up and imperfect; the order and pertinency of his understanding warns and threatens me at a good distance. With these I take a course quite contrary. I must understand and suppose nothing but by them. If they give judgment in general terms, "this is good, this is bad," and that they happen to be in the right, see if it be not fortune that hits it off for them. Let them circumscribe, and limit their judgment a little, why, or how is it so. These universal judgments, which I see so common, signify nothing. These are men who salute a whole people in a crowd together. Such as have a perfect knowledge of them take notice of, and salute them particularly, and by name; but it is a hazardous attempt. From hence I have frequently seen it fall out that shallow wits, affecting to appear ingenious in taking notice of the beautiful passages in a work which they are reading, fix their admiration with so ill a choice, that, instead of discovering the author's excellence to us, they only expose their own ignorance. It is a false exclamation to say, "this is fine," after having heard a whole page of Virgil. By this means the cunning ones save their credit. But to undertake to follow him by a passage here and there, and, with a positive and approved judgment, to attempt the observing where a good author surpasses himself, weighing the



terms, phrases, inventions, and various excellences, one after another, by all means forbear it. *Videndum est non modo, quid quisque loquatur, sed etiam, quid quisque sentiat, atque etiam, quâ de causâ quisque sentiat.\** “We are not only to observe what every one says, but also what he thinks, and for what reason he thinks so.” I every day hear fools say things that are not silly. If they say a good thing, let us examine where they had it. We help them to make use of this fine expression, and of that fine argument, which is not their own, and which they only have in keeping: they bolt them out at a venture, and by guess; we make them turn out to their credit and esteem. You lend them a hand, but to what purpose? They do not think themselves obliged to you for it, and become still the greater block-heads. Never second them; let them go on in their own way; they will handle the subject like people afraid to burn their own fingers. They neither dare to change its situation nor light, nor to dive into it. Shake it ever so little, it slips through their fingers; and, be their cause ever so good and strong, they give it up to you. These are fine weapons, but have not good hafts. How many times have I seen the proof of them. Now, if you go to explain things to them, and confirm them, they catch at it, and immediately steal the advantage of your interpretation, by saying, “That was what I was going to say; that was just my thought, and if I did not express it so clearly it was for want of language.” This is mere gasconade. There had need be malice itself employed to correct this haughty stupidity. Hegesias’s doctrine, that we are neither to hate nor accuse, but to instruct, is right elsewhere; but here it is injustice, and inhumanity, to relieve and set him right, who cares not for it, and is the worse for it. I love to let them sink deeper, and entangle themselves more and more in the mire, till at last, if it be

\* Cic. de Offic. lib. i. cap. 41.

possible, they may own their mistake. Folly and nonsense are not to be cured by admonition, of which we may properly say, as Cyrus did to the person who importuned him to make an harangue to his army just before a battle, viz. that men are not immediately rendered valiant and warlike by a fine oration, no more than a man suddenly becomes a musician by hearing a fine song. These are apprenticeships that are to be served before-hand by a long and constant discipline. We owe this care, and this assiduity of correction and instruction, to our own people; but to go and preach to the first person that passes by, and to lord it over the ignorance and folly of the first we meet, is a custom that I heartily abhor. I rarely do it, even in private discourse, and sooner give up my cause than proceed to such retrograde and magisterial instructions. My temper is unfit either to speak or write for petty princes. But in things which are said in common, or amongst others, however false and absurd I think them, I never oppose them either by word or sign.

As to the rest, nothing puts me so much out of conceit with a fool, as that he pleases himself more than any man of sense can reasonably please himself. It is a misfortune that prudence forbids us self-contentment and confidence, and sends us always away discontented and diffident in cases, where obstinacy and rashness fill those that are guilty of them with joy and assurance. The ignorant are they who look back at other men over the shoulder, always returning from the combat full of joy and triumph. And this haughtiness of style, and gaiety of countenance, often gives them the advantage, in the opinion of by-standers, who are commonly weak and incapable of rightly judging and discerning the real advantages. Obstinacy and vehemence in opinion is the surest proof of stupidity. Is there any thing so positive, resolute, scornful, contemplative, serious, and grave as an ass?

The most disagreeable thing in a fool is his admiration of every thing that he says.

The usefulness of smart and bold repartees in conversation.

May we not incorporate in discourse and conversation the sharp and pointed expressions which mirth and familiarity introduce among friends, pleasantly and briskly jesting with, and bantering one another?

This is an exercise for which my natural gaiety fits me well enough; and, though it be not as tedious and serious, as that other exercise which I mentioned just now, it is every whit as acute and ingenious, and, as Lycurgus thought, altogether as useful. For my part, I contribute more freedom than wit to it, and am more obliged to luck than to invention; but I am perfect in suffering, for I can bear a retaliation that is not only tart, but indiscreet also, without being at all moved. And whenever I am attacked, if I have not a brisk repartee ready, I do not trouble myself by pursuing the subject with a nauseous impertinent contest, bordering upon obstinacy. I let it drop, am glad to give up the point, and wait a better opportunity to take satisfaction. No merchant is always a gainer. Most men, when their strength fails them, change their countenance and voice; and, by an unseasonable indignation, instead of revenging themselves, accuse at once their own folly and impatience. In these jovial moments we sometimes pinch the private strings of our imperfections, which, when composed, we cannot touch without offence; and we hint our defects to one another to our advantage.

There are other rough and indiscreet contentions, after the French manner, which I mortally hate. I have a tender skin, which is sensible of the least touch. I have, in my time, known two princes of our royal blood interred, who lost their lives by such a dispute. It is unhandsome, at play, to fall out and fight.

When I have a mind to judge of any one, I ask him how he likes himself, to what degree his speech or his work pleases him. I bar those fine apologies: "I did it only for my pastime; I was not an hour about it; I have not looked over it since."

*Ablatum mediis opus est incudibus istis.\**

This work, unfinish'd, from the anvil came.

Well but, say I, set those pieces aside, and give one that represents you entire, such an one as you would be measured by. And then what do you think is the best part of your performance? Is it this part, or that? the grace or the subject, the invention, the judgment, or the learning? For I commonly find, that men are as wide of the mark in judging of their own works, as those of others; not only by reason of the fondness they have for them, but for want of ability to know and distinguish them. The work, by its own merit and fortune, may second the workman, and outstrip him beyond his invention and knowledge. For my part, I do not judge of the value of other men's works more obscurely than of my own; and the rise and fall of my Essays, in my estimation, is very wavering and inconstant. There are many books that are useful upon account of their subjects, from which the author derives no praise; and there are good books, as well as good works, which are a disgrace to the operator. I may write of the manner of our feasts, of the fashion of our clothes, and may treat of them with an ill grace. I may publish the edicts of my time, and the letters of princes that are handed about. I may make an abridgment of a good book (though all abridgments of good books are silly†), which book may come to be lost, and the like. Posterity may receive singular benefit from such compositions; but what honour shall I get, unless it be by mere good luck? A great part of the authors of note are in this condition. Several years ago, when I read Philip de Comines, who is, doubtless, a very good author, I took notice

What method Montaigne took to form a judgment of a composition, when the author submitted to it.

\* Ovid. Trist. lib. i. eleg. 6, ver. 29.

† Somebody, however, has thought fit to publish a kind of abridgment of Montaigne's Essays (called *L'Esprit des Essais*, &c.) but, as if the abridgment had been made only to justify Montaigne's observation, it died as it were in its birth, and is not like to be ever reprinted.

of this, as an uncommon maxim, "That a man should be cautious of doing his master so much service as to hinder him from meeting with a just requital." I ought to commend the invention, not him; for I not long ago met with it in Tacitus, who says, "That benefits give us pleasure, while they are not too great to be requited; but, when they far exceed that, hatred is returned instead of thanks."\* And Seneca does not scruple to say, *Nam qui non putat esse turpe non reddere, non vult esse cui reddat*:† "He who thinks it a shame not to make a requital, wishes the man, to whom he owes it, was not in being." Quintus Cicero says, a little more faintly, *Qui se non putat satis facere, amicus esse nullo modo potest*.‡ "He who thinks it not in his power to make you satisfaction, can by no means be your friend." The subject, according to what it is, may procure the writer a reputation for learning, and a good memory; but to inspect him, and see what talents are most his own, and most worthy, and the vigour and beauty of his genius, it is necessary to know what is his own, and what is not so; and, in that which is not his own, to consider how much we are obliged to him for the choice, disposition, ornament, and language, which he has furnished. What if he has borrowed the matter, and spoiled the form, as often happens? We, who have little acquaintance with books, are in this difficulty, that, when we meet with some beautiful invention in any modern poet, any powerful argument in a preacher, we dare not, however, commend them for it, till we have first informed ourselves by some learned man whether the same be their own, or borrowed. Till then I am always on my guard.

A digression concerning the genius, and I have very lately read the history of Tacitus, from the beginning to the end (which is the more remarkable in me, as it is twenty years ago since I

\* Tacit. Annal. lib. iv. cap. 18.

† Seneca, ep. 81.

‡ Q. Cicero de Petitione Consularis, cap. 9.

stuck to any one book an hour together), and I did it <sup>character</sup> at the persuasion of a gentleman whom France holds <sup>of Tacitus.</sup> in very great esteem, not only for his own worth, but for a constant appearance of capacity and virtue, which is discovered in many of his brothers. I do not know any author that, in a public narrative, has interwoven such remarks on manners, and particular inclinations; and I am of a quite contrary opinion to him, which is that, being especially to write the lives of the emperors of his time, so various and extraordinary in every shape, and to relate so many notable actions, as their cruelty particularly produced in their subjects, he had more important and more engaging matter to discourse of, and to relate, than if he had been to describe battles, and universal commotions; insomuch, that I often find him insipid when he runs over the deaths of those brave men, as if he feared we should think them too numerous and tedious. This kind of historiography is by much the most useful. Public commotions depend most upon the conduct of fortune; private ones upon our own. This work of Tacitus is rather a judgment given upon facts, than a deduction of history. There are more lessons than stories in it: it is not a book to read, but to study and learn: it is full of opinions, some right, others wrong; it is a nursery of ethics and politics, for the use and ornament of such as have any share in the government of the world. He always uses solid and vigorous arguments in a sharp subtle manner, according to the affected style of that age: and was so fond of the sublime that, where sharpness and subtlety were wanting in the matter, he supplied the defect with lofty swelling words. His way of writing is much like that of Seneca. His style seems to me to be the more nervous, Seneca's more sharp. But Tacitus's history is the most proper for a troubled, sickly state, as ours is at present; and you would often say, that he both paints and pinches us.

They who doubt of his integrity, plainly enough  
VOL. III.

Tacitus, though a sincere historian, and zealous for the public good, has censured Pompey too severely.

confess they do not like him in other respects. His opinions are solid, and lean for the most part, towards the Roman affairs. Nevertheless, I am a little out of temper with him for judging more severely of Pompey, than suited with the opinion of those worthy men that lived in the same time, and treated with him; and for thinking Pompey, in all respects, like Marius and Sylla, excepting that he was more close.\* His intention, in the management of affairs, has not been exempted from ambition, nor revenge; and his very friends were afraid that his victory would have transported him beyond the bounds of reason; but not a degree so much beyond all restraint. There is nothing in Pompey's life that carries the marks of such express cruelty and tyranny. Neither ought we to compare suspicion to evidence; consequently I do not believe Tacitus in this matter. Supposing his narratives to be genuine and right, it might, perhaps, be argued, even from hence, that they are not always exactly applied to the conclusions of his judgments, which he always follows, according to the bias he has taken, often beyond the subject he opens to us, to which he has not deigned to give the least regard. He needs no excuse for having approved of the religion of his time, as it was enjoined by the laws, and for having been ignorant of the true religion. This was his misfortune, not his fault.

Whether he formed a right judgment of a paragraph in a letter from Tiberius to the senate.

I have principally considered his judgment, and do not fully understand it every where; and these words, particularly, in a letter which Tiberius, when old and sick, sent to the senate, "What shall I write to you, sirs, or how shall I write to you, or what shall I not write to you at this juncture?" "May the gods and goddesses lay a worse punishment upon me, than what I feel every day, if I know." I do not see why he should so positively apply them to a stinging remorse of Tiberius's con-

\* Tacit. Hist. lib. ii. cap. 38.

† Tacit. Annal. lib. vi. cap. 6.

science. At least, when I was in the same case, I perceived no such thing.

This is also deemed to me a little mean in Tacitus,\* Blamed by Montaigne for making an apology for having space of himself in his history. that, being to say he had exercised a certain honourable office of the magistracy, he excused himself by saying that he did not mention it by way of ostentation. This seems a little too low an expression for such a genius as his was; since for a man not to do himself justice, implies some want of courage; one of a rough and lofty judgment, which is also safe and sound, makes use of his own example upon all occasions, as well as those of others; and gives evidence as freely of himself as of a third person. We are to supersede these common rules of civility in favour of truth and liberty. I presume not only to speak of myself, but of myself alone. When I write of any thing else, I mistake my way, and lose my subject: yet I am not indiscreetly enamoured with or so bigotted to, and enwrapped up in myself, that I cannot distinguish and consider myself apart, as I do a neighbour, or a tree. It is equally a failing for a man not to discern all his ability, or to say more than he sees in himself. We owe more love to God than to ourselves, and know him less; yet we speak of him as much as we please.

If the writings of Tacitus make any discovery of his qualities, he was a great man, upright and bold; The character of Tacitus to be judged of by his writings. not of a superstitious, but of a philosophical, and generous virtue.

A man may think him bold in his stories; as where he says that a soldier carrying a bundle of wood, his hands were so frozen, and stuck so fast to it, that they were severed by it from his arms. I always, in such things, submit to such great authorities.† Tacitus, and all historians are to be commended for relating extraordinary facts and popular rumours. What he says also of Vespasian,‡ that by the favour of the god Serapis, he cured a blind woman in Alex-

\* "Domitianus edidit ludos seculares, iisque intentius affui, sacerdotio Quindecimvirali præditus, actum Prætor, quod non jactantia refero," &c. Tacit. Annal. lib. xi. cap. 11.

† Tacit. Annal. lib. xiii. cap. 35.

‡ Hist. lib. iv. cap. 81.



andria, by anointing her eyes with his spittle, and I know not what other miracles: he does it by the example and duty of all good historians, who keep registers of such events as are of importance. Among public accidents are also common rumours and opinions. It is their part to relate the things commonly believed, not to regulate them. This is the province of the divines and the philosophers, who are the guides of men's consciences. Therefore it was that this companion of his, and as great a man as himself, very wisely said, *Equidem plura transcribo quàm credo: nam nec affirmare sustineo, de quibus dubito, nec subducere quæ accepi*.\* “Indeed I set down more things than I believe; for as I cannot endure to affirm things whereof I doubt, so I cannot smother what I have heard.” And this other; *Hæc neque affirmare neque refellere operæ pretium est—fama rerum standum est*.† “It is not worth while to affirm, or to confute these matters; we must stand to report:” and as he wrote in an age when the belief of prodigies began to decline, he says, he would not, nevertheless, omit to insert in his annals, and to give a place to things received by so many worthy men, and with so great a reverence of antiquity. This was well said. Let them deliver us history more as they receive than believe it. I, who am a monarch of the subject I treat of, and who am accountable to nobody, do not, however, believe every thing I write. I often hazard the sallies of my fancy, of which I am very diffident, as well as certain quibbles, at which I shake my ears; but I let them take their chance. I see that by such things some get reputation: it is not for me alone to judge. I present myself standing, and lying on my face, my back, my right side and my left, and in all my natural postures. Wits, though equal in force, are not always equal in taste and application. This is what

\* Q. Curtius, lib. ix. chap. 1, translated by Vaugelas.

† Tit. Liv. lib. i. in the preface, and lib. viii. cap. 6.

my memory has furnished me with in gross, and with uncertainty enough. All judgments in the gross are weak and imperfect.

## CHAPTER VIII.

### *Of Vanity.*

THERE is not perhaps any vanity more express, Montaigne's pleasant apology for his undertaking this register of his own humours. than to write of it so vainly. That which the divinity has so divinely delivered of it to us, ought to be carefully and continually meditated by men of understanding. Who sees not that I have taken a road, in which I shall incessantly and easily jog on, so long as I can come at ink and paper? I can give no account of my life by my actions; fortune has placed them too low: I must do it by my fancies. And yet I have seen a gentleman who only communicated his life by the workings of his belly: you might see in his house a regular range of closestool-pans of seven or eight days standing: that was all his study, all his discourse; all other talk stunk in his nostrils. These here, but a little more decent, are the excrements of an old mind, sometimes hard, sometimes loose, and always indigested; and when shall I have done representing the continual agitation and mutation of my thoughts, on whatever subject comes into my head, seeing that Diomedes\*

\* Here Montaigne seems to have relied simply upon his memory, and to have mistaken Diomedes for Dydimus the grammarian, who, as Seneca says, wrote four thousand books on questions of vain literature, which was the principal study of the ancient grammarians. In some of these books was an inquiry into Homer's native country; in others, who was the true mother of Æneas; in some, whether Anacreon was the greater whore-master, or drunkard; in others, whether Sappho was a common strumpet: and the like things which were better unlearned, if you knew them. Seneca, epist. 88.

wrote six thousand books upon the sole subject of grammar? What then must be the product of loquacity, if the world was stuffed with such a horrible load of volumes to facilitate pronunciation and free utterance? So many words about words only. O Pythagoras, why didst not thou lay this tempest! They accused one Galba of old for living idly; he made answer, "That every one ought to give account of his actions, but not of his leisure."\* He was mistaken, for justice takes cognizance of, and passes censure even upon those that pick straws.

Sorry  
scribblers  
ought to be  
suppressed  
by the  
laws, and  
why.

But there should be some restraint of law against foolish and impertinent scribblers, as well as against vagabonds and idle persons;\* which, if there was, both I and a hundred others would be banished the kingdom. I do not speak this in jest: scribbling seems to be a symptom of a licentious age. When did we write so much as since our civil wars? When the Romans so much, as when their commonwealth was running to ruin? Besides that the refining of wits does not make people wiser in state policy. This idle employment springs from hence, that every one applies himself negligently to the duty of his vocation, and is diverted from it. The corruption of the age is a fund to which each of us contribute. Some treachery, others injustice, irreligion, tyranny, avarice and cruelty, according as they are in power; and the weaker sort, of which I am one, contribute folly, vanity, and idleness. It seems as if it were the season for vain things when the hurtful oppress us. In a time when doing ill is so common, to do nothing but what signifies nothing is a kind of com-

\* This was a saying of the emperor Galba, in his life by Suetonius, sect. 9. It must be allowed here, either that Montaigne did not quote this from the original, or that his memory failed him; for, if he had meant the emperor Galba, he would not have called him, as he here does, one Galba of old. This is so palpable, that in the edition of his *Essays*, printed at Paris in 1602, by Abel l'Angelier, in that part of the index referring to this passage, care is taken to point out expressly, that the Galba here mentioned is to be distinguished from the emperor of this name.

mendation. It is my comfort, that I shall be one of the last that shall be called to account ; and whilst the greater offenders are taken to task, I shall have leisure to amend ; for it would, methinks, be against reason to prosecute little inconveniences, whilst we are infected with the greater. As the physician, Philotimus, said to one who presented him his finger to dress, and who he perceived, both by his complexion and his breath, had an ulcer in his lungs : “ Friend,” said he, “ this is not a time for you to “ be paring your nails.”\*

And yet I saw, some years ago, a person whose memory I have in very great esteem, who in the very height of our great disorders, when there was neither law nor justice, nor magistrate that performed his office, any more than there is now, published I know not what pitiful reformations about clothes, cookery, and chicanery in law. These are amusements wherewith to feed a people that are ill used, to show that they are not totally forgot. Those others do the same, who insist upon a strict prohibition of the forms of speaking, dances, and games, to a people totally abandoned to all sort of execrable vices. It is no time to bathe and clean a man’s self when he is seized with a violent fever. It is for the Spartiates only to fall to combing and curling themselves, when they are just upon the point of running head-long into some extreme danger of their life.

For my part, I have yet a worse custom, that if my shoe go awry, I let my shirt and my cloak do so too ; I scorn to mend myself by halves : when I am in a bad plight, I feed upon mischief ; I abandon myself through despair ; let myself go towards the precipice, and, as the saying is, “ throw the helve “ after the hatchet.” I am obstinate in growing worse, and think myself no more worth my own care ; I am either good or ill throughout. It is a favour

How states-  
men amuse  
the people  
while they  
most abuse  
them.

Montaigne  
wiser and  
more mo-  
derate in  
prosperity  
than adver-  
sity.

\* Plutarch, in his Treatise how to distinguish the Flatterer from the Friend, chap. 31.

to me, that the desolation of this kingdom falls out in the desolation of my age: I am less concerned that my ills be multiplied than that my goods be disturbed. The words I utter in misfortune, are words of spite. My courage sets up its bristles instead of letting them down; and, contrary to others, I am more devout in good than evil fortune, according to the precept of Xenophon, if not according to his reason, and am more ready to turn up my eyes to heaven to return my thanks, than to crave; I am more solicitous to improve my health when I am well, than to recover it when I have lost it. Prosperities are the same discipline and instruction to me, that adversities and persecutions are to others: as if good fortune were inconsistent with a good conscience men never grow good, but in ill fortune. Good fortune is to me a singular spur to modesty and moderation. Entreaty wins me, a menace checks me, favour makes me bend, fear stiffens me.

Change  
pleasing to  
men.

Amongst human conditions this is very common, viz. to be better pleased with strange things than our own, and to love motion and change:

*Ipsa dies ideò nos grato perluit haustu  
Quid permutatis hora recurrit aquis.\**

The sun itself makes the more pleasant tour,  
Because it changes horses every hour.

I have my share. Those who follow the other extreme by being pleased with themselves, who value what they have above all the rest, and conclude no beauty can be greater than what they see, if they are not wiser than we, are really more happy. I do not envy their wisdom, but their good fortune. This greedy appetite for new and unknown things makes me the more desirous of travel: but many more circumstances contribute to it. I am very willing to withdraw from the government of my family. There is, I confess, a kind of convenience

\* Petronius Arbiter. Epig.

in commanding, though it were but in a barn, and to be obeyed by one's servants : but it is too uniform and languishing a pleasure, and is moreover of necessity mixed with many vexatious thoughts ; as one while the poverty and the oppression of your dependance ; another, quarrels amongst neighbours ; another while the encroachment they make upon you afflicts you :

*Aut verberatæ grandine vineæ,  
Fundusque mendax, arbore nunc aquas  
Culpante, nunc torrentia agros  
Sydera, nunc hyemes iniquas.\**

Whether his vines be smit with hail,  
Whether his promis'd harvest fail,  
Perfidious to his toil ;  
Whether his drooping trees complain  
Of angry winter's chilling rain,  
Or stars that parch the soil.

and that God scarce in six months sends a season to the satisfaction of your bailiff ; but that, if it serves the vines, it hurts the meadows :

*Aut nimis torret fervoribus ætherius sol,  
Aut subiti perimunt imbres, gelidæque pruince,  
Flabrâque ventorum violento turbine vexant.†*

Whether the sun, with its too scorching pow'rs,  
Burns up the fruits, or clouds them drown with show'rs ;  
Or, chill'd by too much snow, they soon decay ;  
Or sudden whirlwinds blow them all away.

To which may be added, the new and neat-made shoe of the man of old,‡ that hurts your foot ; and that a stranger does not understand how much it costs you, and what you contribute to maintain that show of order which is seen in your family, and which perhaps you buy too dear.

I came late to the government of a family. They whom nature sent into the world before me, eased

The government  
of a family

\* Horat. lib. iii. ode 1, ver. 25, &c. † Lucret. lib. v. ver 216, &c.

‡ Plutarch's Life of Paulus Æmilius, chap. 3.

more trou-  
blesome  
than hard,  
and littl  
un e sto  
by our au-  
thor.

me of that trouble for a long while: so that I had already taken another turn more suitable to my humour; yet for so much as I have seen, it is an employment more troublesome than difficult. Whoever is capable of any thing else, will easily be capable of that. Had I a mind to be rich, that way would seem too long; I had served my kings, a more profitable traffic than any other. Since I pretend to nothing but the reputation of having got nothing, as I have squandered nothing, conformable to the rest of my life, improper either to do good or ill of any moment; and that I only desire to rub on, I can do it, thanks be to God, without any great attention. At the worst, always prevent poverty by lessening your expense: it is that which I make my great concern, and to live within bounds before necessity compels me. As to the rest, I have sufficiently settled my thoughts to live upon less than I have, and to live contentedly. *Non æstimatione census, verum victu, atque cultu, terminatur pecuniæ modus.\** "It is not by the value of our possessions, but by our diet and clothing that our expenses should be regulated." My real need does not so wholly take up all I have, but misfortune may fasten her teeth without biting me to the quick. My presence, as contemptible as it is, and as little as I know of matters, is of service in my domestic affairs; I employ myself in them, but it goes against the grain, considering also, that while I burn my candle at one end by myself, the other end is not spared.

The ex-  
pense of  
travelling

Journeys do me no harm but only by their expense, which is great, and more than I am well able

\* Cicer. Paradox. vi. cap. 2. Mere common sense demonstrates this to the lowest class of people, who, when they see a purse-proud creature, ridicule him by saying: "If he is so rich, let him dine twice a day." This, though a common sarcasm (in France), contains a wise hint, very little known to most great men, who for want of it are engaged in employing one half of their lives to render the other wretched.

to bear ; being always wont to travel with not only a necessary, but a handsome, equipage. I must make them the shorter and the fewer, and therein I spend but the surplus, and what I have reserved for such purpose, delaying and timing my motion till that be ready. I desire not that the pleasure of going abroad should spoil the pleasure of my being retired at home. On the contrary, I intend they shall nourish and favour one another. Fortune has assisted me in this, that since my principal profession in this life was to live at ease, and rather to have nothing to do than too much, she has spared me the necessity of growing rich, to provide for a multitude of heirs. If there be not enough for one, of that whereof I had so much plenty, at his peril be it ; his imprudence will not deserve that I should wish him any more. Every one, according to the example of Phocion, provides sufficiently for his children, who provides for them so as they bear a resemblance to himself. I should by no means like Crates's way. He left his money in the hand of a banker, with this condition ; that if his children were fools, he should then give it to them ; if witty, he should then distribute it to the foolish among the people. As if fools, for being less capable of living without riches, were more capable of using them. So it is that the damage which is occasioned by my absence, seems not to deserve, so long as I am able to support it, that I should wave the occasions of diverting myself from that troublesome attendance.

There is always something that goes cross. The affairs one while of one house, and then of another, almost distract you. You pry into every thing too near ; your perspicacity hurts you here as well as in other things. I steal away from occasions of vexing myself, and turn from the knowledge of things that go amiss ; and yet cannot I so order it, but that every hour I stumble at something or other that displeases me. And the tricks which they most con-

did not  
keep him  
from it.

Domestic  
affairs are  
always  
teasing.



ceal from me, are those that I best know. Some there are that a man himself must help to conceal, that they may do the less mischief. Vain vexations, vain sometimes, but always vexatious. The smallest and slightest impediments are the most piercing : and as small letters most tire the eyes, so do little affairs the most disturb us. A route of little ills more offend than the violence of any single one, how great soever. Domestic thorns, the more numerous and delicate they are, they prick the deeper ; and without warning, easily surprise us, when we least suspect them. I am no philosopher. Evils oppress me according to their importance, and they import as much according to the form as the matter ; and very often more. I see farther into them than the vulgar, yet I have more patience. Finally, they vex me, if they do not hurt me. Life is a tender thing, and easily disturbed. Since my face looks a little more morose (*Nemo enim resistit sibi cum cæperit impelli* : \* “ For no man recovers himself, after he “ once begins to stoop”), for the most trivial cause imaginable, I irritate that humour, which afterwards nourishes and exasperates itself of its own accord ; attracting and heaping up matter upon matter whereon to feed :

*Stillicidi casum lapidem cavat.* †

A falling drop at last will cave a stone.

*Gutta cavat saxum non vi, sed sæpe cadendo.*

These continual trickling drops corrode and prey upon me. Ordinary inconveniences are never light, they are continual and irreparable ; and when they spring from family-concerns are continual and inseparable. When I consider my affairs at a distance and in gross, I find, perhaps, because my memory is none of the best, that they have improved hitherto beyond my reason and reckoning. Methinks my revenue is greater than it is : the prosperity betrays

\* Seneca, epist. 12.

† Lucret. lib. i. ver. 314.

me : but when I pry more narrowly into the business, and see how all things go separately :

*Tum vero in curas animum diducimus omnes.\**

Then my breast  
Is with innumerable cares oppress'd.

I have a thousand things to desire and to fear. To give them quite over is very easy for me to do : but to look after them without trouble is very hard. It is a miserable thing to be in a place where every thing you see employs and concerns you. And I fancy that I more cheerfully enjoy the pleasures of another man's house, and with freer and purer relish. Diogenes,† according to my humour, answered him who asked what sort of wine he liked best, " That which is not my own."

My father took a delight in building at Montaigne, where he was born ; and in all the management of domestic affairs, I love to follow his examples and rules ; and shall engage those who are to succeed me, as much as in me lies, to do the same. Could I do better for him, I would ; and am proud that his will is still performing and acting by me. God forbid, that I should ever fail in any resemblance of life to so good a father. As I have taken in hand to finish a certain old wall, and to repair a ruinous piece of building, I have really done it more out of respect to his design, than to my own satisfaction ; and am angry at myself, for being so lazy that I have not proceeded farther to finish what he began in his house ; and the more, because I am very likely to be the last possessor of my race, and to give the last hand to it. For, as to my own particular application, neither this pleasure of building, which they say is so bewitching, nor hunting, nor gardens, nor the other pleasures of a retired life, are capable of giving me much amusement. And it is what I am

\* Virg. *Æn.* lib. v. ver. 720.

† Diog. Laert. in the Life of Diogenes the Cynic, lib. vi. sect. 34.

angry at myself for, as I am for all other opinions that are incommodious to me ; which I would not so much care to have vigorous and learned, as I would have them easy and convenient for life. They are true and sound enough, if they are profitable and pleasing. Such as, hearing me declare my ignorance in husbandry, whisper in my ear, that it is out of disdain that I neglect to know the instruments of husbandry, its season and order ; how they cultivate my vines, how they graft, and to know the names and forms of herbs and fruit, and the dressing the meat by which I live, with the names and prices of the stuffs I wear, because I have set my heart upon some sublimer knowledge, hurt me in saying so. This is folly, and rather stupidity than glory ; I had rather be a good horseman than a good logician :

*Quin tu aliquid saltem potius quorum indiget usus,  
Viminibus mollique paras detexere junco ?\**

Mind rather what the wants of life demand ;  
To weaving willow twigs apply thy hand.

We embarrass our thoughts about the general concern, and about universal causes and effects, which are very well carried on without us, and leave our own business behind, with the care of our own persons, which are nearer to us, than that of any man whatever. Now I am indeed for the most part at home, and wish to be better pleased there than elsewhere :

*Sit meæ sedes utinam senectæ,  
Sit modus lasso maris, et viarum,  
Militiæque.†*

May that which was the Grecian's seat  
Afford my age a calm retreat ;  
Be it my port of rest and ease,  
From warfare, journeys, and rough seas.

I know not whether or no I shall bring it about ; I could wish, that instead of some other parcel of his

\* Virg. eclog. ii. ver. 71.

† Horat. lib. ii. ode 6, ver. 6.

estate, my father had consigned to me the passionate affection he had in his old age to his economy. He was happy in that he could accommodate his desires to his fortune, and satisfy himself with what he had. State-philosophy may to much purpose condemn the meanness and sterility of my employment, if I can once come to relish it as he did. I am of opinion, that the most honourable calling is to serve the public, and to be useful to many. *Fructus enim ingenii, et virtutis, omnisque præstantiæ, tum maximus accipitur, quum in proximum quemque confertur.*\* “We reap most advantage from wit, virtue, and all sorts of merit, when every one of our nearest relations has a share of it.” For my part, I quit all claim to it; partly out of laziness, and partly out of conscience; for where I see the weight that lies upon such employments, I perceive also the little means I have to contribute to them; and Plato, who was a master in all political government, nevertheless abstained from them. I content myself with enjoying the world without being perplexed with it, and only to live an irreproachable life, and such a one as may neither be a burden to myself, nor to any other.

Never did any man more full and freely resign himself to the care and government of a third person, than I would do, had I any one to trust in. One of my wishes at this time would be, to have a son-in-law that knew how to humour my old age, and to lull it asleep; into whose hands I might deposit the chief and sole management and use of all my goods, that he might dispose of them as I do, and get by them what I get, provided that he had a heart truly grateful and friendly. But, what shall we say, we live in a world where loyalty in one’s own children is unknown.

He that has the charge of my purse upon travel, has it purely, and without control; so that he

His wish that he could abandon himself to the government of some trusty friend.

He loved to repose a confidence

\* Cicero de Amicitia, cap. 19.

in his do- might easily deceive me in reckoning ; and, if he  
mestics. is not a devil, I oblige him to be honest, by so en-  
tire a trust : *Multi fallere docuerunt, dum timent  
falli, et aliis jus peccandi suspicando fecerunt.\**  
“ Many have taught others to deceive, by fearing  
“ to be deceived ; and by suspecting them, have  
“ given them a handle to be unjust.” The most  
common security I take of my people, is their igno-  
rance : I never suspect any to be vicious till I have  
found them so, and repose the most confidence in the  
younger sort, who I think are least corrupted by  
bad examples. I had rather be told at two months  
end, that I have expended four hundred crowns,  
than to have my ears dinned every night with three,  
five, and seven ; and yet I have suffered as little as  
any body by this kind of larceny. It is true, I am  
willing enough not to know it ; I do, in some sort in  
good earnest, harbour a kind of perplexed, uncer-  
tain knowledge of my money ; for to a certain pro-  
portion, I am content with room to doubt. One  
must leave a little for the infidelity or indiscretion  
of a servant : if we have enough in gross to do our  
business, let the overplus of fortune’s liberality run  
a little more freely at her mercy ; it is the gleaner’s  
perquisite. After all, I do not so much value the  
fidelity of my people, as I condemn their injury.  
What a vile and ridiculous thing it is for a man to  
set his heart on his money, to delight himself with  
handling and telling it ! That is the way by which  
avarice makes it approaches.

He avoided an inspec- In eighteen years that I have had my estate in my  
tion into own hands, I could never prevail with myself, either  
his own af- to inspect my deeds, or my principal affairs, which  
fairs by ought of necessity to pass through my knowledge  
mere negli- and care. It is not a philosophical disdain of worldly  
gence. and transitory things. My taste is not refined to  
that degree ; and I value them at least at what they  
are worth : but it is in truth an inexcusable and

\* Seneca, epist. 3.

childish laziness and negligence. What would I not rather do than read a covenant, and sooner than be a slave to my own business, and to tumble over a bundle of old musty deeds? or, which is worse, those of another man, as so many do now a-days to get money? I grudge nothing but care and trouble, and aim at nothing so much as to be quite careless and indolent. I was much fitter, I believe, could it have been without obligation and servitude, to have lived upon another man's fortune: yet I do not know, when I examine it nearer, whether, according to my humour, what I suffer from my affairs, and servants, and domestics, has not in it something more abject, troublesome, and tormenting, than there would be in serving a man better born than myself, who would guide me with a gentle rein, and a little at my own ease. *Servitus obedientia est fracti animi, et abjecti, arbitrio carentis suo* : \* “ Servitude is the obedience of a broken spirit and an “ abject mind, wanting its own free-will.” Crates Poverty affected by Crates. did worse, who threw himself into the franchise of poverty, only to rid himself of the inconveniences and cares of his family. This is what I would not do; I hate poverty equally with pain; but I could be content to change the kind of life I live for another that was meaner, and had less business. When absent from home, I stripped myself of all such thoughts; and would be less concerned for the ruin of a tower, than I am, when present, at the fall of a tile. My mind is easily composed when I am at a distance, but suffers as much as that of the meanest peasant at what happens in the place where I am. The reins of my bridle being wrong placed, or a strap flapping against my leg, will put me out of humour a day together. I raise my courage well enough against inconveniences, lift up my eyes I cannot.

*Sensus, ô superi, sensus.*

\* Cicero, paradox. v. cap. 4.

P

The senses ! O ye gods, the senses !

I am at home responsible for whatever goes amiss. Few masters, I speak of those of middle rank, as mine is (and if there be any such, they are happy), can rely so much upon another, but that great part of the burden will lie upon their own shoulders. This takes much from my grace in entertaining strangers, so that I have perhaps detained some rather out of expectation of a good dinner, than by my behaviour ; and I lose much of the pleasure I ought to reap at my own house, from the visits and company of my friends. The most ridiculous carriage of a gentleman in his own house, is when he is bustling about the business of the family, whispering one servant, and frowning at another. It ought insensibly to slide on like a gentle stream ; and I think it equally unhandsome to talk much to their guests of their entertainment, whether by way of bragging or excuse. I love order and cleanliness,

*Et cantharus, et lanx  
Ostendunt mihi me.\**

Glasses well rins'd, my table always grace,  
And dishes shine, in which I see my face.

more than profusion : and at home have an exact regard to necessity, little to outward show. If a footman falls to cuffs at another man's house, or if a dish be spilled, you only laugh at it. You sleep whilst the master of the house is stating a bill of fare with his steward, for your next day's entertainment. I speak according as I do myself, esteeming nevertheless good husbandry in general, considering how pleasant an amusement a quiet and happy management, carried regularly on, is to some natures ; and not willing to annex my own errors and inconveniences to the thing, nor to contradict Plato, who looks upon it as the most pleasant employment for every one to do his own business, without wrong to

\* Horat. lib. i. epist. 5, ver. 23, 24,

another. When I travel, I have nothing to care for but myself, and the laying out of my money; which is disposed of by one single precept.

Too many things are required to the raking it together, of which I have no notion; in spending it I understand a little, and how to give my expenses a reputation, which is indeed their principal use. But I rely too vainly upon this which renders it unequal and unfashionable, and moreover immoderate, in both views. If it makes a show, if it serve the turn, I indiscreetly let it run, and as indiscreetly tie up my purse-strings if it does not shine and please me. Whatever it be, whether art or nature, that imprints in us the condition of living to please others, it does us much more harm than good. We deprive ourselves of our own profit, to accommodate appearances to the common opinion. We care not so much what our being is, as to ourselves, and in reality, as what it is in the public observation. Even the talents of wit, and wisdom itself, seem fruitless to us, if only enjoyed by ourselves, and if it produce not itself to the view and approbation of others. There is a sort of men whose gold runs in clusters imperceptibly under-ground; others expend it all in plates and leaves, so that to the one a liard\* is worth a crown, and others the reverse: the world esteeming its use and value, according to the display of it. All curious solicitude about riches smells of avarice: even the very disposing of it with a too punctual and artificial liberality, is not worth a painful thought. He that will order his expense to just so much, makes it too pinched and narrow. The saving or spending money are of themselves indifferent things, and receive no colour of good or ill, but according to the application of the will.

The other cause that tempts me to these journeys, is a nonconformity to the present manners of our

Montaigne not at all inclined to hoard money, but knew how to lay it out.

The depraved morals of

\* A piece of copper money worth three farthings.



his coun-  
try, an-  
other mo-  
tive of  
Mon-  
taigne's  
travelling.

state; I could easily put up with this corruption for the sake of the public interest,

*Pejoraque sæcula ferri  
Temporibus, quorum sceleri non invenit ipsa  
Nomen, et à nullo posuit natura metallo.\**

Worse than the iron age, so bad these times !  
Nature no metal hath to name our crimes.

but not for my own. I am in particular too much oppressed. For in my neighbourhood we are of late, by the long licentiousness of our civil wars, grown old in so riotous a form of state,

*Quippe, ubi fas versus atque nefas.†*

Where impious mortals right and wrong confound.

that in earnest, it is a wonder how it can subsist :

*Armati terram exercent, semperque recentes  
Convectare juvat prædas, et vivere rapto.‡*

With arms upon their backs they plow the soil,  
And their delight is to subsist by spoil.

In fine, I see by our example, that the society of men is maintained and held together at any price : in what condition soever they are placed they will still close and stick together, both moving and in heaps ; as uneven bodies that, shuffled together without order, find of themselves a means to unite and settle one among another, often better than they could have been disposed by art. King Philip mustered up a rabble of the most wicked and incorrigible rascals he could pick out, and put them all together into a city he had caused to be built for that purpose,§ which bore their name. I reckon that they even from the vices erected a government amongst themselves, and a commodious and just society. I see not one action, either three, or a hundred, but manners, in common and received use, so cruel,

\* Juven. sat. 13, ver. 28, &c.

† Geo. lib. i. ver. 504.

‡ Virg. Æn. lib. vii. ver. 748.

§ Πονηροπολις, or Rogues-town. Plin. Nat. Hist. lib. iv. cap. 11.

especially in inhumanity and treachery, which are to me the worst of all vices, that I have not the heart to think of them without horror; and almost as much admire as I detest them. The exercise of these notorious villanies carries as great signs of vigour and fortitude of mind, as of error and disorder. Necessity reconciles and brings men together; and this accidental union is afterwards cemented by itself into laws: for there have been as savage ones as any human opinion could conceive, which nevertheless have maintained their body with as much health and length of life as any that Plato or Aristotle could invent. And certainly all these descriptions of civil government, feigned by art, are found to be ridiculous, and unfit for practice.

These great and tedious debates about the best form of society, and the most commodious rules to bind us, are debates only proper for the exercise of our wits; as in the arts there are several subjects which have their being in agitation and controversy, and have no life but there. Such an idea of government might be of some value in a new world; but ours is a world ready made to our hands, and formed to certain customs. We do not beget it as Pyrrha or Cadmus did theirs. By what means soever we may claim the privilege to set it to rights, and give it a new form, we can hardly twist it from its wonted bent, but we shall break all. Solon being asked, whether he had established the best laws he could for the Athenians; "Yes," said he, "of those they could receive." Varro excuses himself after the same manner, that if they were to begin to write of religion, he would say what he believed; but it being already received, he would write more according to usance than nature. Not according to opinion, but in truth and reality, the best and most excellent government for every nation is that under which it is maintained. Its form and essential convenience depends upon custom. We are apt to be displeased at the present condition; but I neverthe-

The drift of all disputes about the best form of government.

less maintain, that to desire an oligarchy in a popular state, or another sort of government in a monarchy than that already established, is both vice and folly :

*Ayme l'estat tel que tu le vois estre ;  
S'il est royal ayme la royauté,  
S'il est de peu, ou bien communauté,  
Ayme l'aussi, car dieu t'y a faict naistre.\**

Approve the government, whate'er it be ;  
If regal, praise it in the first degree ;  
Or if 'tis form'd on democratic sway,  
Thou owest still th' allegiance to obey.

So wrote the good Monsieur de Pybrac, whom we have lately lost, a man of so excellent a wit, so sound opinions, and so sweet a behaviour. This loss, and that at the same time we have had of Monsieur de Foix, are of so great importance to the crown, that I do not know whether there is another couple left in France worthy to supply the room of these two Gascons for sincerity and wisdom, in our king's council. They were both great geniuses, and certainly, according to the age, rare and excellent, each of them in his way. But what destiny was it placed, in these times, men so remote from, and so disproportioned to, our corruptions and intestine tumults ?

Nothing is more dangerous to a state than a great change.

Nothing presses so hard upon a state as innovation: change only gives form to justice and tyranny. When any piece is out of its place, it may be propt; one may obviate the alteration and corruption natural to all things lest they carry us too far from our beginnings and principles: but to undertake to new mould so great a mass, and to change the foundations of so vast a building, is for them to do, who, to make clean, rub all out; who are for reforming particular defects by an universal confusion, and for curing diseases by death: *Non tam commutandarum quam exertendarum rerum cupidi*:†  
“ Not so desirous of changing, as of overthrowing

\* Pybrac aux quadrins.

† Ciccr. Offic. lib. ii. cap. 1.

“ things.” The world is incapable to cure itself; and so impatient of any thing that presses it, that it thinks of nothing but disengaging itself, cost what it will. We see by a thousand examples, that it ordinarily cures itself to its cost: the discharge of a present evil is no cure, if there be not a general amendment of condition. The surgeon’s end is not to deaden the bad flesh, which is but the beginning of his cure; his view is likewise to fill up the wound with natural flesh, and to restore the member to its due state. Whoever only proposes to himself to remove that which offends him, falls short, for good does not necessarily succeed evil; another evil may succeed, and a worse, as happened to Cæsar’s assassins, who brought the republic to such a pass, that they had reason to repent their having a hand in it. The same has since happened to several others, even down to our own times. The French, my contemporaries, know it well enough. All great changes shake and disorder a state.

Whoever would aim directly at a cure, and con- sider of it before he begun, would not be so earnest to attempt it. Pacuvius Calavius corrected the vice of this proceeding by a notable example. His fellow citizens having mutinied against their magistrates, he, being a man of great authority in the city of Capua, found means one day to shut up the senators in the palace, and calling the people together in the square, he told them, that the day was now come, wherein they were at full liberty to revenge themselves on the tyrants by whom they had been so long oppressed; and whom he had now all alone, and disarmed at his mercy: advising also, that they would call them out severally by lot; and particularly determine of each; causing whatever should be decreed to be immediately executed;\* with this caution that they should at the same instant depute

Remark-  
able in-  
stance of  
the diffi-  
culty that  
attends the  
reforma-  
tion of a  
state.

\* All this is mentioned in Titus Livius, lib. xxiii. cap. 2, 3, and touched as I think by a masterly hand.

some honest man in the place of him that was condemned, to the end there might be no vacancy in the senate. They had no sooner heard the name of one senator, but a clamour of universal dislike was raised against him. I see, says Pacuvius, that this man must be put out; he is a wicked fellow, let us look out a good one in his room: immediately there was a profound silence, every one being at a stand whom to choose. But one, more impudent than the rest, having named his man, there arose yet a greater consent of voices against him, a hundred imperfections being laid to his charge, and as many just reasons presently given for rejecting him. These contradictory humours growing hot, it fared still worse with the second senator and the third, there being as much disagreement in the election of the new, as there was consent in the putting out of the old. In the end, growing weary of this bustle to no purpose, they began some one way, and some another, to steal out of the assembly; every one bearing this resolution in his mind, that the oldest and best known evil was ever more supportable, than one that was new and untried.

Governments stand  
their  
ground  
though  
very much  
shattered.

To see how miserably we are torn in pieces :

For what have we not done ?

*Eheu cicatricum, et sceleris pudet,  
Fratrumque : quid nos dura refugimus  
Ætas ? quid intactum nefasti  
Liquimus ? Unde manus juvenus  
Metu deorum continuuit ? Quibus  
Pepercit aris ?\**

Alas ! the shameless scars ! the guilty deeds,  
When by a brother's hand a brother bleeds !  
What crimes have we, a harden'd age, not dar'd ?  
What sacred altars have our rash youth spar'd ?  
Not by the fear of heaven's wrath debarr'd.

I do not presently conclude in the style of a prophet :

\* Her. lib. i. ode 35, ver. 33.

*Ipsa si velit salus,  
Servare prorsus non potest hanc familiam.\**

This family does so behave  
That providence them cannot save.

We are not however perhaps at the last gasp. The preservation of states is a thing that, in all likelihood, surpasses our understanding. A civil government is, as Plato says, a mighty thing, and so hard to be dissolved, that it holds out many times against mortal and intestine diseases, against the injury of unjust laws, against tyranny, the extravagance and ignorance of magistrates, and the licentiousness and sedition of the people. We compare ourselves in all our fortunes to what is above us, and still look towards our betters: but let us measure ourselves with what is below us, there is no one so miserable but he may find a thousand examples that will administer consolation to him. It is our vice that we more unwillingly look upon what is above, than willingly on what is below us; and Solon was used to say, that were we to make a heap of all evils together, there is no person who would not rather choose to bear with those which he suffers, than to come to an equal division with all other men from that heap, and take his particular share. Our government is indeed sick, but there have been others sicker, without dying. The gods play at tennis with us, and bandy us every way. *Enim vero dii nos homines quasi pilas habent.\**

The stars have fatally destined the state of Rome for an example of what they could do in this kind: in it are comprised all the forms and adventures that concern a state; all that order or disorder, good or evil fortune can do. Who then can despair of his condition, seeing the shocks and commotions where-with she was tossed, and yet supported them all? If the extent of dominion be the health of a state,

*Witness the  
Roman em-  
pire, and  
its divers  
forms.*

\* Ter. Adel. act. 4, sc. 7, ver. 43.

† The words of Plautus in his prologue to the Captives, ver. 22.

which I by no means think it is (and Isocrates pleases me, when he instructs Nicocles not to envy princes who have large dominions,\* but them who know how to preserve those that fall into their hands), that of Rome was never so sound, as when it was most sick: the worst of her forms was the most fortunate. A man can hardly discern any image of government under the first emperors; it was the most horrible and gross confusion that can be imagined. It supported it notwithstanding, and therein continued, preserving a monarchy not limited within its own bounds, but so many nations, so differing, so remote, so ill-affected, so irregularly commanded, and so unjustly conquered:

————— *Nec gentibus ullis.*  
*Commodat in populum, terræ pelagique potentem,*  
*Invidiam fortuna suam.†*

No foreign potentates did fortune yet  
 Inspire with envy against Rome so great,  
 That over kingdoms, and their mighty kings,  
 O'er land and seas she stretch'd her eagle's wings.

Every thing that totters does not tumble. The texture of so great a body holds by more nails than one. It holds even by its antiquity, like old buildings, from which the foundations are worn away by time, without rough-cast or mortar, which yet live and support themselves by their own weight:

———— *Nec jam validis radicibus hærens,*  
*Pondere tuta suo est.‡*

Like an old lofty oak, that heretofore  
 Great conquests' spoils, and sacred trophies bore.

Montaigne  
 very rati-  
 onally  
 concludes  
 from the  
 general  
 corruption  
 of the states  
 of Europe

Moreover, to discover only the flank and the graff, is not the right way. In order to judge of the security of a place, it must be examined which way approaches can be made to it, and in what condition the assailant is. Few vessels sink with their own weight, and without some exterior violence.

\* Isocrates ad Nicoclem, p. 34.

† Lucan. lib. i. ver. 82.

‡ Idem, ibid. ver. 138.

Let us cast our eyes where we will, every thing <sup>that France</sup> about us totters : look into all the great states, both <sup>may be</sup> of Christendom and elsewhere, that are known to us, <sup>able to</sup> you will there see evident menaces of alteration and <sup>stand her</sup> ruin : <sup>ground.</sup>

*Et sua sunt illis inconmoda, parque per omnes  
Tempestas.\**

They all promiscuous in misfortunes share,  
And the rude tempest rages everywhere.

Astrologers may very well, as they do, warn us of great revolutions, and approaching changes : their starry prophesies are present and palpable, they need not look up to heaven to foretel this. There is not only consolation to be extracted from this universal combination of ills and menaces, but, moreover, some hopes of the continuation of our state ; forasmuch as naturally nothing falls, where all does. An universal sickness is particular health : conformity is an enemy to dissolution. For my part, I despair not, and fancy that I discover ways to save us :

*Deus hæc fortasse benigna  
Reducet in sedem vice.†*

The gods perhaps with gracious sway  
Will soon restore the happy day.

Who knows but that God will have it happen, as in human bodies that are purged, and recover a better state of health by long and grievous maladies ? What weighs the most with me, is, that in reckoning the symptoms of our ill, I see as many natural ones, and such as heaven sends us, and that are properly its own, as of those that are owing to our irregularity and imprudence. The very stars seem to declare, that we have continued long enough, and beyond the ordinary term : and this also afflicts me, that the nearest mischief which threatens us, is not an alteration in the entire and solid mass, but its dissipation and divulsion ; the greatest of all our fears.

\* Virg. *Æneid.* 11.

† Horat. *Epod.* ode 13, ver. 10.



Repetition  
disagree-  
able.

I moreover fear lest, in these ravings of mine, the treachery of my memory should through inadvertence make me write the same thing twice. I hate to examine myself; and never review, but with an ill-will, what has once escaped my pen. I here set down nothing new of instruction. These are common thoughts; and having perhaps conceived them a hundred times, I am afraid I have set them down somewhere else already. Repetition is every where disgusting, though it were in Homer; but much more in things that have only a superficial and transitory show. I do not love inculcation, even in useful things, as in Seneca. Neither the custom of the Stoical school, to repeat upon every subject at length, the general principles and suppositions, and always to advance common and universal reasons.

Our au-  
thor's trea-  
cherous  
memory.

My memory grows worse every day :

*Pocula Lethæos ut si ducentia somnos  
Arente fauce traxerim.\**

Apt to let slip my argument or theme,  
As if I had drank deep of Lethe's stream.

Though hitherto, thanks be to God, no difficulty has happened; and though others seek time and opportunity to think of what they have to say, I must for the future avoid all such preparation, for fear of tying myself to some indispensable obligation. To be tied and bound to a thing, and to depend upon so weak an instrument as my memory, puts me quite out : I never read this following story, but I am offended at it with a proper and natural resentment. Lyncestes, accused of conspiracy against Alexander, the day that he was brought before the army, according to custom, to be heard what he could say for himself, had prepared a studied speech,† of which, with hesitation and trembling, he pronounced some words; but still more perplexed, whilst he was struggling with his memory, and recol-

\* Horat. Epod. ode xiv. ver. 3.

† Q. Curt. lib. vii. cap. 1.

lecting what he had to say, the soldiers who were nearest levelled their pikes at him, and killed him, looking upon him as guilty. His astonishment and silence they judged as a confession. For having had so much leisure to prepare himself in prison, they concluded that it was not his memory that failed him, but that his conscience hampered his tongue, and stopped his speech. This was very justly inferred. The place, the spectators, and the expectation, astonish him, even at the time when it was incumbent on him to speak the best he could. What can a man do, when his life is dependant on his oratory?

For my part, the very being tied to what I am to say is enough to make me lose hold of it. When I wholly commit and refer myself to my memory, I lay so much stress upon it, that it sinks under me, and startles at the burden. So much as I trust to it, so much do I put myself out of my own power, even so as to know what countenance to put on; and have been sometimes very much put to it to conceal the slavery wherein I was shackled; when at the time my design was to manifest in speaking a perfect negligence both of face and accent, and to show casual and unpremeditated motions, as rising from present occasions; choosing rather to say nothing to the purpose, than to show that I came prepared to speak well; a thing especially unbecoming a man of my profession, and a thing of too great obligation upon him that cannot retain much; the preparation is far short of producing the expected effect. A man oft strips himself to his doublet to leap no farther than he would have done in his gown. *Nihil est his qui placere volunt, tam adversarium, quam expectatio*.\* “Nothing is so mortifying to those who are desirous to please, as raising an expectation of them before-hand.” It is recorded of the orator Curio,† that when he proposed the division of his

Even when  
he had  
learned a  
speech by  
heart.

\* Cic. Acad. lib. iv. cap. 4.

† Cicero, in lib. de claris Oratoribus, cap. 60.

oration into three or four parts, it often happened, either that he forgot some one, or added one or two more. I have always avoided falling into this inconvenience, out of a hatred to these promises and prescriptions, not only from a distrust of my memory, but also because this method relishes too much of the artist. *Simpliciora militares decent.* It is enough that in the mind I am in at present, I will never more take upon me to speak in a place of respect; for as to speaking, when a man reads his speech, besides that it is very absurd, it is a mighty disadvantage to those who naturally could give it a grace by action; and much less will I throw myself upon the mercy of my present invention; it is heavy and perplexed, and such as would never furnish me in sudden and important necessities.

He is ready enough to make additions to his book, but not corrections.

Permit, reader, this essay its course also, and this third sitting to finish the rest of my picture. I add, but I correct not; first, because I conceive, that a man, having once made a transfer of his labours to the world, has no farther right to them; let him do better if he can in some new undertaking, but not adulterate what he has already sold; of such dealers nothing should be bought till after they are dead: let them well consider what they do, before they produce them to the light. Who hastens them? My book is always the same, saving that upon every new edition (that the buyer may not go away quite empty handed) I take the liberty to add, as it were by an ill-jointed inlaying, some few supernumerary things. They are no other but over-weight, that do not disfigure the primitive form of those essays, but by a little ambitious subtlety, give a kind of particular repute to every one that follows. From thence however there will easily happen some transposition of chronology; my stories taking place according to their fitness, and not always according to the age. Secondly, because that for what concerns myself, I fear to lose by the change: my understanding does not always go forward, it goes backward too. I do

not much less suspect my fancies for being the second or third, than for being the first, either present, or past; we oft correct ourselves as foolishly as we do others. I am grown older by a great many years since my first publications, which were in the year 1580: but I very much doubt whether I am grown an inch the wiser. I now, and I anon, are two several persons; but whether the better, now or anon, I am not able to determine. It were a fine thing to be old, if we only travelled towards improvement; but it is a drunken, stumbling, reeling, ill-favoured motion, like that of reeds, which the air casually waves to and fro as it lists.

Antiochus had in his youth written strenuously in favour of the academy,\* but in his old age he wrote as much against it: which of these two soever I should follow, would not be still Antiochus? After having established the uncertainty, to go about to establish the certainty of human opinions, was it not to establish doubt, and not certainty, and to promise that had he yet another age to live, he would be always upon terms of altering his judgment, not so much for the better, as for something else? The public favour has given me a little more confidence than I expected; but what I most fear, is, lest I should glut the world with my writings: I had rather of the two spur my reader than tire him, as a learned man of my time has done. Praise is always pleasing, let it come from whom, or upon what account it will; yet ought a man to understand why he is commended, that he may be self-consistent. The vulgar and common esteem is seldom right; and I am mistaken, if, amongst the writings of my time, the worst are not those which have most gained the popular applause. For my part, I return my thanks to those good-natured men, who are pleased to take my weak endeavours in good part. The faults of the workmanship are no where so apparent, as in a

The writings of Antiochus corrected by himself in his more mature age.

\* Cicero. Acad. Quest. lib. iv. cap. 22.

Orthogra-  
phy and  
pointing  
despised.

matter which of itself has no recommendation. Blame me not, reader, for those that slip in here, by the fancy or inadvertency of others; every hand, every artizan, contribute their own materials. I neither concern myself with orthography (and only direct it after the old way) nor pointing, being very inexpert both in the one and the other. Where they wholly break the sense, I am very little concerned, for they at least discharge me; but where they substitute a false one, as they so often do, and wrest me to their conception, they ruin me. When the sentence nevertheless is not strong enough in proportion to my poor ability, a civil person ought to reject it as none of mine. Whoever knows how lazy I am, and how indulgent to my own humour, will easily believe that I had rather write as many more essays, than be tied to revise these for so puerile a correction.

Montaigne  
very much  
exposed at  
his own  
house to  
the insults  
of his  
neighbours  
during the  
civil wars.

I was saying elsewhere, that being planted in the deepest mine of this new metal, i. e. the very centre of this new religion, I am not only deprived of any great familiarity with men of other kind of manners than my own, and of other opinions, by which they hold together, as by a tie that supersedes all other obligations; but I even do not live without danger, amongst men to whom all things are equally lawful, and of whom the most part cannot offend the laws more than they have already done; from whence the greatest degree of licentiousness does proceed. All the particular circumstances respecting me being considered, I do not find one man of my country, who pays so dear for the defence of our laws both in cost and damages (to use the phrase of the lawyers) as myself. And some there are who brag of their ardour and zeal, that, if things were justly weighed, do much less than I. My house, as one that has ever been free to all comers, and at the service of all (for I could never be induced to make a garrison of it, which is most desired when the war is farthest off), has sufficiently merited the popular regard, so that it would be a hard matter to insult over me upon

my own dung-hill ; and I look upon it as a wonderful and exemplary thing, that it yet continues a virgin free from blood and plunder during so long a storm, and so many revolutions and tumults in the neighbourhood. For to confess the truth, it had been possible enough, for a man of my complexion, to have quitted any one constant and continued form whatever. But the invasions and incursions, alterations and vicissitudes of fortune round about me, have hitherto more exasperated than mollified the humour of the country, and involve me in fresh difficulties and dangers that are invincible.

I escape it is true, but am troubled that it is more by chance, and something of my own prudence, than by justice, and am not satisfied to be out of the protection of the laws, and under any other safeguard than theirs. As matters stand, I live above one-half by the favour of others, which is an untoward obligation. I do not like to owe my safety either to the generosity or affection of great persons, who concur in my legality and liberty, or to the obliging manners of my predecessors, or my own. For what if I was another kind of man ? If my deportment, and the frankness of my conversation oblige my neighbours or relations, it is cruel that they should acquit themselves of that obligation, in only permitting me to live ; and that they should say, “ We allow him the free liberty of having divine service read in his own private chapel, all the churches round about being destroyed, and grant him the use of his goods, and the fruition of his life, as one that protects our wives and cattle in time of need.” For my house has for many descents shared in the reputation of Lycurgus, the Athenian, who was the general trustee and treasurer of his fellow-citizens.\* Now I am clearly of opi-

*How disagreeable this sort of dependency was to him.*

*Lycurgus the general trustee for all his fellow-citizens.*

\* Plutarch, in the Lives of the ten Orators, of whom Lycurgus was the seventh, chap. 1.

nion, that a man should live by his own right and authority, and not either by recompense or favour. How many gallant men have rather chose to lose life, than to owe it? I hate to subject myself to any sort of obligation, but above all to the dues of honour. I think nothing so expensive to me as what is given me, and that because my will lies at pawn under the title of gratitude, and more willingly accept of offices that are to be sold; being really of opinion, that for the last I give nothing but money, but for the other I give myself.

The obligations of probity, as well as promises, to be strictly observed.

The tie that holds me by the laws of courtesy, binds me, I think, more than that of legal constraint; and I am much more at ease when bound by a scrivener, than by myself. Is it not reason that my conscience should be much more engaged when men simply reply upon it? In a bond, my faith owes nothing because it has nothing lent it. Let them trust to the faith and security they have taken, which is not mine; I had much rather break the wall of a prison, and the laws themselves, than my probity and word: I am nice, even to superstition, in keeping my promises, and therefore upon all occasions have a care to make them uncertain and conditional. To those of no great moment, I add the jealousy of my own rule to make it weight; it racks and oppresses me with its own interest. Even in actions that are wholly my own, and free, if I once say it, I conceive that I have bound myself, and that, delivering it to the knowledge of another, I have positively enjoined it to my own performance. Methinks I promise it, if I but say it, and therefore am not apt to say much of that kind. The sentence that I pass upon myself is sharper and more severe than that of a judge, who only considers it in the light of a common obligation; but my conscience looks upon it with a more severe and penetrating eye. I lag in those duties to which I should be compelled if I did not go. *Hoc ipsum ita justum est quod recte fit, si est*

*voluntarium* :\* “ Even that which is well done, is “ only just, when it is voluntary.” If the action has not some splendor of liberty, it has neither grace nor honour.

*Quod me jus cogit, vix voluntate impetrent.*†

That which the laws have power to constrain,  
They from my will would hardly e'er obtain.

Where necessity draws me, I love to let my will take its own course. *Quia quicquid imperio cogitur, exigenti magis quam præstanti acceptum refertur* : “ For whatever is compelled by power, is more “ ascribed to him that exacts, than to him that performs it.” I know some who follow this rule, even to injustice, who will sooner give than restore, sooner lend than pay, and will do those the least good to whom they are most obliged. I am of a quite contrary humour.

I so much love to disengage and release myself, that I have sometimes looked upon the ingratitude, affronts, and indignities, which I have received from those, to whom either by nature or accident I was bound in some duty of friendship, as an advantage to me, taking this occasion of their ill-usage for an acquittance and discharge of so much of my debt. And though I still continue to pay them all the apparent offices of common civility, I notwithstanding find myself very sparing of doing that upon the account of justice, which I did upon the score of affection, and am a little eased of my former attention and solicitude by my inward will. *Est prudentis sustinere ut cursum, sic impetum benevolentie* ;‡ “ It “ is the part of a wise man to keep as tight a curb “ upon the heat of his friendship, as upon the fury “ of his horse ;” my friendship being too urging and pressing where I take, at least for a man who loves not to be importuned. And this husbanding

\* Cicero de Offic. lib. i. cap. 9.

† Ter. Adel. act. iii. scen. 5, ver. 44, of Dacier's edit.

‡ Cicero de Amicitia, cap. 17.



my friendship serves me for a sort of consolation in the imperfections of those with whom I am concerned. I am sorry they are the less to be valued for it; but so it is, that I also diminish in my application and engagement towards them. I approve of a man that is the less fond of his child for having a scald-head or being crooked, and not only when he is ill-natured, but also when he is unhappy and base-born (for God himself has made abatement from his value and natural estimation), provided he carry himself in this coldness of affection with moderation and exact justice. Proximity lessens not defects with me, but rather makes them greater.

Why he is  
for dis-  
pensing  
with his  
acknow-  
ledgments  
even to-  
wards  
princes.

After all, according to what I understand in the science of benefits and acknowledgment (which is a subtle science, and of great use), I know no person whatever more free and less indebted than I am at this hour. What I do owe, is simply to common and natural obligations; as to any thing else, no man is more absolutely clear :

————— *Nec sunt mihi nota potentum*  
*Munera.\** —————

Nor did I e'er take gifts from men in pow'r.

Princes give me enough, if they take nothing from me; and do me good enough, if they do me no harm; that is all I ask of them. Oh, how am I obliged to Almighty God, who has been pleased that I should receive all I have immediately from his bounty, and particularly reserved all my obligation to himself! How earnestly do I beg of his divine mercy, that I may never owe real thanks to any one! O happy liberty wherein I have hitherto lived! May it continue with me to the last. I endeavour to have no absolute need of any one. *In me omnis spes est mihi*:† “All my hope is in myself.” This is what every one may be able to place in him-

\* Virg. *Æn.* lib. xii. ver. 519.

† Ter. *Adolph.* act. iii. sc. 5, ver. 9.

self, but more easily they whom God has sheltered from natural and urgent necessities. It is a wretched and dangerous thing to depend upon another. Ourselves, on whom is our most just and safest dependance, are not sufficiently assured. I have nothing mine but myself, and yet the possession is in part defective and borrowed. I fortify myself both in courage, which is the strongest assistant,\* and also in fortune, therein to satisfy myself, though every thing else should forsake me. Eleus Hippias† not only furnished himself with science, that he might at need cheerfully retire from all other company to enjoy the Muses, nor with the knowledge of philosophy only to teach his soul to be contented with it, and bravely to subsist without external conveniences, when fate would have it so; he was, besides, so curious as to learn cookery, to shave himself, to make his own clothes, his own shoes and drawers, and, as far as possible, to rely upon himself, and to

\* In the fourth edition of 1588, when this third volume was first published, Montaigne only says, "I cultivate and enlarge myself with all the care I can, that I may have wherewithal to satisfy me when I am by all abandoned." It is my opinion that it would have been best if he had stopped there; because "for a man to arm himself with courage so as to be contented though he should be on all sides abandoned," is the greatest effort that man is capable of. Nor is this point attainable but by practice, which whoever has once arrived to, he has nothing more to do but to persist in it, in order to be sheltered from the insults of fortune. Now to add after this "to fortify himself in fortune," &c. is reducing the first thought to nothing, or making a distinction where in fact there is none. This criticism does not appear to me to be too refined; if it be, I consent that it may not have a place in any future edition of Montaigne's Essays.

† Eleus Hippias made his boast at the Olympic games, that there was nothing in any art of which he was ignorant, not only of the liberal arts, as geometry, music, literature, and poetry, together with natural philosophy, ethics, and politics, but that he made with his own hand the ring and the very clothes he wore, &c. as above. Cicero de Oratore, lib. iii. cap. 32. If at the time here mentioned there had been public places in Greece, where men of the first rank had spent the prime of life in splendor, in gaming, or in doing nothing, poor Hippias, instead of gaining applause at the Olympic Games would have been hissed out of the theatre.

shift without the assistance of others. A man more freely and cheerfully enjoys borrowed conveniences, when it is not an enjoyment forced and constrained by necessity, and when a man has in his own will and fortune wherewith to live without them. I know myself very well. But I can hardly expect to meet with such pure generosity, such free and frank hospitality from any person, as would not appear to me unhandsome, tyrannical, and tainted with reproach, if necessity had reduced me to it. As giving is an ambitious quality and prerogative, so is accepting a quality of submission. Witness the injurious and quarrelsome refusal that Bajazet made of the presents that Themir sent him; and those that were offered in the behalf of the emperor Solymán to the emperor of Calicut, were so much disdained by him, that he not only rudely rejected them; saying, that neither he nor any of his predecessors had ever been wont to take, and that it was their office to give; but moreover caused the ambassadors sent for that purpose to be put into a dungeon. When Thetis, says Aristotle, flatters Jupiter, when the Lacedæmonians flatter the Athenians, they never put them in mind of the good they have done them, which is always odious, but of the benefits they have received from them; they who I see so familiarly employ every one in their affairs, and thrust themselves into so much obligation, would never do it, did they but relish the sweetness of pure liberty as I do, and did they but weigh, as wise men should, the burden of an obligation. It is sometimes perhaps returned, but it is never dissolved; this is a miserable slavery to a man that loves to be at full liberty upon all accounts. My acquaintance, both better and meaner men than myself, are able to say whether they have ever known a man less importuning, soliciting, entreating, and less burdensome to others than I have been: and, in this, it is no great wonder if I am not to be paralleled, since so many parts of my manners contribute to it;

as a little natural pride, an impatience of being refused, the contraction of my desires and designs, an incapacity for all kind of business, and my most beloved qualities, idleness and freedom; from all these together I have conceived a mortal hatred to being obliged to or by any other than myself. I leave no stone unturned, rather than employ the beneficence of another in any slight or important occasion or necessity whatever. My friends strangely importune me, when they advise me to call in a third person; and I think it as painful to disengage him who is indebted to me, by making use of him, as it is to engage myself to him that owes me nothing: these conditions being removed, provided they require of me nothing of any great trouble or care (for I have declared mortal war against all care), I am easily entreated, and ready to do service to every one that needs it. Yet I have, I confess, more avoided receiving, than sought occasions of giving; and, according to Aristotle, it is much more easy. My fortune has allowed me but little to do others good with, and the little it can afford is put into a pretty close hand. Had I been born a person of rank, I would have been ambitious to have made myself beloved, not to make myself feared or admired; shall I more vainly express it? I would have been as proud to please as to do good. Cyrus very wisely, and, by the mouth of a great captain and better philosopher, prefers his bounty and benefits much before his valour and warlike conquests; and the elder Scipio, wherever he would raise his esteem, sets a higher value upon his affability and humanity, than his prowess and victories, and has always this glorious saying in the mouth, "that he has given his enemies as much cause to love him, as his friends." I will say then, that if a man must of necessity owe something, it ought to be by a more lawful claim than that whereof I am speaking, to the necessity I am engaged in by

this miserable war ; and not by so great a debt as that of my total preservation ; a debt that overwhelms me. I have a thousand times gone to bed at my own house with an apprehension that I should be betrayed and murdered that very night, compounding with fortune, that it might be without terror, and with quick dispatch ; and after my Pater-noster have cried out,

*Impius hæc tam culta novalia miles habebit ?\**

Shall impious soldier have these new-plough'd lands ?

What remedy ? it is the place of my birth, and most of my ancestors have here fixed their affection and name ; we harden ourselves to whatever we are accustomed ; and in so miserable a condition as ours is, custom is a great bounty of nature, which takes off the acuteness of many evils that we suffer. A civil war has this with it worse than other wars have, to make us all stand centry in our own houses :

*Quam miserum, portâ vitam muroque tueri,  
Vixque suæ tutum viribus esse domus !†*

To one's own walls and gates 'tis wretched sure  
To trust one's life, yet scarce to be secure.

It is a grievous extremity for a man to be straitened for room, and to be disturbed in his own house. The country where I live is always the first that takes up arms, and the last that lays them down, and which never enjoys an entire calm :

*Tum quoque cum pax est, trepidant formidine belli.‡*  
In time of peace, they quake for fear of war.

*Quoties pacem fortuna lacescit ;  
Hac iter est bellis ; melius, fortuna, dedisset  
Orbe sub Eoo sedem, gelidaque sub Arcto,  
Erantesque domos.§*

\* Virg. Eclog. i. ver. 71.

† Ovid. Trist. lib. iv. eleg. 1, ver. 69.

‡ Idem, lib. iii. eleg. 10, ver. 67.

§ Lucan. lib. i. ver. 255, 256.—251, 252, 253.

Oh ill built city, too, too near the Gaul !  
 Oh sadly situated place ! when all  
 The world hath peace, this is the scene of war,  
 And first that is invaded : happier far  
 Might we have liv'd in farthest North or East,  
 Or wand'ring tents of Scythia, than possess'd  
 The edge of Italy.

My carelessness and indolence sometimes fortify me against these considerations, and they also in some measure lead us on to resolution. I oft imagine and expect mortal dangers with a kind of delight.\* I stupidly plunge myself headlong into death, without considering or taking a view of it, as into a dark and deep vortex, which swallows me up in a trice, and smothers me in an instant by a profound sleep, without any sense of pain or care ; and in these short and violent deaths, the consequence that I foresee administers more consolation to me than the effects do fear. They say, that as life is not better for being long, so death is better for not being long. I do not so much avoid the thoughts of death as I enter into confidence with it. I wrap and shroud myself in the storm that is to blind and hurry me away with a sudden and insensible attack. More-

\* To comprehend the author's true meaning here, the words must be considered with regard to their necessary connexion with what goes before. Montaigne represents himself as surrounded in his house by a gang of banditti, who are authorized by war to commit all manner of crimes with impunity. In such a situation wherein he is always in danger of having his throat cut, and in a mortal dread of seeing himself every moment at the mercy of those villains, he one while fancies himself actually in their hands, and feeling a kind of pleasure to be at last delivered thereby on a sudden from the continual anguish which rendered his life insupportable. Full of these ideas he stupidly plunges himself headlong, as he says above, into death, without taking a view of it, as into a dark and deep vortex, which swallows him up, &c. Which is as much as to say, that by taking his resolution he expects when he least thinks of it, to be in that state of surprise and horror from the barbarity of those villains who shall come to knock him on the head, or cut his throat before he has time to look about him. The images which Montaigne here makes use of are lively but innocent, and very natural, and such as no judicious fair critic will, I believe, ever find fault with.

over, if it should fall out (as some gardeners say of roses and violets, that they are more odoriferous by growing near garlick and onions, by reason that the last suck and imbibe what bad smell there is in the soil), that these depraved natures should also attract all the malignity of my air and climate, and render me so much better and purer by their vicinity, that I should not lose all; that is not so; but there may be something in this, that goodness is more beautiful and attractive when it is rare, and that contrariety and diversity binds and shuts up well-doing within itself, and inflames it by the jealousy of opposition and by vain-glory. Thieves and robbers (of their special favour) have no particular spite at me; no more have I to them: if I had, I would have my hands too full. Consciences of the same cast are lodged under several sorts of robes, like cruelty, treachery, and rapine; and so much the worse as they are the more mischievous, and the more secure, and the darker by being concealed under the colour of the laws. I do not so much hate a professed injury, as one that is treacherous; an enemy in arms, as an enemy in a gown. Our fever has seized upon a body that is not much the worse for it. There was fire before, and now it is broke out into a flame. The noise is greater, the evil much the same. I usually answer such as ask me the reason of my travels, "That I know very well what I fly from, but not what I seek." If they tell me that there may be as little health amongst strangers, and their manners are no purer than ours; I first reply, that this is a hard case:

*Tam multæ scelerum facies.\**

Where crimes in many shapes abound.

Secondly, that it is always an advantage to change an ill condition for one that is uncertain, and that the ills of others ought not to afflict us so much as our own.

The commendation  
of Paris.

I will not here omit, that I never rail so much against France, as to be out of humour with Paris;

\* Virg. Georg. lib. i. ver. 506.

that city has ever had my heart from my infancy ; and it has fallen out to me, as of excellent things, that the more of other fine cities I have seen since, the more the beauty of this gains upon my affection. I love it for its own sake, and more in its own native being, than the addition of foreign pomp ; I love it tenderly, even with all its warts and blemishes. I am not a Frenchman but by this great city, great in people, great in the felicity of her situation ; but above all, great and incomparable in variety and diversity of commodities ; the glory of France, and one of the most noble ornaments of the world. May God of his goodness drive our divisions far from it. While it remains entire and united, I think it safe from all other violence. I give it caution, that of all the parties, that will be the worst that shall set it at variance ; I have no fears for her, but for her own sake ; and certainly I have as much fear for her as for any other city in the kingdom. Whilst she continues, I shall never want a retreat where I may be safe, sufficient to make me amends for parting with any other retreat whatever.

It is not because Socrates had said so, but because it is in truth my own humour, and perhaps too much so. I look upon all men as my countrymen, and embrace a Polander as heartily as a Frenchman, preferring the universal and common tie, to this national tie. I am not much taken with the sweetness of a native air : acquaintance wholly new, and wholly my own, appear to me full as good as the other common and accidental ones with our neighbours. Friendships that are purely of our own acquiring, ordinarily surpass those to which we are joined by the communication of the clime or of blood. Nature has placed us in the world free and unbound ; we confine ourselves to certain limits, like the kings of Persia, who obliged themselves to drink no other water but that of the river Choaspes, foolishly quit claim to their right of usage in all other streams ; and as far as concerned themselves, dried up all the other rivers of the world. What So-

Montaigne considered all nations as his countrymen.



crates did towards the end, to look upon a sentence of banishment, as worse than a sentence of death against him, I shall, I think, never be such an old fool, or so strictly bigotted to my own country, as to be of that opinion. Such celestial lives as his have many ideas, which I embrace more by esteem than affection; and they have some also so elevated and extraordinary, that I cannot embrace them so much as by esteem, because I cannot conceive them. This humour was very effeminate in a man that thought the whole world his city. It is true, that he disdained travel, and had hardly ever set his foot out of the Attic territories. What say you to his grudging the money his friends offered to save his life, and his refusal to come out of prison by the mediation of others, because he would not disobey the laws, at a time when they were otherwise so much corrupted? These examples are of the first rate for me; of the second there are others that I could find out in this same person. Many of these rare examples surpass the force of my action; nay some of them likewise surpass the force of my judgment.

The advantages which Montaigne reaped by travel.

These reasons set aside, travel is in my opinion a profitable exercise; the soul is therein continually employed in observing things new and unknown. And I do not know, as I have often said, a better school wherein to form life, than by incessantly exposing to it the diversity of so many other lives, fancies, usages; and to make it relish so perpetual a variety of the forms of human nature. The body is therein neither idle nor overwrought, and this moderate motion puts it in breath. I can keep on horseback, as much tormented with the stone as I am, without alighting or being weary, for eight or ten hours together.

*Vires ultra sortemque senectæ.\**

Beyond the strength and common lot of age.

No weather hurts me, but by the parching heat of a scorching sun; for the umbrellas made use of in

\* Virg. *Æneid.* lib. vi. ver. 114.

Italy, ever since the time of the ancient Romans, are a greater burden to the arm than a relief to the head. I would fain know where was the industry of the Persians so long ago, and in the infancy of their luxury, to make such ventilators, and plant such shades about their abodes, as Xenophon reports they did. I love rain, and to dabble in the dirt, like the ducks; the change of air and climate never concern me: every sky is alike to me. I am only troubled with inward ailments, which I breed within myself, and those are not so frequent in travel. I am hard to be got out, but when once upon the road, I hold out as well as the best. I take as much pains in little as in great undertakings; and to equip myself for a short journey, if but to visit a neighbour, as for a long one. I have learned to travel after the Spanish fashion, and to make but one stage of tolerable length; and in excessive heats, I always travel by night, from sun-set to sun-rising. The other method of baiting by the way, in haste and hurry to gobble up a dinner, is, especially in short days, very inconvenient. My horses thereby perform the better, for never any horse tired under me, that was able to hold out the first day's journey: I water them at every brook I meet, and only take care they have so much way to go before I come to my inn, as will digest the water in their bellies. My being so loth to rise in a morning, gives my servants leisure to dine at their ease before they set out. For my own part, I never eat too late; my appetite comes to me in eating, and not else, and am never hungry but at table.

Some of my friends blame me for continuing this travelling humour, being married and old. But they are in the wrong; for it is the best time for a man to leave his family, when he has put it into a way of subsisting without him, and continuing as he left it. It is indeed much greater imprudence to abandon it to a less faithful housekeeper, and one who will be less solicitous to look after your affairs.

Unjustly  
blamed for  
travelling  
when old  
and mar-  
ried.

The most  
useful and  
the most  
honour-  
able ac-  
complish-  
ment of a  
mother of a  
family.

The most useful and honourable knowledge and employment for the mother of a family, is the management of household affairs. I see some that are covetous indeed, but very few that are saving. It is the supreme quality of a woman, and what the man ought to seek after before any other, as the only dowry that tends to ruin or to preserve our families. Let men say what they will, according to the experience I have learned, I require in married women the economical virtue above all other virtues; I put my wife to it, as a concern of her own, leaving her by my absence the whole government of my affairs. I am ashamed to see, in several families, the master of which has been bustling about all morning, I am sorry to see him return at noon quite jaded and ruffled to find his madam just got out of her bed, and dressing herself at the toilet. This is for queens to do, it would be improper even in them. It is ridiculous, and unjust, that the laziness of our wives should be maintained with our own sweat and labour. No man, as far as I can, shall have a clearer and a more quiet and free enjoyment of his estate than I. If the husband furnish matter, nature herself requires that the wife find the form.

The conjugal friendship grows warm by absence.

As to the duties of conjugal friendship, which some think to be cooled by this absence, I am not of that opinion; it is on the contrary an intelligence that easily cools, and is hurt by a too close and constant attendance. Every strange woman appears graceful, and every one finds, by experience, that being continually together is not so pleasing, as to part for a time, and meet again. These interruptions give me a fresh gust to enjoy my family, and render my own house more pleasant to me. Change of place warms my appetite, now to one then to the other. I know that the arms of friendship are long enough to reach and join hands from the one end of the world to the other, especially when there is a continual communication of offices that rouse the obligation and remembrance of it. The Stoics say,

that there is so great a connection and relation amongst wise men, that he who dines in France, feeds his companion in Egypt; and that whoever but holds out his finger, in what part of the world soever, all the wise men upon the habitable earth feel themselves assisted by it. Fruition and possession principally appertain to the imagination; and this more fervently and constantly embraces what it is in quest of, than what we have hold of. Let a man but consider his daily amusements, and he will find, that he is most absent from his friend when in his company. His presence releases your attention, and gives your thoughts liberty to absent themselves at every turn, for every occasion. When I am at Rome, I keep and govern my house, and the conveniences I there left, see<sup>d</sup> my walls rise, my trees shoot, and my revenue increase or decrease, very near as well as when I am there :

*Ante oculos errat domus, errat forma locorum.\**

Still fondly I behold, with fancy's eye,  
My house and places that around it lie.

If we enjoy nothing but what we touch, we may say farewell to the money in our closets, and to our sons when they are gone a hunting. We will have them nearer to us. Is the garden, or half a day's journey from home so far? What is ten leagues, far or near? If near, what is eleven, twelve, or thirteen? and so on by degrees. In earnest, if there be a woman who can tell her husband what step ends the near, and what step begins the remote, I would advise her to stop between the two :

———— *Excludat jurgia finis.*

Some certain point should finish the debate.

*Utor permissa, caudæque pilos ut equine  
Paulatim vello : et demo unum, demo etiam unum  
Dum cadat elusus ratione ruentis acervi.†*

\* Ovid. Trist. lib. iii. eleg. 4.

† Horat. lib. ii. ep. i. ver. 38, 45.

I take the grant, and by degrees prevail ;  
 Thus, hair by hair, I pluck the horse's tail,  
 And while I take them one by one away  
 The numbers to a nought at last decay.

Let them in God's name call philosophy to their assistance ; in whose teeth it may be cast, that since it neither discerns the one nor the other end of the joint between the too much and the little, the long and the short, the light and the heavy, the near and the remote ; and since it discovers neither the beginning nor the end, it must needs judge very uncertainly of the middle : *Rerum natura nullam nobis dedit cognitionem finium* : \* “ Nature has not given “ us any knowledge of the end of things.” Are they not still wives and friends to the dead, who are not only at the end of this, but in the other world ? We include those who have been, and those who are not yet, much more the absent. We did not promise in marriage to be continually brooding and twining together, like some little animals that we see, or tied like those of Karanti,† that were so bewitched in the conjunctive mood, that they clung together ever after like the canine race. And a wife ought not so greedily to fix her eyes on her husband's fore-parts, that she cannot endure to see him turn his back, if occasion be. But may not this saying of that

\* Cic. Acad. lib. iv. cap. 20.

† It is Saxo Grammaticus that has left us the story of these hagg-ridden creatures, in the 14th book of his History of Denmark ; where, speaking of the conversion of the people of Rugen, an island in the Baltic, he says, that the inhabitants of Karanti, or Kerantia, one of their towns, after having renounced their worship of idols, were nevertheless still afraid of their power, remembering how often they had been punished for their lewdness, when both sexes were tied together in the action after the manner of dogs, and even faster. Sometimes when they were taken in the fact they were, for the diversion of the people, hoisted upon a perch, the man on one side, and the woman on the other, without being able to separate. If this fact was true, one could hardly help inferring, that the devil was at that time much more seycere or more mischievous than he is now.

excellent painter of women's humours be here introduced, to show the reasons of their complaints?

*Uxor, si cesses, aut te amare cogitat,  
Aut tete amari, aut potare, aut animo obsequi.  
Et tibi bene esse soli, cum sibi sit male.\**

Thy wife, if thou stay'st long abroad, is mov'd,  
Thinking thou either lov'st, or art belov'd ;  
Drinking, or something else, thyself to please,  
And that thou'rt well, whilst she is ill at ease.

Or may it not be, that of itself opposition and contradiction entertains and nourishes them, and that they sufficiently accommodate themselves, provided they incommode you?

In true friendship, wherein I am expert, I give myself more to my friend, than I attract him to me. I am not only better pleased in doing him service,

The aim of true friendship.

than if he did me one ; but, likewise, had rather he would do himself good than me, and he most serves me when he does so. And if absence be either pleasant or convenient for him, it is more acceptable to me than his presence ; neither is it properly absence, when there are means of corresponding. I have sometimes made good use of our separation. We better filled, and farther extended the possession of life in being parted. He lived, rejoiced, and saw for me, and I for him, as plainly as if he had himself been there ; one part remained idle, and we confounded one another when we were together. The distance of place rendered the conjunction of our wills more rich. This insatiable desire of personal presence, implies some weakness in the fruition of souls.

The utility of the absence of a friend.

As for old age, which is alleged against me, it is for youth on the contrary to subject itself to the common opinions, and to curb itself for the sake of others. It has wherewith to please both the people and itself ; we have but too much ado to please ourselves alone. As natural conveniences fail us, let us

Whether old age ought to hinder us from travelling.

\* Ter. Adel. act. i. scen. 1. ver. 7, &c.

support ourselves with those that are artificial. It is injustice to excuse youth for pursuing its pleasures, and to forbid old men to seek them. When young, I concealed my wanton passions with prudence; now I am old, I get rid of melancholy ones by a debauch.\* Sure it is that the Platonic laws forbid travel till forty or fifty years old, that it might be more useful and instructive at so mature an age. I would sooner subscribe to this other second article of the same laws, which forbids it after threescore; for at such an age you will never return from a long journey. What care I for that? I undertake it neither to return nor to finish it. I do it only to keep myself in motion whilst motion pleases me, and only walk for the walk's sake. They who hunt after a benefice, or a hare, run not; they only run who run at prison-base, and to exercise their running. My design is divisible throughout, it is not grounded upon any great hopes; every day concludes my expectation. The journey of my life is carried on after the same manner; and yet I have seen places enough far off, where I could have wished to have been detained. And why not, if Chrysippus, Cleanthes, Diogenes, Zeno, Antipater, so many sages of the sourest sect,† cheerfully abandoned their country, without occasion to complain

\* If that be, as I really think, Montaigne's sentiment, the word debauch must be taken in a moderate sense, and such as is suitable to Montaigne's genius and character, and to the subject he here treats of, that is to say, to his passion for travel, which he is pleased to term a debauch, by an excursion which is very common to him. There is scarce any writer who has more need than Montaigne of a judicious reader, and one especially that is fair and candid. His style, which abounds with bold expressions and figures, is very likely to deceive a cavilling censor, or to give a handle to those ill-natured critics who, without regard to truth, boldly censure the most innocent expressions, when they think they can represent them to other persons in a criminal light.

† Chrysippus was of Soles, Cleanthes of Assos, Diogenes of Babylon, Zeno of Citium in the isle of Cyprus, Antipater of Tarsus, all Stoic philosophers, who passed their lives at Athens, as Plutarch has observed in his Treatise of Banishment, chap. 12.

of it, and only for the enjoyment of another air? In earnest, that which most displeases me in all my travels, is, that I cannot resolve to settle my abode where I best like, but that I must always propose to myself to return, to accommodate myself to the common humours.

If I feared to die in any other place than that of my birth; if I thought I should die more uneasily remote from my own family, I would hardly go out of France; I would not without fear step out of my parish; for I feel death always twitching me by the throat, or by the back: but I am of another temper; death is in all places alike to me; yet might I have my choice, I think I would rather choose to die on horseback than in bed, out of my own house, and far enough from my own people. There is more heart-breaking than consolation in taking leave of one's friends; I am willing to omit this act of civility; for, of all the offices of friendship, that is the only one that is unpleasant; and I could with all my heart forget to bid this great and eternal farewell. If there be any convenience in so many standers-by, it produces a hundred inconveniences. I have seen many miserably dying, surrounded with all this train: it is a crowd that chokes them. It is against duty, and a testimony of little kindness, and little care, to permit you to die in quiet; one torments your eyes, another afflicts your ears, another tires your faltering tongue; you have neither sense nor limb that is not battered and bruised by them: your heart melts with pity to hear the lamentation of those that are your real friends, and perhaps with vexation, to hear the bewailings of others that are feigned and counterfeit. Whoever has been delicate in his taste when well, is much more so in his weakness. In such a necessity a gentle hand is required, and suitable to his sentiments, to scratch him just in the place where he itches, or not to meddle with him at all. As we stood in need of a know-

As indifferent as it was to Montaigne where he died, he preferred to die abroad rather than at home; and why.



ing woman\* to bring us into the world, we have much more need of a wiser man to help us out of it. Such a one, and a friend to boot, a man ought to purchase at any rate for such an occasion. I am not yet arrived at such a pitch of bravery and self-sufficiency, as to disdain all assistance, or defy all trouble in that hour. I endeavour to hide myself, and to make my exit by stealth, not through fear, but by art. I do not intend in this act of dying to give proof, and make a show of my constancy. For whom should I do it? All the right and title I have to reputation will then cease. I content myself with a death collected within itself, quiet, solitary, and all my own, suitable to my retired and private life.

The eyes  
of dying  
persons  
closed by  
their near-  
est rela-  
tions.

Quite contrary to the Roman superstition, where a man was looked upon as unhappy, who died without speaking, and that had not his nearest relations to close his eyes. I have enough to do to comfort myself, without the trouble of consoling others; too many thoughts in my head, to need that circumstances should possess me with new; and matter enough to entertain myself without borrowing. This critical minute is out of the share of society; it is the act of one single person. Let us live, and be merry amongst our friends, let us go among strangers to repine and die. A man may find those for his money that will shift his pillow, and rub his feet, and trouble him no more than he would have them; who will present him with an indifferent countenance, and suffer him to govern himself, and to complain according to his own method. I wean myself daily by my reason from this childish and inhumane humour, of desiring by our sufferings to move the compassion and mourning of our friends. We stretch our inconveniences beyond their just extent when we extract tears from them, and the constancy in which we commend every

\* Viz. a midwife, called in French *sage femme*.

one who supports his own adverse fortune, we accuse and reproach in our friends when the case is our own; we are not satisfied that they be only sensible of our condition, unless they be also afflicted. A man should extend his joy, but, as much as he can, contract his grief: he that makes himself lamented without reason, is a man not to be lamented when there shall be real cause. To be always complaining, is the way never to be lamented; and he who too often calls for pity, is never commiserated by any. He that feigns himself dying when he is alive, is subject to be thought likely to live when he is dying. I have seen some, who have taken it in a dudgeon when they have been told that they looked well, and that their pulse was regular, who refrained laughter, because it betrayed a recovery, and hated health, because it was not to be lamented: and, which is much worse, they were not women neither. I describe my infirmities but such as they really are, at most, and avoid all ominous expressions and formal exclamations. If not mirth, at least a sedate countenance in the standers-by, is proper in the presence of a wise sick man. He does not quarrel with health, for seeing himself in a contrary condition. He is pleased to contemplate it sound and entire in others, and to enjoy it at least for company. He does not, because he feels himself melt away, abandon all thoughts of life, nor avoid common conversation. I am inclinable to study sickness whilst I am well; when it has seized me it will make its impression real enough, without the help of my imagination. We prepare ourselves before-hand for the journey we undertake and resolve upon; we leave the appointment of the hour, when to take horse, to the company, and in their favour defer it. I find this unexpected advantage in the publication of my manners, that it in some sort serves me for a rule. I have sometimes some consideration of not betraying the history of my life. This public declaration obliges

Mourning  
very impro-  
per about  
sick per-  
sons.

me to keep on my way, and not to give the lie to the image I have drawn of my qualities, commonly less deformed and contradicted than the malignity and infirmity of the judgments of this age would have them. The uniformity and simplicity of my manners produce a face of easy interpretation, but because the fashion is a little new, and unaccustomed, it gives great opportunity to slander. Yet so it is, that whoever will go about justly to injure me, I do think I so assist his malice by my known and avowed imperfections, that he may that way glut his ill-nature, without skirmishing with the wind. If I myself, to prevent the accusation and discovery, confess enough to make his satire toothless, as he conceives, he is welcome to make use of his right of amplification, and extension (offence has its rights beyond justice); and let him make the roots of those vices I have laid open to him shoot up into trees: let him make his use, not only of those I am really infected with, but also of those that only threaten me; injurious vices both in quality and number. Let him cudgel me that way. I would willingly follow the example of the philosopher Bion.\* Antigonus being about to reproach him with the meanness of his birth, he presently cut him short, with this declaration,† “I am,” said he, “the son of a slave, “a butcher, and stigmatised, and of a whore my “father married in the lowest of his fortune, who “both of them were chastised for some misdemeanor. An orator bought me, when a child, and “finding me a pretty and a forward boy, bred “me up, and when he died left me all his estate, “which I have brought into this city of Athens, “and here settled myself to the study of philosophy.” Let the historians never trouble themselves with inquiring after me. I shall tell them what I am; a free and generous confession enervates

\* Not Dior, as it is in all the editions of Montaigne, as well as Mr. Cotton's translation.

† Diogenes Laertius, in the Life of Bion, lib. iv. sect. 46.

reproach, and disarms slander. So it is, that all things considered, I fancy men as oft commend as undervalue me beyond reason. And methinks also, from my infancy, they have given me a place, in rank and degree of honour, rather above than below my right. I would find myself more at ease in a country where these degrees were either regulated or not regarded. Amongst men, when the difference about the precedence either of walking or sitting exceeds three replies, it is reputed uncivil. I never stick at giving or taking place out of rule, to avoid the trouble of ceremony. And never denied precedence to any man who affected it. Besides this profit I reap from writing of myself, I have also hoped for this other advantage, that if it fall out that my humour please, or jump with that of some honest man, before I die, he would then desire and seek to be acquainted with me. I have given him a great deal of space; for all that he could have in many years acquired by a long acquaintance and familiarity, he has seen in three days in this register, and more surely and exactly set down. A pleasant fancy: many things that I would not confess to any one in particular, I deliver to the public; and refer my best friends to a bookseller's shop, to know what are my most secret attainments and thoughts:

*Excutienda damus præcordia.\**

\* Fain would the muse lay open to thy test  
Each latent thought, each winding of my breast.

Had I by such plain tokens known where to have sought for any one proper for my conversation, I would certainly have gone a great way to find him: for the sweetness of suitable and agreeable company cannot, in my opinion, be bought too dear. Oh! what a rare thing is a friend! How true is that old saying, "That the use of a friend is more pleasant and necessary than the elements of water and

How useful and necessary a friend is.

“ fire ! ” To return to my subject ; there is then no great harm in dying privately, and far from home. And we think it a duty to retire for natural actions not so disagreeable nor terrible as this. But besides such as are reduced to spin out a long languishing life, ought not perhaps to wish to encumber a great family with their continual miseries. Therefore the Indians, in a certain province, thought it just to dispatch a man, when reduced to such necessity : and in another of their provinces they all forsook him, to shift for himself as well as he could. To whom do they not at least become irksome, tedious, and insupportable ? You teach your best friends to be cruel in spite of them ; hardening women and children by long usage, neither to lament, nor to regard your sufferings. The groans extorted from me by the stone, are not now regarded by any-body. And though we should extract some pleasure from their conversation (which does not always happen, by reason of the disparity of conditions, which easily begets contempt or envy toward any one whatever), is it not too much to be troublesome all the days of a man’s life ? The more I should see them strain out of real affection to be serviceable to me, the more I should be sorry for their pains. We are allowed to lean, but not to lay our whole weight upon others, so as to prop ourselves by their ruin. Like him who caused little children’s throats to be cut, to make use of their blood for the cure of a certain disease he had : or that other, who was continually supplied with tender young girls, to keep his old limbs warm in the night, and to mix the sweetness of theirs with his sour and stinking breath. Decrepit old age is a solitary quality. I am sociable even to excess ; yet I think it reasonable that I should now withdraw my ailments from the sight of the world, and keep them to myself. Let me shrink and draw up myself like a tortoise. I learn to visit men without hanging upon them : I would endanger them in so steep a passage. It is now time to turn my back to company.

But in these travels you may be surprised with sickness in some wretched cot or hovel, where nothing can be had to relieve you: I always carry most things necessary with me; and besides, we cannot evade fortune, or escape fate, if it once resolve to attack us. I need nothing extraordinary when I am sick. I will not be beholden to my bolus to do that for me which nature cannot. At the very beginning of my fevers and sicknesses that cast me down, whilst I am yet entire, and but little disordered in my health, I reconcile myself to God by the last christian offices, and find myself by so doing more free and easy, and have got methinks so much the better of my disease. I have still less need of a scrivener or counsellor, than of a physician. What I have not settled of my affairs when I was in health, let no one expect I will do when I am sick. Death is what I am ever prepared for. I durst not so much as defer it one day. And if nothing be done, it is as much as to say, either that doubt delayed my choice (and sometimes it is well chosen not to choose), or that I was positively resolved not to do any thing at all. I write my book for few men, and for few years. Had it been a matter of duration, it should have been put into a more durable language; for according to the continual variation that ours has to this day been subject to, who can expect that the present style should be in use fifty years hence? It slips every day through our fingers, and since I was born is altered one half. We say that it is now perfect; and every age says the same of the language then spoken: but I shall hardly trust to that, so long as it varies and changes as it does.\* It is for good and useful

Montaigne's  
prepara-  
tions with  
a view to  
death.

\* There are in Montaigne so many solid thoughts, and so agreeably expressed, paintings so just, lively, and natural, that his book will be read and regarded as long as the French language shall last, how different soever be the turn of it from what it had in his time; which, though it be already so different, the essays have lost nothing of their former credit with men of a good taste, who love study, and to make an advantage of the discoveries to which they

writings to rivet it to them, and its reputation will rise or fall with the fortune of our state. For which reason, I am not afraid to insert in it several private articles, which will spend their use amongst the men that are now living, and that concern the particular knowledge of some who will see farther into them than every common reader. I will not after all, as I oft hear dead men's memories worried, that men should say of me, "He judged and lived so and so : " he would have done this or that ; could he have " spoken when he was dying, he would have said so " or so, and have given this thing or the other ? I " knew him better than any." Now, as much as decency permits, I here discover my inclinations and affections ; but I do it more willingly and freely by word of mouth, to any one who desires to be informed. So it is, that in these memoirs, if any observe, he will find, that I have either told, or designed to tell all. What I cannot express, I point out with my finger :

*Verum animo satis hæc vestigia parva sagaci  
Sunt, per quæ possis cognoscere cætera tute.\**

But by these foot-steps a sagacious mind  
May certainly all other matters find.

I leave nothing to be desired, or to be guessed at concerning me. If people must be talking of me, I would have it to be justly and truly. I would come again with all my heart from the other world, to give any one the lie that should report me other than I was, though he did it to honour me. I perceive that people represent, even living men, quite another thing than what they really are : and had I not stoutly defended a friend, whom I have lost, they would have represented him to me in a thousand contrary shapes.

To conclude the account of my frail humours, I

are naturally led by such study. This will be an inexhaustible source, from which they will always draw with pleasure.

\* Lucret. lib. i. ver. 403.

do confess, that in my travel, I seldom come to my quarters, but it runs in my mind whether I could like to be sick, and die there ; I wish to be lodged in some private part of the house, remote from all noise and nastiness, not smoky, nor close. I aim to sooth death by these frivolous circumstances ; or to say better to discharge myself from all other incumbrances, that I may have nothing to do, but to wait for an event which will be enough to weigh me down without any other load. I would have my death share with my life in ease and convenience ; it is a great lump of it, and of importance, and hope it will not now contradict what is past. Death has some forms that are more easy than others, and assumes divers qualities, according to every one's fancy. Amongst the natural deaths, those that proceed from weakness and a stupor, I think the most favourable : amongst those that are violent, I dread a precipice worse than the fall of ruins, that would crush me in a moment ; and think worse to be killed by a sword than to be shot : I would rather have chosen to poison myself with Socrates, than stab myself with Cato. And though it be the same thing, yet my imagination makes as wide a difference as between death and life, to throw myself into a fiery furnace, or plunge into the channel of a smooth river : so idly does our fear more concern itself for the means than the effect. It is but a moment it is true, but a moment of such weight, that I would willingly give many days of my life to shoot the gulf after my own way. Since every one's imagination renders it more or less terrible, and since every one has some choice amongst the several forms of dying, let us try a little farther, to find some one that is wholly clear from all irksomeness. Might not one render it even pleasant, as they did who were companions in death with Antony\* and Cleopatra ? I set aside the severe and exemplary efforts

What kind  
of death re-  
lished best.

\* Plutarch, in the Life of Mark Antony, chap. 15.



The manner of dying left to the choice of criminals by the tyrants.

produced by philosophy and religion. But amongst men of low rank, such as a Petronius,\* and a Tigillinus† at Rome, there have been found men condemned to dispatch themselves, who have as it were lulled death asleep with the delicacy of their preparations; they have made it slip and steal away, even in the height of their accustomed diversions, amongst whores and good fellows. There is not a word of consolation, no mention of making a will, no ambitious affectation of constancy, no talk of their future state, amongst sports, feasts, wit, and mirth, table-talk, music, and amorous verses. Is it not possible for us to imitate this resolution after a more decent manner? Since there are deaths that are fit for fools, and fit for the wise, let us find out such as are fit for those who are between both. My imagination suggests to me one that is easy, and since we must die, one that is also to be desired. The Roman tyrants thought they did in a manner give a criminal life, when they gave him the choice of his death. But was not Theophrastus, that philosopher, so delicate, so modest, and so wise, compelled by reason, when he durst repeat this verse translated by Cicero?

*Vitam regit fortuna, non sapientia.*‡

Fortune, not wisdom, governs human life.

Fortune is assisting to the facility of the progress of my life, having placed it in such a condition that for the future it can be no advantage nor hindrance to me. It is a condition that I would have accepted at any stage of my life: but now that I am packing up my baggage, and marching off, I am particularly pleased, that in dying I shall neither have them merry, nor sorry; she has so ordered it by a cunning compensation, that they who may pretend to any considerable advantage by my death, will at the same time sustain a material inconvenience. Death

\* Tacit. Annal. lib. xvi. cap. 19.

† Tacit. Hist. lib. i. cap. 71.

‡ Cic. Tusc. lib. v. cap. 9.

sometimes is more grievous to us, in that it is grievous to others, and interests us in their interest as much as in our own, and sometimes more.

In this convenience of quarters which I desire, I am for nothing pompous and sumptuous, I hate it rather; but am for a certain plain neatness, which is often found in places where there is less of art, and which nature has adorned with some grace that is altogether her own. *Non ampliter, sed munditer convivium; plus salis quam sumptus*.\* “I love a feast that is elegant rather than abundant, in which there is more savour than superfluity.” As for those whose affairs compel them to travel in the winter season through the Grisons’ country, they must expect to be reduced to extremity upon the road. I, who for the most part travel for my pleasure, do not order my affairs so ill. If the way be foul on my right-hand, I turn on my left; if I find myself unfit to ride, I stay where I am: and really when I do so, I see nothing that is not as pleasant and commodious as my own house. It is true, that I always think superfluity superfluous, and observe a kind of trouble even in delicacy and abundance. Have I left any thing behind me unseen, I go back to see it; I am never out of my way. I trace no certain line, either straight or crooked. If I do not find in the place to which I go what was reported to me, as it oft falls out that the judgments of others do not jump with mine, and that I have found them for the most part wrong, I never complain of losing my labour: I have at least informed myself that what they told me was not there. I have a constitution of body as free, and a palate as indifferent as any man living.

The different fashions of several nations no farther concern me than the mere pleasure of variety. Every usage has its reason. Be the plate and dishes pewter, wood, or earth, my meat boiled or roasted,

His method  
of travel-  
ling.

He accom-  
modated  
himself to  
the differ-  
ent man-  
ners and

\* Corn. Nepos, in Vita Pompon. Attic. cap. 13.

customs of  
the several  
countries  
he saw.

let them give me butter or oil, nuts or olives, hot or cold, it is all one to me : and it is so indifferent, that, growing old, I accuse this generous faculty, and have need that delicacy and choice should correct the indiscretion of my appetite, and sometimes relieve my stomach. When I have been abroad out of France, and the people in civility have asked me, if I would be served after the French manner, I laughed at the question, and always frequented tables the most filled with strangers. I am ashamed to see my countrymen besotted with this foolish humour of quarrelling with forms contrary to their own. They seem to be out of their element, when out of their own village. Wherever they go, they keep strictly to their own fashions, and abominate those of foreigners. If they meet with one of their own country in Hungary, they hail the happy day. They renew their acquaintance, they cling together, and rail at the barbarous manners they see there. And why not barbarous, since they are not French? And those are reckoned to have made the best use of their travels, who rail most at what they have seen ; and indeed most of them return no wiser than they went. In their travels very close and reserved, with a silent and incommunicable prudence, preserving themselves from the contagion of an unknown air. What I am saying of them, puts me in mind of something like it, which I have sometimes observed in some of our young courtiers, who will not mix with any but those of their own class ; and look upon us as men of another world, with disdain or pity. Put them upon any discourse but the intrigues of the court, and they are utterly at a loss ; as very blockheads and novices to us, as we are to them. And it is truly said, that a well-bred man is of a compound education. I, on the contrary, travel, very much sated with our own fashions ; not to look for Gascons in Sicily, I have left enough of them at home : I rather seek for Greeks and Persians ; they are the men I want to be acquainted with, and the men I

study; it is with them that I bestow and employ myself: and, which is more, I fancy that I have met but with few customs that are not as good as our own. I have not, I confess, travelled very far; scarce out of the sight of the fanes of my own house!

As to the rest, most of the accidental company a man falls into upon the road, give him more trouble than pleasure; I wave them as much as I civilly can, especially now that age seems in some sort to privilege and sequester me from the common forms. You suffer for others, or others suffer for you; both of them inconveniences of importance enough, but the latter appears to me the greater.

It is a rare fortune, but of inestimable solace, to have a worthy man, one of a sound judgment, and of a temper conformable to your own, who takes a delight to bear you company. I have been at a very great loss for one in all my travels. But such a companion should be chosen, and taken with you from your first setting out. There can be no pleasure to me without communication: there is not so much as a sprightly thought comes into my mind, which it does not grieve me to have produced alone, without one to communicate it to. *Si cum hac exceptione detur sapientia, ut illam inclusam teneam, nec emenciem, rejiciam:*\* “If wisdom were conferred with this condition, that I must keep it to myself, and not communicate it to others, I would refuse it.” This other has strained it one note higher: *Si contigerit ea vita sapienti, ut omnium rerum affluentibus copiis, quamvis omnia, quæ cognitione digna sunt, summo otio secum ipse consideret, et contempletur, tamen si solitudo tanta sit, ut hominem videre non possit, excedat è vita:*† “If such a condition of life should happen to a wise man, that in the greatest plenty of all conveniences, he might at the most undisturbed leisure, consider and contemplate all things worth the knowing,

\* Senec. epist. 6.

† Cicero de Offic. lib. i. cap. 43.

“ yet if his solitude must be such that he must not  
 “ see a man, he had much better quit life.”\* I ap-  
 prove of Architas’s opinion, when he said, that it  
 would be unpleasant, even in heaven itself, to sur-  
 vey the glory of those great and divine celestial bo-  
 dies without a companion. But yet it is much bet-  
 ter to be alone, than in foolish and troublesome  
 company. Aristippus loved to live as a stranger in  
 all places :

*Mea si fata meis paterentur ducere vitam  
 Auspicis.†*

But if the fates would so propitious be,  
 To let me live at my own liberty ;

I should choose to pass away the greatest part of my  
 life on horseback :

*Visere gestiens,  
 ua parte debacchentur ignes  
 i nebulae pluviique rores.‡*

To view the stores of snow and hail,  
 And where excessive heats prevail.

Arguments  
 for divert-  
 ing Men-  
 taigue’s  
 passion for  
 travel.

“ But it may be asked, have you not more easy  
 “ diversions at home ? What do you there want ? Is  
 “ not your house situated in a sweet and healthful  
 “ air, sufficiently furnished, and more than suffi-  
 “ ciently large ? The royal majesty has more  
 “ than once been entertained there with all his  
 “ pomp. Are there not more below your family in  
 “ good government, than there are above it in emi-  
 “ nence ? Is there any local thought which is ex-  
 “ traordinary, and indigestible, that afflicts you ?

*Quæ te nunc coquat, et vexet sub pectora fixa ?§*

That now lies broiling in thy troubled breast,  
 And ne’er will suffer thee to be at rest ?

“ Where do you think to live without molestation  
 “ and disturbance ? *Nunquam simpliciter fortuna*

\* Cicero de Amicitia, cap. 23.

† Æneid. lib. iv. ver. 340.

‡ Horat. lib. iii. ode iii. ver. 54, &c.

§ Cic. de Senect. ex Enn.

*indulget*.\* “The favours of fortune are always mixed with some gall.” “You see then, it is only you that trouble yourself, and that you every where follow yourself, and every where complain; for there is no satisfaction here below, but for souls that are either brutish or divine. He who, in so just an occasion, has no contentment, where will he think to find it? How many millions of men would be content to be in such a condition as yours? Do but reform yourself; for that is wholly in your own power; whereas you have no other right, but patience towards fortune.” *Nulla placida quies est, nisi quam ratio composuit*:† “There is no perfect tranquillity but what is produced by reason.”

I see the reason of this remonstrance, and I see it perfectly well; but it would have been more laconic, and more pertinent, to bid me in one word be wise. This resolution is beyond wisdom, it is her work and product. Thus the physician lies preaching to a poor languishing patient to be cheerful, but he would advise him a little more discreetly in bidding him be well. For my part, I am but a man of the common sort. It is a wholesome precept, certain, and easy to be understood, “Be content with what you have;” that is to say, with reason: and yet to follow this advice, is no more in the power of the wisest men than in mine. It is a common saying, but of a terrible extent: what does it not comprehend? All things fall under discretion and qualification. I know very well that, in the literal sense, this pleasure of travelling is a testimony of uneasiness and irresolution; therefore these two are our governing and predominant qualities. Yes, I confess they are; I see\* nothing, not so much as in a dream, and in\* a wish, whereon I could set up my rest: variety only, and the possession of diversity, can satisfy me, if any thing can.

The answer to those arguments.

\* Curtius, lib. iv. cap. 14.

† Seneca, epist. 56.

In travelling, it pleases me that I may stay where I like without inconvenience, and that I have wherewith commodiously to divert myself. I love a private life, because it is my own choice that I love it, not from any dislike of the public way of living, which perhaps is as much according to my complexion. I serve my prince by it more cheerfully, because it is by the free reflection of my own judgment and reason, without any particular obligation; and that I am not compelled so to do, for being rejected or disliked by the other party; and so of all the rest. I hate the morsels that necessity carves for me. I should think that any convenience upon which I were only to depend, would stick in my throat:

*Alter remius aquas, alter mihi radat arenas.\**

Let me in water plunge one oar,  
And with the other rake the shore.

One cord will never hold me fast enough. You will say there is a vanity in such an amusement. But where is there not? And these fine precepts are vanity, and all wisdom is vanity. *Dominus novit cogitationes sapientium, quoniam vanæ sunt*: "The Lord knoweth the thoughts of the wise that they are vain."† These exquisite subtleties are only fit for the pulpit. They are discourses that will send us all saddled into the other world. Life is a material and corporeal motion, an action imperfect and irregular of its own proper essence; I make it my business to serve it according as it is:

*Quisque suos patimur manes.†*

We all are punish'd for our proper crimes.

*Sic est faciendum, ut contra naturam universam nihil contendamus; ea tamen conservata, propriam sequamur*: § "We must so order it, as by no means

\* Prop. lib. iii. eleg. 3, ver. 23.

† Psalm xciv. ver. 11. 1 Corinth. ch. iii. ver. 20.

‡ Æneid. vi. ver. 743.

§ Cic. de Offic. lib. i. cap. 31.

“ to contend against universal nature ; but yet, that  
 “ rule being observed, to conform to our own.” To  
 what end are these sublime points of philosophy,  
 upon which no human being can settle, and those  
 rules that exceed both our use and force.

I often see that we have ideas of life set before us, which neither the proposer, nor those that hear him, have any manner of hope, nor which is more, of inclination, to follow. Of the same sheet of paper, whereon the judge has but just wrote a sentence against an adulterer, he steals a piece whereon to write a love-letter to his companion's wife. She with whom you had but just now an illicit commerce, will presently, even in your own hearing, exclaim more loudly against the same fault in her companion than a Portia. And such there are, who will condemn men to death for crimes that they do not themselves repute so much as faults. I have in my youth seen a gentleman with one hand present the people with verses that excelled both in wit and licentiousness, and with the other, at the same time, the most rigid theological tenets that the world has been teased with these many years. Men proceed at this rate ; we let the laws and precepts take their course, ourselves keep another ; not only by debauchery of manners, but often by judgment and contrary opinion. Do but hear a philosophical lecture ; the invention, eloquence, and pertinency immediately strike your mind ; and move you ; there is nothing either pricks or stings your conscience ; it is not to it that they address. Is not this true ? This made Aristo say, that neither a bath nor a lecture signified any thing, unless they scoured and made men clean.\* One may stop at the outward skin ; but it is after the marrow is picked out : as after having quaffed off the good liquor in a fine bowl, consider the graving and workmanship. In all the schools of ancient philosophy this is to be found,

Philosophical remonstrances as much despised by the author of them as by the person to whom they are made.

\* Plutarch, in his Treatise of Hearing, chap. 8.



that the same philosophy-reader there publishes the rules of temperance, and at the same time reads lectures of love and wantonness. Xenophon, even in the bosom of Clinias, wrote against the Aristippic virtue. It is not that there is any miraculous conversion in it that makes them thus wavering; but it is as Solon represents himself, sometimes in his own person, and sometimes in that of a legislator. One while he speaks for the crowd, and another for himself: taking the free and natural rules for his own share, assuring himself of entire health and vigour:

*Curentur dubii medicis majoribus ægri.\**

A desprate wound must skilful hands employ.

A wise  
man per-  
mitted  
love.

Antisthenes allowed a wise man to be in love,† and do whatever he thought convenient, without regard to the laws; as being better advised than they, and having a greater knowledge of virtue.‡ His disciple Diogenes said, that men to perturbations were to oppose reason; to fortune, confidence; and to the laws, nature. For tender stomachs, forced and artificial recipes must be prescribed: strong stomachs serve themselves simply with the prescriptions of their own natural appetite. After this manner do our physicians proceed, who eat melons, and drink iced wines, whilst they confine their patients to syrup and panada. I know not, said the courtesan Lais, what they mean by their books, their wisdom, and philosophy, but those men knock as oft at my door as any other. In as much as our licentiousness always carries us beyond what is lawful and allowed, men have often stretched the precepts and rules of life beyond universal reason:

*Nemo satis credit tantum delinquere quantum  
Permittas.§*

\* Juven. sat. xiii. ver. 124.

† Diog. Laert. in the Life of Antisthenes. lib. vi. sect. 11.

‡ Idem, in the Life of Diogenes, lib. vi. sect. 38.

§ Juven. sat. xiv. ver. 233.

The wretched sinner always is in quest  
Of crimes unpractis'd, pleasures unpossess'd.

It is to be wished, that there were more proportion between the command and the obedience, and the mark seems to be unjust to which one cannot attain. There is no man so good, but, if he measure all his thoughts and actions by the laws, he will find he has deserved hanging ten times in his life; and at the same time it might be great pity and very unjust to punish and ruin him :

——— *Olle, quid ad te  
De cute quid faciat ille vel illa sua ? \**  
Ollus, what matters it to thee  
What with their skin does he or she ?

And such a one there may be, as has no way offended the laws, who nevertheless would not deserve the character of a virtuous man, and whom philosophy would justly condemn to be whipped; so unequal and perplexed is this relation. We are so far from being good men, according to the laws of God, that we cannot be so according to our own. Human wisdom could never yet arrive at the duties it had prescribed to itself; and could it arrive thereto, it would prescribe to itself others beyond it, to which it would ever aspire and pretend: so great an enemy to consistency is our human condition. Man enjoins himself to be necessarily in fault. He is not very discreet to cut out his own duty by the measure of any other being than his own. To whom does he prescribe that which he does not expect any one can perform? Is he unjust in not doing what is impossible for him to do? The laws, by whose sentence we are not able, condemn us for not being able.

At the worst this disagreeable liberty of presenting themselves two several ways, the actions after one manner, and the discourses after another, may be allowed to those who speak of things; but it cannot

Montaigne is obliged to more exactness than those

\* Mart. lib. vii. ep. 9, ver. 1, 2.

who so much preach up virtue, in the character he attempts to draw of himself.

not be allowed to those who speak of themselves, as I do. I must march my pen as I do my feet. The common life ought to have a relation to other lives. The virtue of Cato was vigorous beyond the reason of the age he lived in, and for a man who undertook to govern others; as being devoted to the public service, this might be called justice, if not unjust, at least vain, and out of season. Even my own manners, which differ scarce an inch from those that are current amongst us, yet render me at my age a little rough and unsociable. I know not whether it be without reason that I am disgusted with the company I frequent; but I know very well that it would be without reason, should I complain of its being disgusted with me, seeing I am so with it. The virtue that is assigned to the affairs of the world, is a virtue of many wavings, corners, and elbows, to join and adapt itself to human frailty; a virtue mixed and artificial; not strait, clean, constant, nor purely innocent. Our annals to this very day reproach one of our kings for suffering himself simply to be carried away by the conscientious persuasions of his confessor. Affairs of state have bolder precepts:

*Exeat aula,  
Qui vult esse pius.\**

Let him who will be good from court retire.

He was unfit for the management of public business.

I have formerly tried to employ in the management of public affairs, opinions, and rules of living, as rude, new, unpolished, or unpolished, as either were born with me, or I was formed to from my education, and wherewith I serve my own turn, if not so commodiously, at least as securely, in my own particular concerns: but I have found a scholastic and novice virtue, foolish and dangerous. He that goes into a crowd, must now go one way, and then another, keep his elbows close, retire, or advance, and quit the direct way, according to what he en-

counters ; and must live not so much according to his own method, as that of others ; not according to what he purposes to himself, but according to what is proposed to him, according to the time, according to men, according to occasions. Plato says, that whoever escapes unhurt from the world's handling, escapes by miracle : and he says likewise, that when he appoints his philosopher to be the head of a government, he means not a corrupt one like that of Athens, and much less such a one as this of ours, wherein wisdom itself would be at a loss. A good herb transplanted into a strong soil very contrary to its own nature, much sooner conforms itself to the soil, than it reforms the soil to it. I find, that if I were wholly to form myself to such employments, I must undergo a great deal of change and new modelling. And though I could so far prevail upon myself (and why might I not with time and diligence work such a feat), I would not do it. By the little trial I have had of public employment, it has been so much disgust to me ; I feel by times some temptations toward ambition rising in my soul, but I obstinately oppose them :

*At tu, Catulle, obstinatus obdura.\**

But thou, Catullus, hold out to the last.

I am seldom called to it ; and as seldom offer myself uncalled. Liberty and laziness, the qualities most predominant in me, are qualities diametrically contrary to public employment. We cannot distinguish the faculties of men. They have divisions and limits hard and delicate to choose. To conclude from the discreet conduct of private life, a capacity for the management of public affairs, is to conclude wrong. A man may govern himself well, that cannot govern others so, and compose essays, that could not work effects. One man may order a siege well, that cannot marshal a battle, and another may speak

\* Catul. epig. 9, ver. 19.

well in private, who would not be able to harangue a people, or a prince. Nay, it is perhaps rather a testimony in him who can do the one, that he cannot do the other, than otherwise. I find that elevated souls are not much more proper for low things, than mean souls are for high ones. Could it be imagined that Socrates would have administered occasion of laughter to the Athenians at the expense of his own reputation, for having never been able to sum up the votes of his tribe, to deliver it to the council? Doubtless, the veneration I have for the perfections of this great man, deserves that his fortune should furnish so magnificent an example for the excuse of my principal imperfections. Our sufficiency is cut out into small parcels; mine has no latitude, and is also very contemptible in number. Saturninus\* said, to those who had conferred upon him the command in chief, "My fellow soldiers, you have lost a good captain, to make him a bad general of an army."†

Virtue  
which is  
genuine  
and sincere  
cannot be  
employed  
in the ma-  
nagement  
of a cor-  
rupt state.

Whoever boasts, in so sick a time as this, of employing true and sincere virtue in the world's service, either knows not what it is, opinions growing corrupt with manners (and in truth to hear them describe it, to hear how most of them boast of their deportment, and to see what rules they lay down; instead of painting virtue, they paint mere vice and injustice altogether, and represent them in this false light in the education of princes), or, if he does know it, boasts unjustly, and, let him say what he will, does a thousand things of which his own conscience accuses him. I would willingly take Seneca's word, of the experience he made of it upon the like occasion, provided he would deal frankly with me. The most honourable mark of goodness in such a necessity, is for a man freely to

One of the thirty tyrants who rose in the time of the emperor an.

† Trebellii Pollionis triginta tyranni, p. 126, Hist. August.

confess both his own fault, and those of others ; with the power of his virtue to stop his inclination towards evil, unwillingly to follow this bias, to hope better, and to desire better. I perceive that in these dismemberments and divisions wherein we in France are involved, every one strives to defend his cause ; even the best of them with dissimulation and lies. He that would write roundly of the true state of the quarrel, would write rashly and viciously. What is the most just party, other than a member of a cankered and worm-eaten body ? But of such a body, the member that is least affected, is said to be sound, and with good reason, as our qualities have no title but in comparison. Civil innocency is measured according to times and places. I like to read in Xenophon such a commendation of Agesilaus ; being intreated by a neighbouring prince, with whom he formerly had war, to permit him to pass through his country, he granted his request, giving him free passage through the Peloponnesus ; and not only did not imprison or poison him, when he had him at his mercy, but courteously received him according to the obligation of his promise, without doing him the least injury. To such humours as those, this was an act of no great lustre ; elsewhere, and in another age, the frankness and magnanimity of such an action will be in high esteem, our rascally capets\*

\* These capets are properly the scholars of Montague-College at Paris. In 1480, John Standoncht of Mechlin, a doctor of the Sorbonne, settled a fund for maintaining in this college eighty-four scholars, in honour of the twelve apostles, and the seventy-two disciples of Jesus Christ. These scholars were called so from short cloaks they wore, called capes. And as they were treated very harshly, both with regard to their table, and to their discipline, they were commonly such low geniuses, that the word capette was made use of to signify a scholar of the most contemptible character, a fool, an impertinent. Montaigne by the term of rascally capets intends the bulk of his contemporaries, who would not have failed to ridicule the frank and generous spirit of Agesilaus. In the same predicament may be placed those Flemish historians, who having accused Charles V. of imprudence in relying on the good faith of

The students of  
Montague-  
College in  
Paris.

would have laughed at it, so little does the Spartan innocence resemble that of France. We are without virtuous men, but they are according to what we repute so. Whoever has his manners established in a regularity above the standard of the age he lives in, let him either wrest and blunt his rules, or, which I would rather advise him to, let him retire, and not meddle with us at all. What would he get by it :

*Egregium sanctumque virum si cerno, bimembri  
Hoc monstrum puero, et miranti jam sub aratro  
Piscibus inventis et foetæ comparo mulsæ.\**

To me an honest man more monster seems  
Than nature shows ev'n when a woman teems  
A child with two heads ; than mule's foaling found,  
Or wond'rous fishes plow'd out from the ground.

A man may regret that times are no better, but not fly from the present ; we may wish for other magistrates, but we must notwithstanding obey those we have ; and perhaps it is more laudable to obey the bad than the good. So long as the image of the ancient and received laws of this monarchy shall shine in any corner of the kingdom, there will I pitch my tent. If they unfortunately happen to thwart and contradict one another, so as to produce two factions of doubtful and difficult choice, I shall most readily choose to escape and shun the tempest. In the mean time nature, or the hazards of war, may lend me a hand. Between Cæsar and Pompey, I would frankly have declared myself ; but amongst the three robbers† that came after, a man must have been necessitated either to hide himself or to have

Francis I. when his imperial majesty passed through France in 1540, have thereby signified their opinion, that Francis was very weak in slipping so fair an opportunity of making himself master of his most formidable enemy. The whole of this note was furnished me by M. de la Monnoye.

Joven. sat. xiii. ver. 64, &c.

† Octavius, Mark Antony, and Lepidus.

gone along with the current of the time ; which I think lawful, when reason no longer rules :

*Quo diversus abis ?\**

Whither dost thou wand'ring run.

This farrago is a little wide from my subject. I go out of the way, but it is rather from a wantonness than heedlessness. My fancies follow one another, but sometimes at a great distance ; and look towards one another, but it is with an oblique glance. I have read a dialogue of Plato, of a motley and fanatic composition, beginning with the subject of love, and ending with that of rhetoric. They stick not at these variations, and with a marvellous grace let themselves be carried away at the pleasure of the wind ; or at least seem as if they were. The titles of my chapters do not always comprehend the subject ; they oft but denote it by some mark only, as those others, Andria, Eunuchus ; or these, Sylla, Cicero, Torquatus. I love the poetic ramble, by leaps and skips ; it is an art, as Plato says, light, nimble, and a little maddish. There are pieces in Plutarch, where he forgets his theme, where the proposition of his argument is only found by incidence ; and stuffed throughout with foreign matter. Do but observe his progress in the Dæmon of Socrates. Good God, how beautiful then are his variations and frolicksome sallies, and then most of all, when they seem to be fortuitous, and introduced for want of heed. It is the unattentive reader that loses my subject, and not I ; there will always be found some phrase or other in a corner that is to the purpose, though it lie very close. I ramble indiscreetly and tumultuously, my style and my wit wander at the same rate ; a little folly is tolerable in him that will not be guilty of too much, say the precepts, and much more the examples, of our masters. A thousand poets flag and creep in the prosaic style,

The reason why Montaigne sometimes deviated from his subject as he does here.

\* Æneid, lib. v. ver. 166.



but the best old prose (and I strew it here up and down indifferently for verse) shines throughout, and has the lustre, vigour, and boldness of poetry, not without some air of its frenzy; and certainly prose ought to have the pre-eminence in speaking. The poet, says Plato, when set upon the Muse's tripod, pours out with fury whatever comes into his mouth, like the spout of a fountain, without considering and pausing upon it; and things come from him of various colours, of a contrary substance, and with an uninterrupted torrent: and all the old theology (as the learned inform us), as well as the first philosophy, are poesy. It is the original language of the gods; I mean, that the matter should distinguish itself; it sufficiently shows where it changes, where it concludes, where it begins, and where it rejoins, without interlacing it with words of connection, introduced for the service of dull or inattentive ears, and without commenting on myself. Who is there that had not rather not be read at all, than after a drowsy or cursory manner? *Nihil est tam utile, quod in transitu prosit*:\* "No work can be profitable, when it is read cursorily." If to take a book in hand, were to learn it; if to look upon it, were to consider it; and to run it slightly over, were to make it a man's own; I were then to blame to make myself altogether so ignorant as I say I am. Seeing I cannot fix the attention of my reader by the weight of what I write, *manco male*, "I am much mistaken," if I should chance to do it by perplexing him; nay, he will afterward repent that he ever amused himself with it: it is very true, but he will yet amuse himself with it. Besides, there are some humours in which intelligence produces disdain, who will think better of me for their not understanding what I say, and will conclude the depth of my sense by its obscurity; which, to speak sincerely, I mortally hate, and would avoid, if I knew

\* Seneca, epist. 2.

how. Aristotle boasts somewhere in his writings, that he affected it; vicious affectation. The frequent breaks in chapters that I chose to make in the beginning of my book, I have since thought, broke and dissolved the attention before it was raised, as making it disdain to settle and recollect itself to so little; and upon that account I have made the rest longer, such as require propositions, and assigned leisure. In such an employment, to whom you will not give an hour, you give nothing; and do nothing for him, for whom you only do whilst you are doing something else. To which may be added, that I have perhaps some particular obligation to speak only by halves, confusedly and inconsistently. I am therefore displeased with this impertinent way of talking, these extravagant projects that trouble life, and those opinions so refined, that though they have truth, I think it too dear bought, and too disagreeable. On the contrary, I make it my business to bring vanity itself in repute, and folly too, if it bring me any pleasure; and choose to follow my own natural inclinations, without bearing too strict a hand upon them.

I have seen elsewhere palaces in rubbish, and statues both of gods and men defaced, and yet there are men still; all this is true, and yet for all that, I cannot so often review the ruins of that so great and powerful city, that I do not admire and reverence it. The care of the dead is recommended to us; besides I have been bred up from my infancy with these people: I had knowledge of the affairs of Rome long before I knew those of my own house. I knew the Capitol, and its platform, before I knew the Louvre; and the river Tiber, before the river Seine. The qualities and fortunes of Lucullus, Metellus, and Scipio, have ever run more in my head than those of any of my own countrymen. They are all dead, and so is my father as absolutely dead as they, and is removed as far from me and life in eighteen years, as they are in sixteen hundred;

His particular liking to the city of Rome.

Meaning Rome.

Gratitude  
towards  
the dead.

whose memory, friendship, and society, I nevertheless cherish and embrace with a perfect and lively union. Nay, my humour is to render myself more officious to the dead; they no longer help themselves, and therefore methinks the more require my assistance: it is there that gratitude appears in its true lustre. Benefits are not so generously placed where there is retrogradation and reflection. Arcesilaus,\* going to visit Cresibius who was sick; and finding him in a very poor condition, privately conveyed some money under his pillow; and, by concealing it from him, acquitted him moreover from the acknowledgment due to such a benefit. Such as have merited from me my friendship and gratitude, have never lost them by being no more; I have better and more carefully paid them, when they were gone, and ignorant of what I did. I speak most affectionately of my friends when it is no longer in their power to know it. I have had a hundred quarrels in defending of Pompey, and for the cause of Brutus. This acquaintance yet continues between us. We have no other hold even of things present but by fancy. Finding myself of no use to this age, I throw myself back upon that other; and am so enamoured of it, that the free, just, and flourishing state of that ancient Rome (for I neither like it in its birth, nor in its old age) engross my affection to a degree of enthusiasm; and therefore I cannot so oft review the situation of their streets and houses, and those ruins as profound as the Antipodes, but they always amaze me. Is it by nature, or through error of fancy, that the sight of places which we know have been frequented and inhabited by persons whose memories are recommended in story, does, in some sort, work more upon us than to hear a recital of their actions, or to read their writings? *Tanta vis admonitionis inest in locis; et id quidem in hac urbe infinitum: quacumque enim ingre-*

\* Diogenes Laert. in the Life of Arcesilaus, lib. iv. sect. 37.

*dimur, in aliquam historiam vestigium ponimus.\**

“ So great a power of admonition is there in places, and truly in this city so infinite, that, which way soever we go, we tread upon some history.” It pleases me to consider their face, port, and vestments. I still ruminate on those great names, and make them ring in my ears. *Ego illos veneror, et tantis nominibus semper assurgo.†* “ I reverence them, and rise up in honour of names so great.” Of things that are in any measure great and admirable, I admire even the common parts. I could wish to see them talk, walk, and sup. It were ingratitude to condemn the relics and images of so many worthy and valiant men as I have seen live and die, and who, by their example, give us so many good instructions, if we knew how to follow them.

Besides, this very Rome that we now see deserves to be beloved; so long, and by so many titles a confederate with our crown; the only common and universal city. The sovereign magistrate that commands there, is equally acknowledged elsewhere: it is the metropolitan city of all the Christian nations. The Spanish and French are there at home. To be a prince of this estate, there needs no more but to be a prince of Christendom. There is no place upon earth, that heaven has embraced with such an influence and constancy of favour; its very ruins are glorious, and stately:

*Laudandis preciosior ruinis.†*

More glorious by her wond'rous ruins.

She yet in her very ruins retains the marks and image of empire. *Ut palam sit uno in loco gaudentis opus esse naturæ:* “ So that it is manifest that nature is in this one place enamoured of her own work.” Some would blame, and be angry at themselves for being tickled with so vain a pleasure. Our humours are

\* Cic. de Fin. lib. v. cap. 2.

† Seneca, epist. 64.

‡ Sidonius, Apol. carm. 27, entitled Narbo ad Consentium, ver. 62.

never too vain that are pleasant. Whatever they are that always content a man of common understanding, I could not have the heart to accuse him.

In what sense Montaigne is obliged to fortune.

I am very much obliged to Fortune, in that to this very hour she has offered me no outrage beyond what I was able to bear. Is it not her way to let those live in quiet by whom she is not importuned?

*Quanto quisque sibi plura negaverit,  
A diis plura feret : nihil cupientium  
Nudus castra peto : multa petentibus  
Desunt multa.\**

The more we to ourselves deny,  
The more the bounteous gods supply,  
The more indulgent heav'n bestows ;  
Far from the quarters of the great  
Happy, though naked, I retreat :  
Who covet much, their want is great.

If she continue her favour, she will dismiss me very well satisfied:

—— *Nihil supra  
Deos laceſso.†*

Nor for more  
Do I the gods implore.

But beware a shock: There are a thousand that perish in the port. I am very easy as to what shall here happen when I shall be gone. Present things take up enough of my thoughts :

*Fortunæ cætera mando.  
I leave the rest to Fortune.*

He did not think himself a whit the more unhappy for having no children to bear his name.

Besides, I have not that strong obligation, that which is said to attach men to futurity by the issue that succeeds to their name and honour ; and, perhaps, I ought the less to covet them, if they are to be so much desired. I am of myself but too much tied to the world, and to this life. I am content to be in Fortune's power by circumstances properly necessary to my being, without otherwise extending

\* Hor. lib. iii. ode 16, ver. 21,    † Idem, lib. ii. ode 18, ver. 11, 12.

her jurisdiction over me; and never thought, that to be without children was a defect that ought to render life less contented. The want of issue has its conveniences too. Children are of the number of things that are not very much to be desired, especially now, when it would be so hard to make them good. *Bona jam nec nasci licet, ita corrupta sunt semina*.\* “Nor can any thing good spring from seed so corrupt.” And yet they are justly to be lamented by such as have lost them.

Children not much to be coveted, and why.

He who left me my house in charge prognosticated that I would ruin it, considering my rambling humour; but he was mistaken, for I am in the same condition now as when I first entered into it, or rather better; and yet without office, or any place of profit.

His household affairs not the worse for being in his hands.

As to the rest, if Fortune has never done me any violent or extraordinary injury, neither has she favoured me. Whatever our family derives from her bounty, was there above a hundred years before my time. I have, as to my own particular, no essential and solid good, that I stand indebted for to her liberality; she has indeed done me some airy honours, and titulary favours that are not substantial; and those, in truth, she has not granted, but offered me, who, God knows, am all material, and like nothing but what is real and solid. And who, if I durst confess so much, would not think avarice much less excusable than ambition; nor pain less to be avoided than shame; nor health less to be coveted than learning, or riches than nobility.

He received no substantial favours from Fortune but such only as were windy and titular.

Amongst her empty favours there is none that so much pleases the silly humour natural to my country, as an authentic bull of a Roman burgess, that was granted me when I was last there, embellished with pompous seals and gilt letters, and granted in the most bountiful manner. And because it is couched

\* Tertul. de Pudicit.

in a mixed style, more or less favourable, and that I could have been glad to have seen the copy of it before it had passed the seal, I will, to satisfy any one that may be sick of the same curiosity I was, transcribe it here in its true form.

A bull investing  
Montaigne  
with the  
freedom of  
the city of  
Rome.

*Quod Horatius Maximus, Martius Cecius, Alexander Mutus, almæ urbis conservatores, de illustrissimo viro, Michaelē Montano, equite Sancti Michaelis, et à cubiculo Regis Christianissimi Romana civitate donando, ad Senatum retulerunt, S. P. Q. R. de ea re ita fieri censuit.*

*CUM veteri more et instituto cupide illi semper studioseque suscepti sint, qui virtute ac nobilitate præstantes, magno reip. nostræ usui atque ornamento fuissent, vel esse aliquando possent: nos majorum nostrorum exemplo, atque auctoritate permoti, præclaram hanc consuetudinem nobis imitandam, ac servandam fore censemus. Quamobrem cum illustrissimus Michael Montanus eques Sancti Michaelis, et à cubiculo Regis Christianissimi, Romani nominis studiosissimus, et familiæ laude, atque splendore, et propriis virtutum meritis dignissimus sit, qui summo senatus populi que Romani judicio ac studio in Romanam civitatem adsciscatur; placere senatui P. Q. R. illustrissimum Michaelē Montanum rebus omnibus ornatissimum, atque huic inclyto populo charissimum, ipsum posterosque in Romanam civitatem adscribi, ornari que omnibus et præmiis et honoribus, quibus illi fruuntur, qui cives patritiique Romani nati, aut jure optimo facti sunt. In quo censere senatum P. Q. R. se non tam illi jus civitatis largiri, quam debitum tribuere, neque magis beneficium dare quam ab ipso accipere, qui hoc civitatis munere accipiendo, singulari civitatem ipsam ornamento, atque honore affecerit. Quam quidem S. C. auctoritatem iidem conservatores per senatus P. Q. R. scribas in acta referri atque in Capitoli curiâ servari, privilegiumque hujusmodi*

*feri, solitoque urbis sigillo communiri curarunt. Anno ab urbe condita CXCCCCXXI. Post Christum natum MDLXXI. III. idus Martii.*

*Horatius Fuscus Sacri S. P. Q. R. scriba.*  
*Vincent. Martholus Sacri S. P. Q. R. scriba.*

Being before burgess of no city at all, I was glad to be created free of the most noble city that ever was, or ever will be. If other men would consider themselves as attentively as I do, they would, as I do, discover themselves to be full of vanity and foppery; and rid myself of it I cannot, without making myself away. We are all leavened with it, as well one as another; but they who are sensible of it, have the better bargain, and yet I know not whether they have or no.

This opinion, and common custom to observe others more than ourselves, has very much relieved us. It is a very displeasing object: we see nothing in it but misery and vanity. Nature, that we may not be dejected with the sight of our own deformities, has wisely projected our optic organ outward. We go forward with the current, but to turn back towards ourselves is a painful motion; thus is the sea agitated and troubled when the waves are repelled against one another. Observe, says every one, the motion of the heavens; the revolution of public affairs; observe the quarrel of such a person; feel such a one's pulse; mind another's last will and testament; in short, be always looking high or low, or on one side, or before or behind you. It was a paradoxical command anciently given us by the god at Delphos: "Look into yourself, discover yourself, keep close to yourself; call back your mind and will, that elsewhere consume themselves, into yourself; you run out, you waste yourself; collect yourself; support yourself; men betray you, men spoil you, men steal you from yourself." Dost not thou see that this world keeps all its views con-

Why man  
does not  
love to  
know and  
observe  
himself.



fin'd within, and its eyes open to contemplate itself? It is always vanity for thee, both within and without; but it is less vanity when less extended. Excepting thee (O man), said that god, every thing studies itself first, and has bounds to its labours and desires, according to its need. There is nothing so empty and necessitous as thou who embracest the universe; thou art the explorator without knowledge, the magistrate without jurisdiction; and after all, the fool in the play.

## CHAPTER IX.

### *Of managing the Will.*

Montaigne kept his affections in a moderate state.

**F**EW things, in comparison of what commonly affect other men, move, or to speak more properly, captivate me: for it is but reason they should concern a man, provided they do not wholly engross him. I am very solicitous, both by study and argument, to enlarge this privilege of insensibility, which in me is naturally far advanced, so that I espouse, and am consequently moved with few things. I have a clear sight, but I fix it upon very few objects; have a sense delicate and tender, but an apprehension and application hard and dull; I am very unwilling to engage myself. As much as in me lies, I employ myself wholly for myself; and in this very subject, would rather choose to curb and restrain my affection from plunging entirely into it, it being a subject that I possess at the mercy of others, and over which fortune has more right than I. Even so far as to health, which I so much value, it were necessary for me, not so passionately to covet and desire it, as to think diseases insupportable. There ought to be a medium between the hatred of pain,

and love of pleasure. And Plato prescribes the very thing.

But against such affections as carry me away from myself, and fix me elsewhere; against those, I say, I oppose myself with all my force. It is my opinion, that a man should lend himself to others, and only give himself to himself. Were my will easy to be engaged and swayed, I would not stick there: I am too tender both by nature and habit,

Why he strove against those which attached him to what was foreign to himself.

— *Fugax rerum, securaque in otia natus.\**

I fly from business as from a disease;  
Having been bred in negligence and ease.

for hot and obstinate disputes wherein my adversary would at last have the better; and the issue, which would render my heat of argument disgraceful, would perhaps vex me to the last degree. Should I set myself to it as earnestly as others do, my soul would never be able to bear the emotion and alarms, which those feel who grasp so much, and it would immediately be distracted by this inward agitation. If sometimes I have been put upon the management of other men's affairs, I have promised to take them in hand, but not into my lungs and liver; to charge myself with them, not to incorporate them: to take pains, but not to be passionate in them; I have a regard to them, but I will not brood over them: I have enough to do to order and govern the domestic throng that I have in my own veins and bowels, without harbouring and loading myself with a crowd of other men's affairs, and have enough of my own proper and natural business to mind, without calling in the concerns of others. Such as know how much they owe to themselves, and how many offices they are bound to of their own, find, that nature has cut them out work enough of their own to keep them from being idle. Thou hast business enough at home, look to that. Men let themselves out to

\* Ovid. de Trist. lib. iii. eleg. 2, ver. 9.

hire ; their faculties are not for themselves, but are employed for those to whom they have enslaved themselves ; this common humour pleases not me. We must be thrifty of the liberty of our souls, and never let them out but upon just occasions, which if we judge aright, are very few. Do but observe such as have accustomed themselves to be at every one's call and command ; they are so upon all, as well little as great, occasions, in what does not concern them, as well as in what does. They intrude themselves indifferently wherever there is business, and are without life, when not in some bustle of affairs. *In negotiis sunt negotii causæ.\** “ They only seek “ business for business’ sake.” It is not so much that they desire to go, as it is that they cannot stand still : like a rolling stone from a hill, that stops not till it is at the bottom. Business, in a certain sort of men, is a mark of understanding and dignity. Their minds are not easy but in agitation, as children that must be rocked in a cradle. They may pronounce themselves as serviceable to their friends, as troublesome to themselves. No one is lavish of his money to another, but every one is ready to give him his time and his life. There is nothing of which we are so prodigal as of these things, of which to be thrifty, would be both commendable and useful. I am of a quite contrary humour. I look to myself, and commonly covet with no great ardour what I do desire, and desire little : I employ and busy myself likewise but rarely and temperately. Whatever they aim at and take in hand, they do it with their utmost desire and with vehemency. There are so many wrong steps in life, that for the greater safety, we must a little lightly and superficially slide through the world, and not plunge into it over head and ears. Pleasure itself is painful at the bottom :

—— *Incedis per ignes  
Suppositos cineri doloso.†*

\* Seneca, epist. 22.

† Hor. lib. ii. ode 1, ver. 7.

Thou upon glowing coals dost tread,  
Under deceitful ashes hid.

The parliament of Bourdeaux chose me mayor of their city, at a time when I was far from France, and much farther from any such thought: I entreated to be excused; but I was told that I was to blame, the king having also interposed his command in that affair. It is an office that ought to be looked upon the more honourable, as it has no salary nor advantage but the bare honour of its execution: it continues two years, but may be extended by a second election, which very rarely happens; but it did to me, though it never did so but twice before: viz. some years ago to Monsieur de Lansac, and lately to Monsieur de Biron, mareschal of France, in whose place I succeeded, and left mine to Monsieur de Matignon, mareschal of France also, proud of so noble a fraternity:

Montaigne  
obliged to  
serve the  
office of  
mayor of  
Bour-  
deaux.

*Uterque bonus pacis bellicue minister.\**

Both fit for governing in peace and war.

Fortune would have a hand in my promotion, by this particular circumstance which she put in of her own, not altogether vain; for Alexander disdained the ambassadors of Corinth, who offered him the freedom of their city; but when they informed him that Bacchus and Hercules were also in the register, he thankfully accepted it.

At my arrival, I faithfully and conscientiously represented myself to them such as I find myself to be: a man without memory, without vigilance, without experience, and without vigour; but likewise void of hatred, ambition, avarice, and violence; that they might know what they were to expect from my service. And because the knowledge they had of my deceased father, and the honour in which they held his memory, were their only motives to confer this favour upon me, I plainly told them, that I

The cha-  
racter he  
gave of  
himself to  
the magis-  
trates of  
Bour-  
deaux.

\* Æneid, lib. xi. ver. 658.

would be very sorry any thing should make so great an impression upon me, as their affairs and the concerns of their city had done upon him, whilst he had the care of them in the same government to which they had preferred me. I very well remember when I was a boy, to have seen him in his old age, cruelly tormented with the toil of the public affairs; forgetting the sweet calm of his own house, to which his age and infirmity had attached him for several years before; regardless of his own affairs, and of his health, and really despising his own life, which was in great danger of being lost by being engaged in long and painful journeys for their service. Such was he, and this humour of his proceeded from great good nature. Never was there a more charitable and public spirited soul. Yet this proceeding which I commend in another, I do not love to follow myself, and am not without excuse. He had learned, that a man must forget himself for his neighbour, and that individuals were of no manner of consideration in comparison with the general concern.

Why the  
sages re-  
commend-  
ed it to  
men to ne-  
glect them-  
selves for  
the sake of  
the public.

Most of the rules and precepts of this world tend to drive us out of ourselves to go a hunting for the benefit of the society. They thought to do a great feat, to divert and separate us from ourselves, presuming we were but too much attached to ourselves by a too natural inclination, and have left nothing unsaid to that purpose: for it is no new thing for wise men to preach up things as they serve, not as they are. Truth has its obstructions, inconveniences, and incompatibilities with us. We must be often deceived, that we may not deceive ourselves. Our eyes must be shut, and our understandings stupefied to recover and amend them. *Imperiti enim judicant, et qui frequenter in hoc ipsum fallendi sunt, ne errent:* “For the ignorant judge, and therefore “are oft to be deceived lest they should err.” When they prescribe to us to love three, four, and fifty degrees of things above ourselves, they do like archers, who, to hit the white, take their aim a great

deal higher than the butt. To set a crooked stick straight, we bend it the contrary way. I believe that in the temple of Pallas, as we see in all other religions, there were apparent mysteries to be exposed to the people, and others more secret and sublime, that were only to be shown to such as were the professors.

It is likely that the true point of friendship, that every one owes to himself, is to be found in these things; not a false friendship, that makes us embrace glory, knowledge, riches, and the like, with a principal and immoderate affection, as members of our being; nor an indiscreet and effeminate friendship, which, like ivy, decays and ruins the walls it embraces: but a sound and regular friendship, equally profitable and pleasant. The truly wise man is convinced of the obligation which he owes to others, by knowing what he owes to himself. Whoever knows the duties of this friendship, and practises them, is truly of the cabinet council of the Muses, and has attained to the height of human wisdom, and our happiness. Such an one, exactly knowing what he owes to himself, will on his part find that he ought to apply the use of the world, and of other men, to himself, and for this end to contribute the duties and offices appertaining to him to the public society. He who lives not in some sort for others, lives not much for himself. *Qui sibi amicus est, scito hunc amicum omnibus esse.\** “He who is his own friend “is a friend to all men.” The principal charge we have is, to every one to take care of himself: and it is for this that we here live. As he who would omit to lead a virtuous and holy life, and think he acquitted himself of his duty, by instructing and training others up to it, would be a fool; even so he, who abandons his own healthful and pleasant life to serve others, takes, in my opinion, a course that is wrong and unnatural.

I would not that men should refuse, in the employments they take upon them, their attention, He that is too eager in the ex-

\* Seneca, epist. 6, at the end.

ercise of an office can-  
not manage  
it with pru-  
dence nor  
equity.

pains, their eloquence, and, if need be, their sweat and blood :

*Non ille pro charis amicis  
Aut patriâ timidus perire.\**

Dares for his country or his friend to die.

But this is by way of loan and accidentally ; his mind being always in repose and in health ; not without action, but without vexation, without passion. Merely to act, costs him so little, that he acts even sleeping. But it must be put into brisk motion with discretion ; for the body receives the offices imposed upon it, just according to what they are ; the mind oft extends, and makes them heavier at its own expense, giving them what measure it pleases. Men perform like things with different efforts, and a different contention of the will ; the one does well enough without the other. For how many people hazard themselves every day in war, without any concern which way it goes, and thrust themselves into the dangers of battles, the loss of which will not break their next night's sleep ? And there are men at home, out of such danger, which they durst not have faced, who are more passionately concerned for the issue of this war, and whose soul is more anxious about the events of it, than the soldier who spends his life and blood in it. I could have engaged myself in public employments, without quitting myself a hair's breadth, and have given myself to others, without abandoning myself ; this eagerness and vehemence of desires more hinders than advances the conduct of what we undertake ; fills us with impatience against slow or contrary events, and with bitterness and suspicion against those, with whom we have to do. We never carry on that thing well, by which we are wholly possessed and governed :

*Male cuncta ministrat  
Impetus.†*

\* Hor. lib. iv. ode 9, ver. 52.

† Statius in Thebais, lib. x. ver. 4 & 5:

With heated minds we ne'er conduct things well.

He, who therein employs only his judgment and address, proceeds more cheerfully : he counterfeits, he gives way, he defers all things at his ease, according to the necessities of occasions ; he fails in his attempts without trouble and affliction, ready and entire for a new enterprise : he always marches with the bridle in his hand. In him who is intoxicated with this violent and tyrannical intention, we necessarily discover much imprudence and injustice. The impetuosity of his desire carries him away. These are rash motions, and, if fortune do not very much assist, of very little fruit. Philosophy requires that, in the punishment of injuries received, we should divest ourselves of choler ; not that the revenge should be less, but, on the contrary, that it may be the better applied, and the more heavily laid on, which, it is conceived, will be hindered by this impetuosity. For anger not only troubles, but of itself also wearies the arms of those who chastise. This fire benumbs and wastes their strength. As in precipitancy, *festinatio tarda est* : "The more haste, the worse speed." Haste trips up its own heels, fetters and stops itself, *ipse se velocitas implicat*.\* For example : according to what I commonly see, avarice has no greater impediment than itself. The more intense and vigorous it is, the less it rakes together, and commonly sooner gathers riches when disguised under a mask of liberality.

That the chastisement of offences ought to be performed without anger.

A very honest gentleman, a friend of mine, had like to have cracked his brains by a too passionate attention to the affairs of a certain prince, his master ; which master has thus painted himself to me : that he foresees the weight of accidents as well as another ; but that in those for which there is no remedy, he presently resolves upon patience. In others, having taken all the necessary precautions, which by the vivacity of his understanding he can soon do, he calmly waits what may follow. And, in

Excellent character of a prince who was superior to the accidents of his fortune.

\* Seneca, epist. 44, at the end.



truth, I have accordingly seen him maintain a great indifferency and freedom of actions, and countenance, in very great and perplexed affairs. I find him a greater and a more able man in adversity than prosperity. His losses are to him more glorious than his victories, and his mourning than his triumphs.

It is an advantage in gaming to keep one's temper both in gain and loss.

Do but consider that, even in vain and frivolous action, as at chess, tennis, and the like, this eager and ardent engaging with an impetuous desire, immediately throws the mind and members into indiscretion and disorder. A man puzzles and bewilders himself. He that carries himself the most moderately, both towards gain and loss, has always his wits about him. The less peevish and passionate he is at play, he plays with much more advantage and safety.

A man ought to know his own solid interest.

As to the rest, we hinder the mind's grasp in giving it so many things to seize upon. Some things we are only to offer to it, to tie it to others, and with others to incorporate it. I can feel and discern all things, but ought to feed on nothing but self; and should be instructed in what properly concerns itself, and what is properly of its own possession and substance: the laws of nature teach us what we are justly to have. After the sages have told us, that no one is indigent by nature, and that every one is so according to opinion, they very subtilly distinguish between the desires that proceed from the former, and those that proceed from the irregularity of our fancy. Those, of which we can see the end, are nature's; those that fly before us, and of which we can see no end, are our own. There is an easy cure for the want of goods; but the poverty of the soul is incurable:

*Nam si, quod satis est homini, id satis esse potesset,  
Hoc sat erat : nunc, quum hoc non est, qui credimus porro,  
Divitias ullas animum mē explere potesse ?\**

\* Lucilius, lib. v. apud Nunnium, cap. 5, sect. 98.

If what's for man enough, enough could be,  
 It were enough ; but as we plainly see  
 That wont suffice, how can I e'er believe  
 That any wealth my mind content can give ?

Socrates seeing a heap of treasure, jewels, and costly furniture, carried in pomp through the city, "How many things,"\* said he, "do I not desire!" Metrodorus lived on the weight of twelve ounces a day ; Epicurus upon less : Metrocles,† in winter, slept abroad amongst sheep, in summer in the cloisters of churches : *Sufficit ad id natura quod poscit* :‡ , Nature furnishes what it absolutely needs." Cleanthes lived by the labour of his own hands, and boasted, "That Cleanthes, if he would, could yet "maintain another Cleanthes."§

If that, which nature exactly and originally requires of us for the preservation of our being, be too little (as, in truth, how much it is, and how cheaply life may be maintained, cannot be better made out, than by this consideration, that it is so little, that by its littleness it escapes the gripe and shock of fortune), let us allow ourselves a little more, let us even call every one of our habits and conditions nature ; let us tax and treat ourselves by this measure, let us stretch our appurtenances and accompts thus far ; for so far I fancy we have some excuse. Custom is a second nature, and no less powerful. What is wanting to my custom, I reckon as wanting to me ; and I would be almost as well content that they took away my life, as retrench me in the way wherein I have so long lived. I am past the terms of any great change, nor able to put myself into a new and unwonted course, though it were to my advantage ; it

\* Cic. Tusc. Quæst. lib. v. cap. 32.

† Plutarch, in his tract entitled, that Vice alone is sufficient to make a Man unhappy, chap. 4.

‡ Seneca, epist. 18.

§ It was Zeno who said this to Cleanthes, his disciple, if we may believe Diogenes Laertius in the life of Cleanthes, lib. vii. sect. 169, 170.

Why his necessities may be extended a little beyond the necessary demands of nature.

is past the time for me to become other than what I am. And I would complain of any great good adventure that should now befall me, that it came not in time to be enjoyed :

*Quo mihi fortunas, si non conceditur uti ? \**

Might I have the world's wealth, I should refuse it ;  
What good will it do me, if I may not use it ?

so would I complain of my inward acquisition. It were almost better never, than so late, to become honourable ; and to know the world thoroughly when a man has no longer to live. I, who am going out of it, would easily resign to any new comer all the prudence I have acquired in the world's commerce. " After meat comes mustard." I have no need of goods, of which I can make no use. Of what use is knowledge to him that has lost his head ? it is an injury and unkindness in fortune, to tender us presents that will inspire us with a just resentment that we had them not in their season. Guide me no more, I can no longer go. Of so many parts as make up a sufficiency, patience is the best. Assign the part of an excellent treble to a chorister that has rotten lungs, and eloquence to a hermit exiled into the deserts of Arabia. There is no art necessary for a fall ; the end comes of itself, at the conclusion of every affair. My world is at an end, my form expired ; it is all over with me ; and I am bound to authorise it, and to conform my exit to it.

The abridgment of ten days offered by the pope. I will here declare, by way of example, that the late ten days' diminution of the year by the pope, has taken me so low, that I cannot well reconcile myself to it. I follow the years wherein we kept another kind of account : so ancient, and so long a custom, challenges and calls me back to it ; so that I am constrained to be a kind of heretic in that point, impatient of any, though corrective, innovation. My imagination, in spite of my teeth, always pushes me

\* Hor. lib. i. epist. 5, ver. 12.

ten days forward or backward, and is ever murmuring in my ears. This rule concerns those who are to begin to be. If health itself, as sweet as it is, returns to me by intervals, it is rather to give me cause of regret than possession of it; I have no longer the means of recovering it. Time leaves me, without which nothing can be possessed. Oh, what little account should I make of those great elective dignities that I see in the world, which are only conferred upon men who are taking leave of it! Wherein it is not so much regarded how well he will discharge them, as how little a while; from the very entrance they have an eye to the exit. To conclude, I am ready to finish this man, and not to rebuild another. By long custom, this form is, in me, turned into substance, and fortune into nature. I say therefore, that every one of us feeble creatures is excusable in thinking that his own, which is comprised under this measure; but beyond these limits, it is nothing but confusion, it is the largest extent we can grant to our prerogative. The more we amplify our possessions, so much the more do we expose ourselves to the strokes of fortune and adversity. The career of our desires ought to be circumscribed, and restrained to a short limit of near and contiguous conveniences; and ought moreover to perform their course, not in a right line, that ends elsewhere, but in a circle, of which the two points by a short circumvolution meet and terminate in ourselves. Actions that are carried on without this reflection, a near and essential reflection I mean, such as those of ambitious and avaricious men, and many more, who run from the point, and whose career always carries them before themselves, such actions, I say, are erroneous and crazy.

Most of our business is farce: *Mundus universus* An honest man is not corrupted by the em-  
*exercet histrionem.\** We must play our part duly, but nevertheless as the part of a borrowed person;

\* Petronius Arbiter, lib. iii. cap. 8.

ployment  
he exer-  
cises.

we must not make real essence out of a vizard and outward appearance, nor of a strange person our own ; we cannot distinguish things that are near from those that are remote ; it is enough to meal the face, without mealing the breast. I see some, who transform and transubstantiate themselves into as many new shapes and new beings as they undertake employments, and who, with the pride of Lucifer, carry their office along with them, even to their close-stool : I cannot make them distinguish the salutations made to them, from those that are made to their commission, their train, or their mule : *Tantum se fortunæ permittunt, etiam ut naturam dediscant* :\* “ They are so intoxicated with their fortune, as even to forget their nature.” They swell and puff up their souls, and their natural tone of speaking, according to the height of their place. The mayor and Montaigne have ever been two persons, by very manifest separation. To be an advocate or a treasurer, a man must not be ignorant of the knavery of such callings ; an honest man is not accountable for the vices or folly of his profession, and yet ought not to refuse to take it upon him : it is the custom of his country, and there is money to be got by it ; a man must live by the world, and make his best of it, such as it is. But the judgment of an emperor ought to be upon his empire, and the seeing and considering of it, as of a foreign accident : and he ought to know how to enjoy himself apart from it, and to communicate himself, as James and Peter, to himself at least. I cannot engage myself so deep and entire.

Montaigne,  
by espous-  
ing a party,  
did not es-  
pouse its  
fury, injus-  
tice, and ri-  
diculous  
whimsies.

When my will gives me up to a party, it is not with so violent an obligation as to infect my understanding. In the present broils of this kingdom, my interest has not made me forget the qualities of our adversaries that are laudable, nor those that are reproachable in our party. They adore all of their

\* Quin. Cur. lib. iii. cap. 2.

own side ; for my part I do not so much as excuse those things in mine : a good piece has never the worse grace for being levelled at me. The knot of the controversy excepted, I have always kept myself in equanimity and pure indifference : *Neque extra necessitates belli præcipuum odium gero* : “ And “ have no particular hatred beyond the necessities “ of war.” For which I am pleased with myself, and the more, because I see common failings on the contrary side. Such as extended their anger and hatred beyond the dispute in question, as most men do, show that they spring from some other motive and particular cause ; like one who, being cured of an ulcer, has yet a remaining fever, by which it appears that the latter had another source more concealed. Thus they are not concerned in the common cause, as it is wounding to the interest of the state and the public, but are only animated by their private concerns. This is the true reason why they are so particularly piqued, and to a degree beyond justice and public reason : *Non tam omnia universi, quam ea, quæ ad quemque pertinent, singuli carpebant* : “ Every one was not so much angry at things “ in general, as at those that particularly concerned “ themselves.” I would have matters go well on our side ; but if they do not, I shall not run mad. I am heartily for the right party ; but I do not affect to be taken notice of in particular for an enemy to the others, and beyond the general reason. I am a mortal enemy to this vicious form of censure : “ He “ is of the league, because he admires the person of “ the duke of Guise. Another is astonished at the “ king of Navarre’s activity, and therefore he is a “ Hugonot. Another finds such and such faults “ in the king’s conduct, and therefore he is seditious “ in his heart.” I would not grant to a magistrate himself, that he did well in condemning a book, because it had ranked a heretic among the best poets of the time. Shall we not dare to say of a thief, that he has a handsome leg ? If a woman be a strum-

pet, must it needs follow that she has a stinking breath? Did they in the wisest ages revoke the superb title of Capitolinus, which they had before conferred upon Marcus Manlius, as the conservator of religion and public liberty; did they stifle the memory of his liberality, his feats of arms, and the military rewards granted to his virtue, because he afterwards aspired to the sovereignty, in prejudice of the laws of his country? If they have taken a hatred against an advocate, he will not be allowed the next day to be eloquent. I have elsewhere spoke of the zeal that pushed on worthy men to the like faults. For my part, I can say, such a one does this thing wickedly, and another thing virtuously. In like manner, in the prognostics, or sinister events of affairs, they pronounce every one of his party to be blind, or a blockhead, and require our persuasion and judgment to be subservient, not to truth, but to the project of our wishes. I would rather incline towards the other extreme, so much do I fear being influenced by my desire: to which may be added, that I am a little tenderly distrustful of things that I wish.

The indis-  
creet faci-  
lity of peo-  
ple in suf-  
fering them-  
selves to be  
imposed  
upon by the  
leaders of a  
party.

I have in my time seen wonders in that indiscreet and prodigious readiness of people in suffering their hopes and belief to be led and governed which way has best pleased and served their leaders, through a hundred mistakes one upon another, and through dreams and phantasms. I no longer wonder at those who have been seduced by the fooleries of Apollonius and Mahomet. Their sense and understanding is absolutely stifled in their passion; their discretion has no more any other choice than that which smiles upon them, and encourages their cause. I had principally observed this in the beginning of our intestine heats; this other, which is sprung up since, by imitating, has surpassed it; by which I am induced to think that it is a quality inseparable from popular errors. After the first that starts, opinions drive on one another like waves with the wind. A

man is not a member of the body, if it be in his power to forsake it, and if he do not run with the herd; but certainly they wrong the just side, when they go about to assist it with fraud. I have ever been against that practice. This can only work upon weak heads; as for the sound, there are surer, as well as more honest, ways to keep up their courage, and to excuse cross accidents.

Heaven never beheld so great an animosity as that between Cæsar and Pompey, nor ever will; and yet I observe methinks in those brave souls a great moderation towards one another. It was a jealousy of honour and command, which did not transport them to a furious and indiscreet hatred; theirs was hatred without malignity and detraction. In their hottest exploits, I discover some remains of respect and good-will; and therefore am of opinion, that, had it been possible, each of them would rather have done his business without the ruin of the other, than with it. Take notice how much otherwise matters went with Marius and Sylla?

Difference between Cæsar and Pompey's war, and that which was fo- mented be- tween Ma- rius and Sylla.

We must not be so desperately driven by our affections and interest. As when I was young, I opposed the progress of love, which I perceived to advance too fast upon me, and took care lest it should at last become so pleasing, as to captivate, and wholly reduce me to its mercy: so I do the same upon all other occasions where my will runs on with too keen an appetite. I lean opposite to the side it inclines to, as I find it going to plunge and make itself drunk with its own wine; I avoid nourishing its pleasure so far, that I cannot recover it without a cruel loss. Souls that, through their own stupidity, only discern things by halves, have this happiness, that they smart least with hurtful things. It is a mental leprosy that has some appearance of health, and such a health as philosophy does not altogether condemn; but yet we have no reason to call it wisdom, as we often do. After this manner one anciently mocked Diogenes, who, in the depth

The danger of a man's being a slave to his affections.



Diogenes  
patient of  
cold.

of winter, and stark-naked, went to embrace a statue covered with snow for a trial of his patience.\* The other meeting him in this plight, "Art thou not very cold?" said he.† "Not at all," replied Diogenes. "Why then," said the other, "what great and exemplary thing canst thou think thou dost, in embracing the snow?" A man, to take a true measure of constancy, must necessarily know what suffering is.

How Mon-  
taigne en-  
deavoured  
to prevent  
bad acci-  
dents in the  
manage-  
ment of his  
affairs and  
actions.  
A rich ves-  
sel pur-  
posely bro-  
ken by  
king Cotys,  
and why.

But souls that are to meet with cross events, and the injuries of fortune in their depth and severity, that are to weigh and taste them according to their natural weight and sharpness; let such show their skill in avoiding the causes, and diverting the blow. What did king Cotys do?‡ He paid liberally for the rich and beautiful vessel that had been presented him; but it being exceeding brittle, he immediately broke it to prevent in good time so easy a matter of displeasure against his servants. In like manner, I have willingly avoided all confusion in my affairs, and never coveted to have my estate contiguous to those of my relations, and persons with whom I was desirous of a strict friendship; whence matters of unkindness, and which has often occasioned a strangeness and a separation. I have formerly loved the hazardous games of cards and dice, but have long since left them off, only for this reason, that though I put a good face on my losses, I was vexed at my heart. Let a man of honour, who ought heartily to resent a lie and an affront, and who is not to take a bad excuse for satisfaction, avoid occasions of dispute. I shun melancholic and morose men, as I would do the plague. And in matters I cannot treat of without emotion and concern, I never meddle, if not compelled by my duty. *Mc-*

\* Diog. Laert. in the Life of Diogenes the Cynic, lib. vi. sect. 23.

† Plutarch, in the Notable Sayings of the Lacedæmonians.

‡ Plutarch, in the Notable Sayings of ancient kings, &c. in the article Cotys.

*lius non incipient, quam desinent* :\* “A man had “better never to have begun, than to leave undone.” The surest way, therefore, is, to prepare a man’s self beforehand for occasions. I know very well, that some wise men have taken another course, and have not feared to grapple and engage to the utmost upon several subjects. Such are confident of their own strength, under which they protect themselves in all ill successes, making their patience wrestle with disasters :

—*Velut rupes vastum quæ prodit in æquor,  
Olvia ventorum furis, expostaque ponto,  
Vim cunctam atque minas perfert cœlique marisque,  
Ipsa immota manens.* †

He as a rock amongst vast billows stood,  
Scorning loud winds, and raging of the flood,  
And fix’d remaining all the force defies  
Muster’d from theat’ning seas and thund’ring skies ?‡

Let us never attempt these examples; we shall never come up to them. They set themselves resolutely, and without trouble, to behold the ruin of their country, which had a right to all the good they could do. This is too much, and too harsh for our vulgar souls to undergo. Cato, indeed, gave up the noblest life that ever was upon this account ; but it is for us meaner spirited men to fly from the storm as far as we can ; we ought to make provision of resentment, not of patience, and evade the blows we cannot put by. Zeno, seeing Chremonides, a young man whom he loved, draw near to sit down by him, suddenly started up, and Cleanthes demanding of him the reason why he did so, “I hear,” said he, “that physicians strictly enjoin repose, and forbid “emotion in all tumours.”§ Socrates says not, Do not surrender to the charms of beauty, stand your ground, and do your utmost to oppose it. Fly

\* Senec. ep. 92. † Virg. *Æn.* lib. x. ver. 693. ‡ Mr. Ogilby.  
§ Diog. Laert, in the Life of Zeno, lib. vii. sect. 17.

from it, says he, shun the sight and encounter of it, as you would from strong poison that darts and wounds at a distance. And his good disciple,\* either feigning or reciting, but in my opinion, rather reciting than feigning the rare perfections of that great Cyrus, makes him distrustful of his own strength, to resist the charms of the divine beauty of the illustrious Panthea, his captive, in committing her to the observation and keeping of another, who was more enamoured than himself. And the Holy Ghost in like manner: *Ne nos inducas in tentationem*: “Lead us not into temptation,” Matth. vi. ver. 13. We do not pray that our reason may not be combated and overcome by concupiscence, but that it be not so much as tried by it; that we may not be brought into a state wherein we may be so much as liable to suffer the approaches, solicitations, and temptations of sin: and we beg of almighty God to keep our consciences quiet, fully and perfectly free from all communication with evil.

He endeavoured to check the first sally of his passions.

Such as say that they have reason for their revenging passion, or any other sort of troublesome agitation of mind, oft say true, as things now are, but not as they were. They speak to us when the causes of their error are by themselves nourished and advanced. But look backward, recal these causes to their beginning, and there you will put them to a nonplus; will they think their fault less for being of longer continuance, and that of an unjust beginning the sequel can be just? whoever shall desire the good of his country as I do, without fretting or pinning himself, will be chagrined, but will not swoon to see it threatening either its final ruin, or no less ruinous continuance. Poor vessel, which the waves, the winds, and the pilot, steer to with such contrary views!

\* Xenophon, in his *Cyropædia*, lib. v. cap. 1, ver. 3, 4, 5, 6.

— *In tam diversa, magister,  
Ventus, et unda trahunt.\**

He, who pants not for the favour of princes, as a thing he cannot live without, does not much concern himself at the coldness of their reception and countenance, nor at the inconstancy of their humours. He, who does not brood over his children, or his honours, with a slavish fondness, lives commodiously enough after their loss. He, that does good principally for his own satisfaction, will not be much troubled to see men judge of his actions contrary to his merit. A quarter of an ounce of patience will be enough against such inconveniences. I find satisfaction in this receipt, redeeming myself in the beginning as cheaply as I can; and am sensible that I have thereby escaped much trouble and many difficulties. With very little ado I stop the first sally of my passions, and leave the subject that begins to be troublesome before it transports me. He, who stops not the start, will never be able to stop the career. He, who cannot keep the passions out, will never drive them out when they are got in; and he, who cannot crush them at the beginning, will never do it in the end, nor ever recover his fall, if he cannot stand the shock. *Et enim ipsæ se impellunt, ubi semel à ratione discessum est: ipsaque sibi imbecillitas indulget, in altumque provehitur imprudens: ne creperit locum consistendi:†* “For men  
“are precipitant, when once they lose their reason;  
“and frailty does so far indulge itself, that it is indiscreetly carried out into the deep, and can find  
“no port to stop at.” I am betimes sensible of the little breezes that begin to whistle in the shrouds, the forerunners of a storm:

— *Ceu flamina prima  
Cum deprensa fremunt sylvis, et cæca volutant  
Murmura, venturos nautis prodentia ventos. ‡*

\* Buchanan.

† Cic. Tusc. lib. iv. cap. 18.

‡ Æneid, lib. x. ver. 97, &c.

— As when winds rise,  
And stopt by woods, a sudden murmur send,  
Which doth a storm to mariners portend.\*

With what  
care he a-  
voided  
law-suits.

How oft have I done myself a manifest injustice to avoid the hazard of having yet a worse done me by the judges, after an age of vexations, dirty and vile practices, more enemies to my nature than fire, or the rack? *Convenie à litibus quantum licet, et nescio an paulò plus etiam quàm licet, abhorrentum esse. Est enim non modò liberalè paululum nonnunquam de suo jure decedere, sed interdum etiam fructuosum*:† “A man should be an enemy to all contention as much as he lawfully may, and for ought I know something more: for it is not only generous, but sometimes also advantageous, to recede a little from one’s right.” Were we wise, we ought to rejoice and boast, as I one day heard a young gentleman of a good family very innocently do, that his mother had lost her trial, as if it had been a cough, a fever, or something very troublesome to keep: even the favours that fortune might have given me through relations, or acquaintance with persons who have great interest, I have very conscientiously waved, and very carefully avoided employing them to the prejudice of others, and of advancing my pretensions above their true value. In fine, I have so much prevailed by my endeavours, in a happy hour I may speak it, that I am at this day a virgin from all suits in law; though I have had very fair offers made me, and with a very just title, would I have hearkened to them; and a virgin from quarrels too. I have almost passed over a long life without any offence of moment, either active or passive, or without ever hearing a worse word than my own name: a rare favour of heaven.

The most  
violent pas-  
sions raised

Our greatest agitations arise from ridiculous motives and causes. What ruin did our last duke of

\* Mr. Ogilby,

† Cic. de Offic. lib. ii. c. 8,

Burgundy run into by a quarrel about a cart-load of sheep skins? \* And was not the graving of a seal the first and principal cause of the greatest commotion that this machine of the world ever underwent? † for Pompey and Cæsar are but the off-sets and slips of the two others. And I have, in my time, seen the wisest heads in this kingdom assembled with great ceremony, and at the public expense, about treaties and agreements, of which the true decision absolutely depended upon a cabinet council of ladies, and the inclination of some foolish woman. The poets had a right notion of this, when they put all Greece and Asia to fire and sword for an apple. Inquire why such a man stakes his life and honour upon the fortune of his rapier and dagger: let him acquaint you with the occasion of the quarrel; he cannot do it without blushing, it is so idle and frivolous.

A little thing will do at setting off; but, being once embarked, all cords draw; great provisions are then required, more hard, and more important. How much easier is it not to enter in, than it is to get out? Now, we should proceed contrary to the reed, which, at its first springing, produces a long and straight stalk, but afterwards, as if tired and out of breath, it runs into thick and frequent knots, as so many pauses; which demonstrates that it has no more its first vigour and constancy. It were better to begin fair and softly, and to keep a man's breath and vigorous efforts for the height and stress of the business. We guide affairs in their beginnings, and have them then in our own power; but afterwards when they are in motion, it is they that guide and govern us, and we are to follow them. Yet I pretend not hereby to say, that this counsel has discharged me of all difficulty, and that I have not

\* See the Memoirs of Philip de Comines, lib. v. cap. 1.

† The civil war between Marius and Sylla. See Plutarch, in the life of Marius, chap. 3 of Amyot's translation.

often had enough to do to curb and restrain my passions. They are not always to be governed according to the measure of occasions, and the entrance on them is often sharp and violent ; so it is, that thereby much may be saved and got ; except for those, who in well-doing are not satisfied with any benefit, if reputation be wanting : for, in truth, such an effect is of no estimation but by every one to himself. You are better contented with it, but not more esteemed ; seeing you reformed yourself before you had the subject in view. Yet not in this only, but in all other duties of life, the way of those who aim at honour, is very different from that they proceed by, who propose to themselves order and reason. I find some who rashly and furiously rush into the lists, and cool in the course. As Plutarch says, that as those, who through false modesty are soft and ready to grant whatever is desired of them, are afterwards as apt to break their word, and to recant ; so likewise he who enters lightly into a quarrel, is subject to go as lightly out. The same difficulty that keeps me from entering into it, would, when I am once provoked and warmly engaged in it, spur me to maintain it with great obstinacy. It is the tyranny of custom, that, when a man is once engaged, he must persist, or die. “ Undertake coldly,” said Bias, “ but pursue with ardour.”\* For want of prudence, men grow faint-hearted, which is still more intolerable.

Most accommodations of our quarrels are scandalous.

Most accommodations of the quarrels of these days are shameful and false ; we only seek to save appearances, and in the mean time betray and disavow our true intentions. We put a gloss on the fact. We know very well how we said the thing, and in what sense we spoke it, and both all the company, and our friends, whom we would make sensible of our advantage, understand it well enough too. It is at the expense of our liberty, and the honour

\* Diogenes Laert. in the Life of Bias, lib. i. sect. 87.

of our courage, that we disown our thoughts, and seek subterfuge in falsehoods to make us friends. We give ourselves the lie, to excuse the lie we have given to another. You are not to consider, if your word or action may admit of another interpretation ; it is your own true and sincere interpretation that you are thenceforward to maintain, whatever it cost you. Men speak to your virtue and conscience, which are not things to be disguised. Let us leave these pitiful ways and expedients to the chicanery of the courts of law. The apologies and satisfactions that I see every day made to excuse indiscretion, seem to me more scandalous than the indiscretion itself. It were better to affront your adversary a second time, than to offend yourself by giving him so unmanly a satisfaction. You have braved him in your anger, and you go to appease and wheedle him in your cooler and better sense, and by that means lay yourself lower than you set yourself up. I do not think any thing a gentleman can say so vicious in him, as unsaying what he has said is infamous, when he is forced to unsay it by authority ; forasmuch as obstinacy is more excusable in such a man than pusillanimity. Passions are as easy for me to avoid, as they are hard for me to moderate. *Excinduntur facilius animo, quam temperantur* : “ They “ are more easily eradicated than to be governed.” Who cannot attain to this noble stoical impassibility, let him secure himself in the bosom of this popular stupidity of mine. What those great souls performed by their virtue, I inure myself to do by constitution. The middle region harbours tempests ; the two extremes of philosophers and peasants concur in tranquillity and happiness :

*Felix, qui potuit rerum cognoscere causas ;  
Atque metus omnes, et inexorabile fatum  
Subjecit pedibus, strepitumque Acherontis avari.  
Fortunatus et ille, Deos qui novit agrestes,  
Panaque, Sylvanumque senem, Nymphasque sorores.\**



Happy the man who, vers'd in nature's laws,  
 Of her effects can trace the wond'rous cause;  
 Who without fear his certain fate can meet,  
 And trample death itself beneath his feet;  
 And happy he who haunts the rural gods,  
 Pan and Sylvanus, and the nymphs' abodes.\*

The births of all things are weak and tender, and therefore are we to have an eye to their beginnings; for as when in their infancy the danger is not perceived, so when it is grown up, the remedy is no more to be found. I had every day encountered a million of crosses, harder to digest in the progress of my ambition, than it was for me to curb the natural propensity that inclined me to it:

— *Jure perhorruì,  
 Latè conspicuum tolerè verticem.*†

Well might thy friend be shy,  
 To raise his head too high.‡

What  
 others as  
 well as  
 Montaigne  
 himself  
 thought of  
 his con-  
 duct while  
 he was  
 mayor of  
 Bour-  
 deaux.

All public actions are subject to various and uncertain interpretations, for too many heads judge of them. Some say of this city-employment of mine (and I am willing to say a word or two of it, not that it is worth so much, but to give an account of my manners in such things), that I behaved myself in it like a man not easy to be moved, and with a languid affection: and they have some colour for what they say. I endeavour to keep my mind and my thoughts in repose. *Cum semper naturâ, tum etiam ætate jam quietus*: "As being always quiet by nature, so also "now by age." If they sometimes launch out upon some rude and sensible impression, it is in truth without my advice. Yet from this natural decay of my spirits men ought not to conclude a total inability in me (for want of care, and want of sense, are two things), and much less any slight or ingratitude towards that corporation, who did their utmost to oblige me, both before they knew me and after. And they did much more for me in choosing me

\* Mr. Benson.

† Hor. lib. iii. ode 16, ver. 18.

‡ Sir Rich. Fanshaw.

anew, than in conferring that honour upon me at first; I wish them all the good that can be. And doubtless, upon occasion, there is nothing I would have spared for their service; I exerted myself as much for them as I would have done for myself. They are a good, warlike, and generous people, but capable of obedience and discipline, and of whom good use may be made, if they are well guided. They say also, that my administration was passed over without any action of importance. It is true: they moreover accuse my indolence in a time when every body almost was convinced of doing too much. I am impatient to be doing where my will spurs me on, but this point is an enemy to perseverance. Whoever will make use of me, according to my own way, let him employ me in affairs where vigour and liberty are required; where a direct, short, and a hazardous conduct are necessary, I perhaps may do something; but if it must be long, subtle, laborious, artificial, and intricate, they had better apply to somebody else. All important offices are not difficult: I was prepared for work a little more rough, had there been great occasion; for it is in my power to do something more than I do, and than I love to do; I did not, to my knowledge, omit any thing that my duty really required; it is true, that I easily forgot those offices that ambition mixes with duty, and gilds with its title. Those are they, that for the most part engross the eyes and ears, and give men the most satisfaction. Not the thing, but the appearance contents them. They think men sleep if they hear no noise. My humour is an enemy to tumult. I could appease a riot without disturbing myself, and chastise a disorder without many words. If I stand in need of anger and inflammation, I borrow it, and put it on as a mask; my deportment is dull, rather faint than sharp. I do not condemn a magistrate that sleeps, provided the people under his charge sleep as well as he: the laws in that case sleep too. For my part, I commend a

smooth, solitary, and silent life. *Neque submissam, et abjectam, neque se efferentem* :\* “ A life equally “ free from meanness and insolence.” My fortune requires it to be such. I am descended from a family that has lived without lustre or tumult, and time out of mind particularly ambitious of valour and sincerity. Our people now-a-days are so bred up to bustle and ostentation, that good-nature, moderation, equity, constancy, and such quiet and obscure qualities, are no longer regarded. Rough bodies are easily felt, the smooth ones scarce at all. Sickness is felt, health little, if at all, no more than the oils that foment us, in comparison of the pains that torment us. It is acting for a man’s reputation and particular profit, not for the public weal, to refer that to be done in the forum, which a man may as well do in the council-chamber ; to put off to noon-day, what might have been done the night before ; and to be zealous to do that himself which his colleague can do as well as he. So some surgeons of Greece performed their operations upon scaffolds, in the sight of the people, to draw more practice and custom. They think that good rules cannot be understood but by the sound of trumpet. Ambition is not a vice of little people, and of such abilities as ours. One said to Alexander, your father will leave you a great dominion, easy and peaceable ; this youth was emulous of his father’s victories, and the justice of his government, and did not wish to have enjoyed the empire of the world in ease and peace. Alcibiades, in Plato, had rather die exceeding young, beautiful, rich, noble, and learned, than to continue in such an effeminate state. This disease is perhaps excusable in so strong and so capacious a mind. When these poor mean souls enlarge themselves, and think to spread their fame, for having given right judgment in an affair, or continued the discipline of keeping the guard of a gate of their city ; the more

\* Cic. de Offic. lib. i. cap. 34.

they think to exalt their heads, the more they show their tails. This little well-doing has neither body nor life ; it vanishes in the first mouth, and goes no farther than from one street to another. Talk of it in God's name to your son, or your servant ; like that old fellow, who, having no other auditor of his praises, nor commender of his valour, boasted to his chamber-maid, crying out, O Perret, what a gallant brave man hast thou to thy master ! At the worst talk of it to yourself like a counsellor of my acquaintance, who, having disgorged a whole bundle of law cases, full of paragraphs, with very great heat, and as great folly, coming out of the council-chamber to the pissing-place, was heard very conscientiously to mutter between his teeth, *Non nobis, Domine, non nobis, sed nomini tuo da gloriam* : “ Not unto us, O Lord, not unto us, but unto thy “ name be the glory.” He who can get it of nobody else, may pay himself out of his own purse. Fame is not prostituted at so cheap a rate. Rare and exemplary actions, to which it is due, would not endure the company of this prodigious crowd of little temporary performances. Marble may exalt your titles as much as you please, for having repaired a rood of a ruinous wall, or cleansed a public aqueduct ; but no men of sense will do it. Renown does not attend every good deed, if novelty and difficulty be not conjoined in it. Nay, so much as mere estimation, according to the Stoics, is not due to every action that proceeds from virtue ; neither will they allow him so much as thanks, who out of temperance forbears to meddle with any old blear-eyed hag. Such as have known the admirable qualities of Scipio Africanus, deny him the glory that Panætius attributes to him, of being abstinent from gifts, as a glory not so much his, as that of the age he lived in. We have pleasures suitable to our fortunes, let us not usurp those of grandeur. Our own are more natural, and by so much more solid and sure, as they are more low. If not for that of conscience, yet at

least for ambition's sake, let us reject ambition, let us disdain that thirst of honour and renown, so low and beggarly, that it makes us ask it as an alms from all sorts of people: *Quæ est ista laus quæ possit à macello peti?*\* “What praise is that which is to be “got at the shambles?” by abject means, and at any cheap rate soever. To be so honoured is dishonour. Let us learn to be no more greedy, than we are capable of honour. To be puffed up with every action that is innocent, or of use, is only for those with whom such deeds are extraordinary and rare; they will value it as it costs them. How much more a good effect makes a noise, so much I abate of the goodness of it; and suspect that it was more performed to be talked of, than upon the account of its goodness: being exposed upon the stall, it is half sold. Those actions have much more grace, that slip from the hand of the performer negligently, and without noise; and which some honest man afterwards chooses out, and raises from the shade, to produce it to the light for their own sakes. The vainest man in the world said, *Mihi quidem laudabilia videntur omnia, quæ sive venditione, et sine populo teste fiunt*.† “All things truly seem more laudable to me, “that are performed without ostentation, and without the testimony of the people.” I had nothing to do but to preserve and to continue, which are silent and sensible effects. Innovation is of great lustre; but it is interdicted at this time, when we are pressed upon, and have nothing to defend ourselves from but novelties. To forbear doing, is often as generous as to do, but it is not so conspicuous: and the little good I have in me is almost entirely of this kind. \* In fine, occasions in this employment of mine, have been consistent with my humour, and I thank them for it. Is there any one who desires to be sick for the sake of seeing his physician employed?

\* Cicero de Fin. Bon. et Mal. lib. xi. cap. 15.

† Cicero Tusc. Quæst. lib. ii. cap. 26.

And should not that physician be whipped, who wished the plague amongst us, that he might put his art in practice? I was never of that wicked humour, though common enough, to desire that the trouble and disorders of this city should set off and do honour to my government; I heartily contributed all I could to their tranquillity and ease. He who will not thank me for the order, the sweet and silent calm that accompanied my administration, cannot however deprive me of the share of it that belongs to me by the title of my good fortune. I am of such a composition, that I would as willingly be happy as wise; and had rather owe my successes purely to the favour of Almighty God, than to any operation of my own. I had sufficiently published to the world my unfitness for such public offices; but I have something in me yet worse than incapacity; which is, that I am not much displeased at it, and that I do not much go about to cure it, considering the course of life that I have proposed to myself. Neither have I satisfied myself in this employment, but I have very near arrived at what I expected from my own performance, and yet have much surpassed what I promised them with whom I had to do: for I am apt to promise something less than what I am able to perform, and than what I hope to make good. I assure myself that I have left no impressions of offence or hatred behind me, and that I will leave a regret or desire of me amongst them. I at least know very well that I never much affected it.

— *Méne huic confidere monstro,  
Méne salis placidi vultum, fluctusque quietos  
Ignorare ?\**

Me dost thou bid to trust the treach'rous deep!  
Her harlot smiles shall I believe again,  
And oft betray'd, not know the monster main?

\* Virg. *Æneid.* lib. v. ver. 849.

## CHAPTER X.

*Of Cripples.*

The year  
cut ten  
days  
shorter.

IT is now two or three years ago that they made the year ten days shorter in France. How many changes may we expect to follow this reformation? This was properly removing heaven and earth at once; and yet nothing stirs from its place: my neighbours still find their seasons of sowing and reaping, and of trading, together with the lucky and unlucky days, just at the same instant, where they had time out of mind assigned them. There was no error perceived in our old usage, nor is there amendment found in the new. So great an uncertainty there is throughout; so gross, obscure, and dull is our perception! It is said, that this regulation might have been carried on with less inconvenience, by subtracting for some years, according to the example of Augustus, the Bissextile, which is upon the whole a day of hindrance and confusion, till we had exactly satisfied that debt; which is not performed neither by this correction, and we yet remain some days in arrear: and surely by the same means care might be taken for the future, by ordering, that after the revolution of such a year, or such a number of years, this supernumerary day might be always eclipsed, so that we could not henceforward exceed four-and-twenty hours in our misreckoning. We have no other account of time but years; the world has for many ages made use of that only, and yet it is a measure that to this day we have not fixed upon; such a one, that we still doubt what form other nations have variously given to it, and what was the true use of it. What does this saying of some mean, "That the heavens, in growing old, press nearer towards us, and put us to an uncertainty even of hours and days? And that which Plu-

“ tarch says of the months, that astrology had not,  
 “ in his time, determined the motion of the moon?”  
 So, what a fine condition are we in to keep records  
 of things past!

. I was just now ruminating, as I often do, what a free and roving thing human reason is. I ordinarily see, that men, in things proposed to them, are more curious to find out the reason of a thing, than to find out the truth of it. They slip over suppositions, but nicely examine consequences. They leave the things, and fly to the causes. Pleasant disputants! The knowledge of causes only concerns him who has the conduct of things, not us, who are only to undergo them, and who have a full and complete use of them according to our need, without penetrating into their original and essence. Neither is wine more pleasant to him that knows its first qualities. On the contrary, both the body and soul alter and interrupt the right they have of the use of the world, and of themselves, by mixing with it in the opinion of learning. Effects concern us, but the means not at all. To determine and to distribute appertain to the superior and the governor, as it does to the subject and the learner to accept it. Let me resume our custom. They commonly begin thus: “ How is such a thing done?” Whereas they should say, “ Is such a thing done?” By our talk we are able to create a hundred other worlds, and to find out the beginnings and contexture; it needs neither matter nor foundation. Let the tongue run, it builds as well in a vacuum as on the earth; and with inanity as well as matter:

*Dare pondus idonea fumo.\**

And can give weight to smoke.

I find, that almost throughout we should say,  
 “ there is no such thing;” and would myself oft  
 make use of this answer, but I dare not; for they

The vanity of the human understanding, which often seeks for the causes of a fact, before there is a certainty of such fact.

\* Persius, sat. v. ver. 20.



cry, it is a defect produced from ignorance and weakness of understanding. And I am forced, for the most part, to play the impertinent for company, and to prate of frivolous and idle subjects, of which I believe not a word. Besides, in truth, it is a little rude flatly to deny a proposition; and there are few people but will affirm, especially in things hard to be believed, that they have seen them, or at least will name such witnesses whose authority stops our contradiction. By this means we know the foundations and means of a thousand things that never were; and the world scolds about a thousand questions, of which the *pro* and *con* are both false. *Ita finitima sunt falsa veris, ut in præcipitem locum non debeat se sapiens committere.\** “False things are so like the true, that a wise man should not trust himself upon the precipice.” Truth and lies have the same aspect, their port, taste, and paces are the same, and we look upon them with the same eye. I find that we are not only remiss in defending ourselves from deceit, but we seek and offer ourselves to be gulled; we love to entangle ourselves in vanity, as a thing conformable to our being.

What credit false miracles have gained in the world.

I have seen the birth of many miracles of my time, which although they were still-born, yet have we not failed to foresee what they would have come to, had they lived. It is but finding the end of the clue, and a man may wind off as much as he will; and there is a greater distance between nothing, and the minutest thing in the world, than there is between that and the greatest. Now, the first that are tinctured with this beginning of novelty, when they set out their history, find, by the opposition they meet with, where the difficulty of persuasion lies, and caulk that place with some false piece. Besides that, *Insita hominibus libidine alendi de industria rumores:* “Men having a natural lust to propagate reports,” we naturally make a conscience of re-

\* Cic. Acad. Quæst. lib. iv. cap. 21.

storing what has been lent us, without some usury and addition of our own invention. Private error first creates public error ; and afterwards, in turn, public error causes a particular one ; thus all this fabric rises by patchwork from hand to hand, so that the remotest witness knows more than those that are nearest ; and the last informed is more certain than the first. It is a natural progress ; for whoever believes any thing, thinks it a work of charity to persuade another into the same opinion. Which the better to do, he will make no difficulty of adding as much of his own invention, as he conceives necessary to obviate the resistance or want of conception he supposes in others. I myself, who make a particular conscience of lying, and am not very solicitous of gaining credit and authority to what I say, yet find, that in the arguments I have in hand, being warmed with the opposition of another, or by the proper heat of my own narration, I swell and puff up my subject by voice, motion, vigour, and force of words ; and likewise by extension and amplification ; not without prejudice to the naked truth : but I do it on condition nevertheless, that to the first who brings me to recollection, and who asks me the plain and real truth, I presently surrender, and deliver it to him without exaggeration, without emphasis, or any interlarding of my own. A quick and earnest way of speaking, as mine is, is apt to run into hyperbole. There is nothing to which men commonly are more inclined, than to give way to their own opinions. Where the ordinary means fail us, we add command and force, fire and sword. It is a misfortune to be at that pass, that the best touchstone of the truth, must be the multitude of believers, in a crowd, where the number of fools so much exceeds the wise. *Quasi vero quidquam sit tam valde, quam nihil sapere, vulgare. Sanitatis patrociniū est, insanientium turba.\** “ As if any thing were so common as

\* Cic. de Div. lib. ii. cap. 39. Item Aug. de Civit. Dei, lib. vi. cap. 10.

A priest  
that cured  
all sorts of  
diseases by  
words and  
gestures.

“ ignorance. The mob of fools is a protection to the  
“ wise.” It is hard for a man to form his judgment  
against the common opinions. The first persuasion  
taken of the very subject itself, possesses the simple,  
and from that it spreads to the wise, by the autho-  
rity of the number and antiquity of the witnesses.  
For my part, what I would not believe from one, I  
would not believe from a hundred ; and I do not  
judge of opinions by the years. It is not long since  
one of our princes, in whom the gout has spoiled an  
excellent natural genius, and sprightly disposition,  
suffered himself to be so far persuaded with the re-  
port of the wonderful operations of a certain priest,  
who by words and gestures cured all sorts of dis-  
eases, as to go a long journey to seek him out ; and  
by the force of his apprehension for some time, so  
persuaded and laid his legs asleep for several hours  
as to obtain that service from them which they had  
a long time left off. Had fortune packed together  
five or six such accidents, it had been enough to  
have brought this miracle into nature. There was  
after this discovered so much simplicity, and so little  
art in the architect of such operations, that he was  
thought too contemptible to be punished ; as would  
be the case of most such things, were they examined  
to the bottom. *Miramur ex intervallo fallentia* : \*  
“ We admire at things that deceive by their dis-  
“ tance.” So does our sight oft represent to us  
strange images at a distance, that vanish in ap-  
proaching them near. *Nunquam ad liquidam fama  
perducitur* : † “ Fame never reports things in their  
“ true light.”

How it  
comes to  
be so diffi-  
cult a mat-  
ter to be  
convinced  
that a mi-  
racle is  
false.

It is to be wondered at, from how many idle be-  
ginnings and frivolous causes such famous impres-  
sions commonly proceed. This it is that obstructs  
the information ; for whilst we seek out the causes,  
and the great and weighty ends, worthy of so great  
a name, we lose the true ones. They escape our

\* Senec. ep. 118.

Qu. Curtius, lib. ix. cap. 2.

sight by their littleness : and, in truth, a prudent, diligent, and subtle inquirer is necessary in such searches ; one who is indifferent and not prepossessed.

To this very hour all these miracles and strange events have concealed themselves from me ; I have never seen a more evident monster of miracle in the world than myself : a man grows familiar with all strange things by time and custom ; but the more I visit and the better I know myself, the more does my own deformity astonish me, and the less I understand of myself.

*What Montaigne thought the clearest of miracles.*

The chief prerogative of advancing and producing such accidents, is reserved to fortune. Riding the other day through a village, about two leagues from my house, I found the place yet hot with the rumour of a miracle lately wrought there, wherewith the neighbourhood had been several months amused, so that neighbouring provinces began to take the alarm, and there was a vast concourse to it of all sorts of people. A young fellow of the town, had one night counterfeited the voice of a spirit in his own house, without any other design, but only for present sport ; but this having succeeded with him a little better than he expected, in order to illustrate his farce with more actors, he took a stupid silly country girl into the scene, and at last they were three of the same age and understanding, who from domestic lectures, proceeded to public preaching, hiding themselves under the altar of the church, never speaking but by night, and forbidding any light to be brought. From words which tended to the conversion of the world, and threats of the day of judgment (for these are subjects under the authority and reverence of which imposture lies most securely concealed), they proceeded to visions and gestures, so simple and ridiculous, that nothing could hardly be so gross in the diversion of little children : yet had fortune never so little favoured the design, who knows to what height this juggling might have at last arrived ? These poor devils are at present in

*Story of a miracle's very near gaining credit, though built on a very weak foundation.*

prison, and are like to pay for their imposition on the public, and I know not whether some judge may not also make them smart for imposing on him. We see clearly in this which is discovered; but in many things of the like nature, that exceed our knowledge, I am of opinion, that we ought to suspend our judgment, and to keep it in a state as fit to reject as to receive them.

The foundation of all the impostures in the world.

Great abuse, or, to speak more boldly, all the abuses of the world are begot by our being taught to be afraid of professing our ignorance, and from our being bound to accept whatever we are not able to confute. We speak of all things by precepts and decision. The style of Rome was, that even that which a witness deposed he had seen with his own eyes, and what a judge determined from his most certain knowledge, was couched in this form of speaking, "it seems." They make me hate things that are likely, when they impose them upon me for infallible. I love those words which mollify and moderate the temerity of our propositions, "perhaps, in some sort, some say, I think," and the like: and had I been to train up children, I would have so familiarised them to the interrogatory and not peremptory way of answering, "what does this mean? I understand it not; it may be; is it true?" that they should rather have retained the form of pupils at threescore years old, than to go out doctors at ten, as they now do. Whoever will be cured of ignorance, must confess it.

A kind of ignorance much to be esteemed.

Iris is the daughter of Thaumantis; admiration is the foundation of all philosophy, inquiry the progress, and ignorance the end. Nay in truth, there is a sort of ignorance strong and generous, that yields nothing in honour and courage to knowledge; and ignorance, of which to conceive, requires no less knowledge than to conceive of knowledge itself. I saw in my younger years, a process which Corras a counsellor of Tholouse published, of a strange accident of two men, who presented them,

selves the one for the other. I remember (and I hardly remember any thing so well) that he seemed to have rendered the imposture of him whom he judged to be guilty, so wonderful, and so far exceeding both our knowledge and his own, who was the judge, that I thought it a very bold sentence which condemned him to be hanged. Let us take up some form of arrest, that says, "The court understands nothing of the matter;" more freely and ingenuously than the Arcopagites did, who, finding themselves perplexed with a cause they could not unravel, ordered the parties to appear again after a hundred years.

The witches of my neighbourhood run a hazard of their lives, upon the intelligence of every new author, that gives a real substance to their dreams. To accommodate the examples that holy writ gives us of such things, examples that are most certain and irrefragable, and to make our modern events of the same kind, as we neither see their causes nor their means, will require another sort of wit than ours. It perhaps only appertains to that most potent testimony, to tell us, "This is true, and that is true, and not that other." God ought to be believed, and certainly with very good reason; but not one amongst us, for all that, who is astonished at his own narration (and he must of necessity be astonished, if he be not out of his wits), whether he employ it in the case of another, or against himself.

I am plain and blunt, and am inclined to that which is solid and more likely, avoiding those ancient reproaches, *Majorem fidem homines adhibent eis quæ non intelligunt. Cupidine humani ingenii libentius obscura creduntur*.<sup>\*</sup> "Men are most apt to believe obscure things and what they least understand." I see very well that men are angry, and that I am forbidden to doubt upon pain of execrable injuries. A new way of persuading! God forgive them. I

Whether from the miracles reported in the sacred scriptures any thing can be inferred in favour of such modern events.

As to witches Montaigne refused to determine any thing, and treated most of the stories concerning them as chimeras.

<sup>\*</sup> Tacit. Hist. lib. i. cap. 22.

am not to be cuffed into belief. Let them be angry with those that accuse their opinion of falsity, I only accuse it of difficulty and boldness; and condemn the opposite affirmation equally with them, though not so imperiously. He who establishes his argument by authority and hectoring, discovers his reason to be weak, for a verbal and scholastic altercation, let them have as much appearance as their contradictors. *Videantur sanè, non affirmentur modò* : \* “ Be the things that are advanced probable, well and “ good; provided they are not absolutely affirmed.” But in the real consequence they draw from it, these have much the advantage. To convince men, a clear and shining light is required. Our life is too real and essential a thing to warrant those supernatural and fantastic accidents. As to drugs and poisons, I throw them out of my account; as being the worst sorts of homicide: yet even in this, it is said, that men are not always to insist upon the proper confessions of these people; for men have sometimes been known to accuse themselves of the murder of persons who, have afterwards been found living and well. In these other extravagant accusations, I would be apt to say, it is sufficient that a man, what recommendation soever he may have, be believed in human things; but of what is beyond his conception, and of a supernatural effect, he ought then only to be believed, when it is authorised by a supernatural approbation. The privilege it has pleased God to give to some of our testimonies, ought not to be lightly communicated and made cheap. I have my ears battered with a thousand such flim flams as these. “ Three saw him such a day in the east; “ three the next day in the west: at such an hour, “ in such a place, and in such a habit.” In earnest I would not take my own word for it. How much more natural and likely do I find it that two men should lie, than that one man, in twelve hours’ time,

\* Cic. Acad. Quæst. lib. iv. cap. 37.



should fly with the wind from east to west? How much more natural, that our understanding should be perverted by the volubility of our disordered minds, than it is that one of us should be carried, by a strange spirit, upon a broomstick, flesh and bones, as we are, up the shaft of a chimney? Let us not seek delusions that are external and unknown, we who are perpetually agitated with delusions that are domestic and our own. Methinks a man is pardonable in disbelieving a miracle, as far at least as he can divert and expunge the verification of it by no wonderful ways. And I am of St. Augustine's opinion, that it is better to lean towards doubt than assurance, in things hard to prove, and dangerous to believe. It is now some years ago, that I travelled through the territories of a sovereign prince, who, in my favour, and to abate my incredulity, did me the honour to let me see, in his own presence, and in a particular place, ten or twelve prisoners of this kind: and amongst others, an old hag, a real witch in nastiness and deformity, who long had been famous in that profession. I saw both proofs and free confessions, and I know not what unaccountable mark upon this miserable old creature: I examined and talked with her, and the rest, as much and as long as I would, and gave the utmost attention I could; neither am I a man to suffer my judgment to be captivated by prepossession; but upon the whole in my conscience I would sooner have prescribed them hellebore than hemlock. *Captisque res magis mentibus, quam consceleratis similis visa* :\*

“ The thing seemed rather to be attributed to madness than malice.” Justice has correction proper for such maladies. As to the oppositions and arguments that I have met with from honest men, both there and oft in other places, I have found none that have convinced me, and that have not admitted a more likely solution than their conclusions. It is true indeed, that, as to proofs

\* Livius.



and reasons that are founded upon experience and matter of fact, I do not unhinge them, neither have they any end. I often cut them, as Alexander did the Gordian knot. After all, it is setting a man's conjectures up at a very high price, to cause a man to be roasted alive for them.

He is induced to think that witches are crack-brained; but does not pretend that his word should be taken for it.

We are told by several examples (and particularly by Præstantius\* of his father) that being more drowned in sleep than men generally are, he fancied himself to be a beast of burden, and that he served the soldiers for a sumpter-horse; and what he fancied himself to be, he really proved. If witches dream so materially, if dreams can sometimes so incorporate themselves in the effects, I cannot believe that therefore our wills should be accountable to justice; which I say, as a man, who am neither judge nor privy counsellor, and who think myself by many degrees unworthy so to be; but a man of the common sort born, and devoted to the obedience of the public reason, both in his words and actions. He that would quote my whimsies to the prejudice of the most paltry law, opinion, and custom of his parish, would do himself a great deal of wrong, and me much more. For in what I say, I warrant no other certainty, but that it is what I

\* After a fruitless search to find out who were this Præstantius and his father, I was informed by M. de la Monnoye, whom nothing escapes. He referred me to the tract de Civitate Dei, lib. xviii. cap. 18, where St. Augustine reports the fact as follows, viz. One Præstantius said, that his father having eaten some cheese in which there had been a spell, slept several days in his bed so sound that none could awake him, till the lethargy going off, he told the visions he had had, viz. that he was turned into a horse, and that in this shape he had served the soldiers for a sumpter-horse, which, says St. Augustine, actually happened as he related it. The holy father is of opinion, that in cases of this sort the devil presents to the spectators a visionary body which they take for a real animal, a horse, an ass, &c. and that the man who imagines himself to be that ass, or that horse, thinks he carries a real burden, as much as it was possible for him to fancy it in a dream; so that if such phantom of an animal carries real bodies, they are the Dæmons who carry them in order to deceive men, who then see real bodies or the back of a sumpter-horse, which is a mere phantom.

had then in my thought. Confused and wavering thought. All I say is by way of discourse, and nothing by way of advice. *Nec me pudet, ut istos, fateri nescire, quod nesciam.\** “Neither am I “ashamed, as they are, to confess my ignorance “of what I do not know.” I would not speak so boldly, if it were my due to be believed. And so I told a great man, who complained of the tartness of my exhortations. Perceiving you to be positive on one side of the question, I propose to you the other, with all the care I can, to clear your judgment, not to bind it. God has your heart in his hands, and will furnish you with the choice. I am not so presumptuous as to desire that my opinions should bias you in a thing of so great importance. My fortune has not trained them up to such potent and sublime conclusions. Truly I have not only a great many humours, but also a great many opinions, that I would endeavour to make my son dislike, if I had one. Why? even the truest are not always the most commodious to man, he is of so wild a composition.

Whether it be to the purpose, or not, it is no great matter. It is a common proverb in Italy, Reflection on a very old proverb. “That he knows not all the pleasures of Venus to “perfection, who has never lain with a cripple.” Fortune, or some particular accident, has long ago put this saying into the mouths of the people; and the same is said of men as well as of women; for the queen of the Amazons answered a Scythian who courted her to love, *ἀριστα χολὸς οἰφεῖν*, “Lame men Lame people best at the sport of Venus. “perform best.” In that feminine republic, to evade the dominion of the males, they lamed them in their infancy, in their arms, legs, and the other joints that gave them advantage over the females, and only made use of them in that affair wherein we in these parts of the world make use of the sex. I would have been apt to think that the wriggling motion of

Women  
weavers  
more lust-  
ful than  
other wo-  
men.

The mind  
of man  
forgets the  
most chi-  
merical  
reasons.

Contrary  
causes as-  
signed to  
one and  
the same  
effect.

the lame mistress added some new pleasure to the affair, and a certain titillation to those who are engaged in it; but I have lately learned, that ancient philosophy has itself determined it, which says, that the legs and thighs of lame persons, not receiving, by reason of their imperfection, their due aliment, it falls out, that the genital parts above are fuller, better supplied, and more vigorous. Or else, that this defect hindering exercise, they who suffer it are at less expense of their spirits, and come more entire to the sports of Venus; which also is the reason why the Greeks decried the women weavers, as being more hot than other women by reason of the sedentary occupation, which they have without any great exercise of the body. What is it we may not reason of at this rate? I might also say of these, that this jogging on their seats, whilst they are at work, rouzes and provokes their desire, as the swinging and jolting of their coaches does that of our ladies of quality.

Do not these examples serve to make good what I said at first, that our reasons often anticipate the effect, and have so-infinite an extent of jurisdiction, that they judge and exercise themselves, even in inanity and non-existence? Besides the flexibility of our invention to forge reasons for all sorts of dreams, our imagination is equally ready to receive impressions of falsity, by very frivolous appearances. For by the sole authority of the ancient and common use of this proverb, I have formerly made myself believe, that I have had the more pleasure with a woman by reason she was not straight, and accordingly reckoned that deformity amongst her graces.

Torquato Tasso,\* in the comparison he makes between France and Italy, says, he has observed, that our legs are generally smaller than those of the Italian gentlemen: and attributes the cause of it to our being continually on horseback. The very

\* *Paragone dell' Italia alla Francia*, p. 11

thing from which Suetonius\* draws a conclusion that is directly opposite; for he says on the contrary, that Germanicus had made his legs bigger by the continuation of the same exercise. Nothing is so supple and wandering as our understanding. It is like the shoe of Theramenes, fit for all feet. It is double and various, as are also the subjects. "Give me a dram-weight of silver," said a Cynic philosopher to Antigonus. "That is too little for a king to give," replied he. "Give me then a talent;" said the other. "And that," said the king, "is too much for a Cynic to ask."†

*Seu plures calor ille vias, et cæca relaxat  
Spiramenta, novas veniat qua succus in herbas:  
Seu durat magis, et venas astringit hiantes,  
Ne tenues pluviae, rapidive potentia solis  
Acrior, aut Boreæ penetrabile frigus adurat.‡*

Virgil says, it is often proper to set fire to the fields, and to burn the useless stubble.

Whether the heat the gaping ground constrains,  
New knits the surface, and new strings the veins;  
Lest soaking show'rs should pierce her secret seat,  
Or freezing Boreas chill her genial heat,  
Or scorching suns too violently beat.

*Ogni medaglia ha ill suo reverso:* § "Every medal has its reverse." This is the reason why Clitomachus said of old, that Carneades had out-done the labours of Hercules, in having eradicated from the mind of man, its obstinacy and rashness of judging. This so strong fancy of Carneades, sprung, in my opinion, anciently from the impudence of those who made profession of knowledge, and their unbounded self-conceit. Æsop was set to sale with two other slaves; the buyer asked the first, "What he could do;" who, to enhance his own value,

\* Suetonius, in Vita Caligulæ, sect. 3.

† Senec. de Benef. lib. ii. cap. 17.

‡ Virg. Georg. lib. i. ver. 89, &c.

§ Cic. Acad. Quæst. lib. iv. cap. 31.

promised mountains and miracles, saying, "He could do this, and that, and I know not what;" the second boasted as much of himself and more: when it came to Æsop's turn, and that he was also asked, "What he could do?" "Nothing," said he, "for these two have taken up all before me; they can do every thing." So has it happened in the school of philosophy. The pride of those who attributed a capacity for all things to human understanding, created in others, out of spite and emulation, this opinion, that it is capable of nothing. The one maintains the same extreme in ignorance as the others do in knowledge; so that it is undeniable, that man is immoderate throughout, and can never stop but from necessity, and the want of ability to proceed farther.

## CHAPTER XI.

### *Of Physiognomy.*

We admire the discourses of Socrates out of pure respect to the public approbation, without discerning the true value of them. **A**LMOST all the the opinions we have are derived from authority, and taken upon trust; and it is not amiss. We could not choose worse than by ourselves in so weak an age. The representation of Socrates's discourses, which his friends have transmitted to us, we approve upon no other account, but merely the reverence to public approbation. It is not according to our knowledge; they are not after our way. If any thing of this kind should spring up now, few men would value them. We discern not the beauties otherwise than by certain features, touched up, and illustrated by art. Such as glide on in their own genuine simplicity, easily escape so gross a sight as ours: they have a delicate and concealed beauty, and it requires the clearest sight to discover so secret a light. Is not simplicity,

in the sense we accept it, cousin-german to folly, and a quality of reproach? Socrates makes his soul move by a natural and common motion. "A peasant said this, a woman said that;" he never has any thing in his mouth, but carters, joiners, cobblers, and masons. They are inductions and similitudes drawn from the most common and known actions of men; every one understands them. We would never have conceived the nobility and splendor of his admirable conceptions under so vile a form; we, I say, who think all things low and flat, that are not elevated by learning, and who discern no riches but in pomp and show. This world is only formed for ostentation. Men are only puffed up with wind, and are banded to and fro like tennis-balls. This man proposed to himself no vain fancies; his design was to furnish us with precepts and things that are really and most immediately of service to life:

— *Servare modum, finemque tenere,  
Naturamque sequi.\**

To keep a mean, his end still to observe,  
And from the laws of nature ne'er to swerve.

He was also always one and the same, and raised himself not by starts, but by constitution, to the highest pitch of vigour; or to say better, he exalted nothing, but rather brought down and reduced all asperities and difficulties to their original and natural condition, and subjected their power: for in Cato it is most manifest, that this is a pace extended far above the common ways of men. In the brave exploits of his life, and in his death, we find him always mounted upon his managed horses. Whereas this man always skims the ground, and with a gentle and ordinary pace, delivers the most useful discourses, and bears himself up through the most crabbed difficulties that could occur in the course of human life, even to death.

\* Lucan. lib. ii. ver. 381, 382.

The character of Socrates, as it is given us by the most faithful and the clearest evidence.

It has fallen out well, that the man most worthy to be known, and to be presented to the world for example, is he of whom we have the most certain knowledge; for he has been pried into by the most clear-sighted men that ever were. The testimonies we have of him are admirable both for their number and credit. It is a great thing that he was able so to order the pure imaginations of a child, that without altering or wresting them, he has thereby produced the most beautiful effects of a human soul. He presents it neither elevated nor rich, he only represents it sound, but certainly with a brisk and pure health. By these common and natural springs, by these vulgar and ordinary fancies, without being moved or provoked in the business, he drew up, not only the most regular, but the most high and vigorous beliefs, actions, and manners that ever were. It is he who brought again from heaven, where she lost time, human wisdom, to restore her to man, with whom her most just and greatest business lies. See him plead before his judges; do but observe by what reasons he rouses his courage to the hazards of war; with what arguments he fortifies his patience against calumny, tyranny, death, and the perverseness of his wife: you will find nothing in all this borrowed from art and the sciences. The simplest may therefore discover their own means and power; it is impossible to retire farther, or to creep more low. He has done human nature a great favour in showing how much it can do of itself.

Man incapable of moderation even with regard to science.

We are all of us richer than we think we are; but we are taught to borrow and to beg, and brought up more to make use of what is another's than our own. Man can in nothing set bounds to his necessity. Of pleasure, wealth, and power, he grasps at more than he can hold; his greediness is incapable of moderation. And I find that, in the curiosity of knowing, he is the same; he cuts himself out more work than he can execute, and more than he needs to perform: extending the utility of knowledge as

far as the matter. *Ut omnium rerum, sic literarum quoque, intemperantia laboramus.\** "As of every thing else, we are intemperate in the pursuit of learning." Tacitus had reason to commend the mother of Agricola,† for having restrained her son in his too violent appetite for learning.

It is a good, if duly considered, which has in it, as the other goods of men have, a great deal of vanity, and of proper and natural weakness, and which costs very dear; the acquisition of it is more hazardous than that of all other sustenance. For in other things, what we have bought, we carry home in some vessel, and there have liberty to examine the worth of it, how much and at what time we shall take it; but the sciences we can bestow into no other vessel than the soul; we swallow them in buying, and return from the market, either already infected, or amended. There are such sorts as only burden and clog us instead of nourishing; and moreover, some that, under colour of curing, poison us. I have been pleased, in places where I have been, to see men through devotion make a vow of ignorance as well as chastity, poverty, and penitence. It is as it were a gelding of our unruly appetites to blunt this curiosity that spurs us on to the study of books; and to deprive the soul of this voluptuous complacency, that tickles us through our opinion of knowledge. It is fully accomplishing the vow of poverty to add unto it that also of the mind. We need not be taught to live at our ease. Socrates tells us, that the way how to attain to it, and the manner how to use it, are in our power. All this sufficiency of ours, which exceeds the natural, is little better than superfluous and vain. It is much if it does not more encumber and plague us than do us good. *Paucis opus est literis ad mentem bonam.*† "A man of good disposition, has little need of learning." It

Learning is a dangerous acquisition.

That which is of absolute use is in us by nature.

\* Senec. ep. 106. † Tacit. in the Life of Jul. Agricola, sect. 4

† Senec. epist. 106.



is a feverish excess of the mind; a turbulent and restless tool. Do but look into yourself, and you will find there such natural arguments against death, as are true, and the most proper to serve you in necessity. They are such as make a peasant, and an entire people die with as much constancy as a philosopher. Would I have died less cheerfully before I had read Cicero's *Tusculanes*? I believe not. And when I consider seriously, I perceive that my language is enriched indeed, but my courage little or nothing. It is just as nature forged it, and, in any conflict, only defends itself in a natural and ordinary way. Books have not so much served me for instruction as for exercise. What if learning, trying to arm us with new defences against natural inconveniences, has more imprinted in our fancies the weight and greatness of them, than its reasons and subtleties to secure us from them? They are subtleties indeed, with which it oft alarms us to little purpose. Do but observe, how many frivolous, and if nearly examined, how many immaterial arguments the most concise and the wisest authors scatter about one that is good. They are no other than quirks to deceive us. But as this may be with some profit, I will sift them no farther. Enough of that sort are dispersed up and down, either by borrowing, or by imitation: therefore ought a man to take a little heed, not to call that force which is only civility, nor that solid which is only sharp, or that good which is only fair. *Quæ magis gustata quam potata delectant* :\* “Which more delight the palate than the “stomach.” Every thing that flatters does not feed. *Ubi non ingenii, sed animi negotium agitur* :† “Where the question is not about improving the “wit, but the understanding.”

Seneca's  
great ef-  
forts in pre-  
paring for  
his death.

To see the bustle that Seneca makes to fortify himself against death, to see him so sweat and pant to harden and encourage himself, and bait so long

\* Tusc. lib. v. cap. 5.

† Senec. epist. 75.

upon this perch, would have lessened his reputation with me, had he not very bravely maintained it to the last. His so ardent and frequent agitations discover, that he was in himself hot and impetuous. *Magnus animus remissiùs loquitur, et securiùs: non est alius ingenio, alius animo color:\** "A great courage speaks more indifferently and more firmly; the mind and the heart are of the same livery." He must be convinced at his own expense. And he in some sort discovers that he was hard pressed by his enemy.

Plutarch's manner, the more disdainful and the more lax it is, is, in my opinion, the more manly and persuasive; I am apt to believe, that his soul had more certain and more regular motions. The one, being more sharp, pricks and makes us start, and more touches the soul; the other, being more solid, informs, establishes, and constantly supports us, and more touches the understanding. That extorts the judgment, this wins it. I have likewise seen other writings yet more revered than these, which in the representation of the conflict they maintain against the temptations of the flesh, depict them so sharp, so powerful, and invincible, that we ourselves, who are of the dregs of the people, are as much to wonder at the strangeness and unknown force of their temptation, as at their resistance.

To what end do we so arm ourselves with these maxims of philosophy? Let us look down upon the poor people that we see scattered upon the face of the earth, wholly intent upon their business, that neither know Aristotle nor Cato, example nor precept. Even from these nature every day extracts effects of constancy and patience, more pure and manly than those we so diligently study in the schools. How many do I ordinarily see, who slight poverty? How many that desire to die, or that do it without alarm or affliction? He, that is now digging in my

Plutarch is more loose in this point, and for that very reason more persuasive.

The resolution of the vulgar in facing the most fatal accidents of life and even death itself, more instructive than the lectures of the philosophers.

\* Senec. epist. 114, 115.

garden, has this morning buried his father or his son. The very names by which they call diseases sweeten and mollify the sharpness of them. The phthisic is with them but a cough, the bloody-flux but a looseness, a pleurisy but a stitch; and as they gently name them, so they patiently endure them. They are grievous indeed, when they hinder their ordinary labour; and they never keep their beds but to die. *Simplex illa, et aperta virtus in obscuram, et solertem scientiam versa est.\** "That plain and simple virtue" is converted into an obscure and cunning knowledge."

Non-taigne's account of the terrible calamities of the civil war in which he was involved.

I was writing this about the time when a heavy load of our intestine troubles lay with all its weight upon me for several months. I had the enemy at my door on one side, and the free-booters, worse enemies than they, on the other; *non armis sed vitiis certatur*: "I was attacked not by force of arms, but fraud;" by which I was exposed to all sorts of military injuries at once:

*Hæstis adest dextrâ, lævâque ex parti timendus,  
Vicinoque malo terret utrumque latus.†*

On either hand an enemy alarms,  
And threatens both sides with destructive arms.

A monstrous war! other wars are bent against foreign nations; this against itself, and preys upon and destroys itself with its own poison. It is of so malignant and ruinous a nature, that it ruins itself with the rest; and with rage mangles and tears itself to pieces. We oftner see it waste itself, than through scarcity of any necessaries, or by force of the enemy. All discipline shuns it. It comes to compose sedition, and is itself full of it; aims to chastise disobedience, and itself gives the example; and, while employed for the defence of the laws, shares in rebellion against its own. What a condition are we in! our very physic is a plague:

\* Sen. epist. 95.

† Ovid. de Ponto. lib. i. eleg. 3, ver. 57, 58.

*Nostre mal s'empoisonne  
Du secours qu'on luy donne.\**  
Such is our fate, that our disease  
Our remedies doth still increase.

— *Exuperat magis, ægrescitque medendo.†*  
The physic makes us worse, and sicker still.

*Omnia fanda nefanda malo permista furore,  
Justificam nobis mentem avertère deorum.‡*

Right and wrong, confounded in this war,  
Have robb'd us of the gods' protecting care.

In the beginning of such popular maladies, a man may distinguish the sound from the sick ; but when they come to continue, as ours have done, the whole body is then infected from head to foot, and no part is free from corruption. For there is no air that men so greedily suck in, that diffuses itself so far, and that penetrates so deep, as that of licentiousness. Our armies only subsist and are kept together by the cement of foreigners ; for of French there is now no constant and regular body of an army to be made. What a shame it is ! there is scarce any discipline but what we learn from hired soldiers. As for our parts, we conduct ourselves not at the discretion of the chief,§ but every one at his own ; the general has a harder task to perform within than he has without : the commander alone is obliged to follow the soldiers, to make court to them, to comply with their humours, to obey them, and in every other regard there is nothing in the armies but dissolution and licentiousness. It pleases me to observe how much pusillanimity and cowardice there is in ambition ; by how abject and servile ways it must arrive at its end ; but besides, it displeases me to see good and courteous natures, and that are capable of justice, every day corrupted in the manage-

\* Plutarch.

† Virg. *Æneid.* lib. xii. ver. 46.

‡ Catullus, *carm.* 62, de Nuptiis Pelei et Thetidis, ver. 408.

§ Here the ingenious Mr. Cotton quite mistook the sentiment of his author.

ment and command of this confusion. Long toleration begets habit, habit consent and imitation. We had souls mischievous enough, without spoiling those that were good and generous; so that if we hold on, there will scarce remain any with whom to entrust the weal of the state, in case fortune restore it to us :

*Hunc saltem everso juvenem succurrere seculo  
Ne prohibete.\*—————*

Stay not the <sup>successor</sup> which we all implore,  
But let this youth the sinking age restore.†

What is become of the old precept, “ That soldiers  
“ ought to stand more in awe of their chief than of  
“ their enemy ?” And that wonderful example, that  
an orchard, being inclosed within the precincts of a  
camp of the Roman army, was at their decampment  
next day left entire to the owner, and not an apple,  
though ripe and delicious, pulled off? I could wish  
that our youth, instead of the time they spend in  
less useful travels, and less honourable studies,  
would bestow one half of that time in being eye-  
witnesses of naval exploits under some good com-  
mander of Malta, and the other half in observing  
the discipline of the Turkish armies, which is very  
different from and has many advantages over ours.  
One thing is, that our soldiers are become more  
licentious in expeditions, whereas theirs are more  
temperate, and kept more in awe. The thefts and  
insolences committed upon the common people,  
which are only punished with the bastinado in peace,  
are capital in war. For an egg taken in Turkey  
without paying for it, fifty blows with a cudgel is the  
settled rate; for any thing else, how trivial soever,

An orchard  
of ripe ap-  
ples in-  
closed  
within the  
Roman  
camp, left  
untouched  
to the pos-  
sessor.

\* Virg. Geor. lib. i. v. 500.

† If I am not mistaken the person here meant by Montaigne is Henry of Bourbon, king of Navarre, who succeeded to the crown of France by the death of Henry III. not only saved the government, which he had assisted in the life time of that prince, but rendered it more flourishing and formidable, than it had been for a long time.

not necessary to nourishment, they are impaled, or beheaded without delay. I am astonished to read in the history of Selim, the most cruel conqueror that ever was, that when he subdued Egypt, the beautiful gardens about the city of Damascus being all open (and in a conquered land, where his army encamped upon the very place), were left untouched by the hands of the soldiers, because they had not received the signal for plunder.

But is there any disease in a government so important, as ought to be purged with such a mortal drug? "No," says Favonius, "not so much as the tyrannical usurpation of a commonwealth." Plato likewise does not consent, that a man should violate the peace of his country to cure it; and by no means approves of a reformation that disturbs and hazards all, and that is purchased at the price of the subjects' blood and ruin; determining it to be the duty of a patriot, in such a case, to let all alone, and only pray to God for his extraordinary assistance; and the philosopher seems to be angry with his great friend Bion, for having proceeded something after another manner. I was a Platonic in this point, before I knew there had ever been such a man as Plato in the world. And if this person ought absolutely to be rejected from our society (he who, by the sincerity of his conscience, merited so much of the divine favour as to penetrate so far into the christian light, through the universal darkness wherein the world was involved in his time), I do not think it would well become us to suffer ourselves to be instructed by a heathen, what a great impiety it is, not to expect from God relief that is simply his own, and without our co-operation. I often doubt, whether, among so many men as tamper in such affairs, there is not to be found some one of so weak understanding as to have been really persuaded that he went towards reformation by the worst of deformations, and advanced towards his salvation by the most express causes which we know of most assured

Whether any thing can warrant the commission of violence in a country, under pretence of correcting the abuses of its government.

damnation; that by overthrowing government, magistracy, and the laws, in whose protection God has placed him, by inspiring fraternal minds with hatred, and parricide, and by calling devils and furies to his aid, he can assist the sacred lenity and justice of the divine law. Ambition, avarice, cruelty, and revenge, have not sufficient natural impetuosity; though we gloss them with the glorious titles of justice and devotion. There cannot a worse state of things be imagined, than where wickedness comes to be legitimate, and, with the magistrates' permission, puts on the cloak of virtue. *Nihil in speciem fallacius, quam prava religio, ubi deorum nomen præten-ditur sceleribus.\** “Nothing has a more deceiving  
“ face than a false religion, where wickedness is  
“ cloaked with the name of the gods.” The most extreme injustice, according to Plato, is, when that which is unjust is reputed for just.

The pillage  
to which  
Montaigne  
was ex-  
posed on  
both sides.

The common people at that time suffered thereby very much, not present damages only,

— *Undique totis*  
*Usque adeò turbatur agris.†*—

So great disturbance reigns throughout the land.

but future too. The living were to suffer, and so were they who were yet unborn. They were robbed, as I was consequently, even of hopes; taking from them all they had, and robbed of the store laid up to live on for many years:

*Quæ nequeunt secum ferre aut abducere, perdunt,*  
*Et cremat insontes turba scelestæ casas.*  
*Muris nulla fides, squallent populatibus agri.‡*

What they can't carry off they spoil and spurn,  
And the rude rabble harmless houses burn;  
Walls can't secure their masters, and the field  
Through woful waste does a vile prospect yield.

Besides this shock I suffered others. I underwent

\* Tit. Livius, lib. xxxix. cap. 16.

† Virg. Eleg. lib. i. ver. 11

‡ Ovid. Trist. lib. iii. el. 10, ver. 66.

the inconveniences that moderation brings along with it in such diseases. I was pilled on all hands, to the Gibelin I was a Guelph, and to the Guelph a Gibelin; some one of the poets in my study expresses this very well, but I know not where it is. The situation of my house, and my acquaintance with my neighbours, presented me with one face; my life and my actions with another. They did not form accusations against me, for they had no fault to find. I never broke the laws, and whoever would have questioned me, would have done himself a greater prejudice than me. They were only suspicions that were whispered about, which never want appearance in so confused a mixture, no more than envious or weak brains. I commonly myself lend a hand to the injurious presumptions that fortune scatters abroad against me, by a way I have ever had of evading to justify, excuse, and explain myself, conceiving that it were to refer my conscience to arbitration, to plead in its behalf; *Perspicuitas enim argumentatione elevatur*.\* “For the perspicuity of a cause is clouded by argumentation.” And, as if every one saw as clearly into me as I do myself, instead of retiring from an accusation, I advance to meet it, and rather aggravate it by an ironical and scoffing confession, if I do not totally despise it, as a thing not worth my answer. But such as look upon this kind of behaviour as betraying too haughty a confidence, have as little kindness for me as they who interpret it to be the weakness of an indefensible cause; namely the great ones, towards whom want of submission is a very great fault; they being rude to all justice that knows and feels itself, and is not submissive, humble, and suppliant. I have oft knocked my head against this pillar. So it is, that at what then befel me an ambitious man would have hanged himself, and a covetous one would have done the same. I have no manner of care of getting:

\* Cic. de Nat. Deor. lib. iii. cap. 4.



*Sit mihi, quod nunc est, etiam minus, ut mihi vivam  
Quod superest ævi, si quid superesse volunt Di.\**

I only pray, that small estate which I  
Now have, may tarry with me till I die,  
And those few days which I have yet to live  
(If heav'n to me more days will please to give)  
I may enjoy myself.

But the losses that have befallen me by the injury of others, whether by theft or violence, go as near to my heart almost, as they would do to that of a man that was sick and tortured with avarice. The offence is, without comparison, more bitter than the loss. A thousand several sorts of mischiefs fell upon me one after another, which I could better have borne all at once.

low he  
sore his  
misfortune. I have already been considering to whom amongst my friends I might commit a helpless and decrepit old age; and having turned my eyes quite round, I found myself destitute. When a man falls at once from so great a height, it ought to be in the arms of a solid, vigorous, and fortunate friendship. Such are very rare, if there be any. At last I concluded that it was safest for me to trust to myself in my greatest necessity; and if it should so fall out, that I should be but upon cold terms in fortune's favour, I would the more strenuously recommend me to my own, and look the better to myself. Men on all occasions throw themselves upon foreign assistances to spare their own, which are the only certain and sufficient aids they can arm themselves with. Every one runs elsewhere, and to the future, forasmuch as no one is arrived at himself. I was satisfied, that they were profitable inconveniences, as in the first place ill scholars are to be admonished with the rod, when reason will not do, as a crooked piece of wood is made straight by fire and straining. I have a great while preached to myself to stick close to my own concerns, and separate myself from the

\* Hor. lib. i. epist. 18, ver. 107.

affairs of others ; yet I am still turning my eyes aside. A bow, a kind word, or look from a great person tempts me ; of which God knows how little scarcity there is in these days, and what they signify. I moreover, without wrinkling my forehead, hearken to the persuasions offered me, to draw me into some place of traffick, and so gently refuse it, as if I were half willing to be overcome. Now so untractable a spirit must be roughly treated, and this vessel which thus chops and cleaves, and is ready to fall to pieces, must have the hoops forced down with good sound strokes of a mallet. Secondly, this accident served me for exercise to prepare me for worse, if I, who both by the favour of fortune, and by the condition of my manners, hoped to be the last, should happen to be one of the first overtaken with this storm ; instructing myself betimes, to restrain my way of life, and fit it for a new state. True liberty is to be able to do what a man will with himself. *Potentissimus est qui se abet in potestate : \** “ He is most potent, “ who has himself in his own power.” In an ordinary and quiet time, a man is prepared for moderate and common accidents ; but in the confusion wherein we have been for these thirty years, every Frenchman, whether in particular or in general, sees himself every hour upon the point of the total ruin of his fortune. By so much the more ought he to have his courage armed with the strongest and most vigorous provision. We are obliged to fortune, that we do not live in an effeminate, idle, and languishing age : some, who could never have been so by other means, will be made famous by their misfortunes.” As I seldom read in histories of the confusions of other states, without regret that I was not present, the better to consider them, so my curiosity makes me in some sort please myself with seeing with my own eyes this notable spectacle of our public death, its form and symptoms ; and, since I could not retard it, am con-

\* Senec. ep. 75.

tent to be destined to assist in it, and thereby to instruct myself. Thus do we manifestly covet to see, even in shadow, and the fables of theatres, the tragic representations of human fortune. It is not without compassion of what we hear; but we please ourselves in having our resentment roused by the rarity of such lamentable events. Nothing tickles that does not pinch; and good historians skip over calm narrations, as a stagnant water and dead sea, to be again upon the narrative of wars and seditions, which they know are most acceptable to the readers. I question whether or no I can handsomely confess at how mean a purchase of repose and tranquillity, I have spent above half of my life in the ruin of my country. I am too patient of accidents that touch my property, and do not so much regard what they take from me, as what remains safe at home and abroad. There is comfort in escaping, one while one, another while another, of those evils that are levelled at me too in the consequence, but at present reach only to others about us; as also, that in matters of public interest, the more universally my affection is extended, the weaker it is. To which may be added, that it is but too true. *Tantum ex publicis malis sentimus, quantum ad privatas res pertinent:* "We are only so far sensible of public evils, as they respect our private affairs." And that the health which we have lost was such, that itself is some comfort for the regret we ought to have. It was health, but not so much in comparison with the sickness that has succeeded it. We are not fallen from any great height. The corruption and thievery which are in dignity and office, seem to me more insupportable. We do not take it so ill to be rifled in a wood as in a place of security. It was an universal juncture of particular members, corrupted in spite of one another, and the most of them with inveterate ulcers that neither required nor admitted of any cure. This shock therefore did really more animate than press me, by the assistance of my conscience,

which was not only at peace within itself, but elevated, and I did not find any reason to complain of myself. Also, as God never sends evils any more than goods, absolutely unmixed, my health continued at that time longer than usual; and, as I can do nothing without it, there are few things that I cannot do with it. It afforded me means to rouse up all my faculties, and to lay my hand before the wound, that would else perhaps have spread farther, and in my patience, I experienced that I had made a stand against fortune, and that it must be a great shock that could throw me out of the saddle. I do not say this to provoke her to attack me with more vigour; I am her humble servant, and beg her pardon. Let her be satisfied in God's name. Am I not sensible of her assaults? yes, certainly I am. But as those who are possessed and oppressed with sorrow, may sometimes suffer themselves nevertheless by intervals to taste a little pleasure, and are sometimes seen to smile; so have I so much power over myself as to make my ordinary condition quiet, and free from anxious thoughts; but I suffer myself however by fits to be surprised with the stings of those unpleasing imaginations that assault me, whilst I am arming myself to drive them away, or at least to wrestle with them.

But the worst evil which befel me after all was this; I was both without doors and within assaulted with a violent plague beyond all others: for, as sound constitutions are subject to the most grievous maladies, forasmuch as they are not to be forced but by such; so my very healthful air, where no contagion, though very near, in the memory of man, could ever take footing, happening to be corrupted, produced strange effects:

A genuine account of a fatal plague that happened at that time in the country where Montaigne lived.

*Mista semim, et juvenum densantur funera, nullum  
Sæva caput Proserpina fugit.\**

\* Horace, lib. i. ode 28, ver. 19.

Both age and youth promiscuous crowd the tomb ;  
No mortal head can shun th' impending doom.

I had this pleasant condition to mortify me, that the sight of my house was frightful to me. Whatever I had there was without guard, and abandoned to the mercy of every one. I, who am of so hospitable a nature, was myself in very great distress for a retreat for my family ; a distracted family, frightful both to its friends and itself, and filling every place with horror where it attempted to settle ; being to shift its abode as soon as any one's finger began but to ache. All diseases are at such a time concluded to be the plague, and people do not give themselves leisure to examine them. The best of it is, that, according to the rules of art, in every danger that a man comes near, he must undergo a quarantine, in extreme dread of such distemper ; your imagination all that while tormenting you at pleasure, and turning your health itself into a fever ; yet would not all this have gone very near my heart, had I not sympathised with others' sufferings, and being forced to serve six wretched months together as a guide to this caravan : for I carry my antidotes within myself, which are resolution and patience. The apprehension, which is particularly dreaded in this disease, little troubles me. And had I chosen to have caught it when alone, my flight had been more sprightly and farther off. It is a kind of death, which I do not think of the worst sort ; it is usually short, stupid, without pain, and alleviated by the consideration that it is the lot of the public ; a death without ceremony, without mourning, and without a crowd. But as to the people about us, the hundredth part of them could not be saved :

——— *Videas desertaque regna  
Pastorum, et longè saltus latèque vacantes.\**

Deserted realms now may'st thou see of swains,  
And every where forsaken groves and plains.

\* Virg. Geor. lib. iii. ver. 476.

In this place my best revenue is manual. What a hundred men plowed for me lay a long time fallow.

But then what example of resolution did we not see in the simplicity of all this people? every one generally renounced all care of life. The grapes, the principal revenue of the country, were left hanging in clusters upon the vines; every one indifferently preparing for and expecting death, either to-night or tomorrow, with a countenance and voice so far from fear, as if they had contracted with death in this necessity, and that it had been an universal and inevitable sentence. It is always such. But how few have the resolution of dying? The distance and difference of a few hours, and the sole consideration of company, renders the apprehension of it various to us. Do but observe these; by reason that they die in the same month, children, young people and old, they are no longer astonished at it, they lament no more. I saw some who were afraid of staying behind, as in a dreadful solitude, and seldom observed any other anxiety amongst them, than for their interment; they were troubled to see the dead bodies scattered about the fields at the mercy of beasts, which presently began to flock about them. How differing are the fancies of men!

The Neorites, a nation subjected by Alexander, threw the bodies of their dead into the darkest parts of their woods, to be devoured there; accounting that the only happy sepulture. Some, while they were in health, digged their own graves, and others laid them down in them whilst alive; and a labourer of mine, in dying, with his hands and feet drew the earth upon him. Was not this tucking himself up to sleep at his ease? A bravery, in some sort, like that of the Roman soldiers, who, after the battle of Cannæ, were found suffocated with their heads thrust into holes in the earth, which they had made with their own hands. In short, a whole nation by usage was brought to a discipline nothing inferior to any studied and premeditated resolution.

The fortitude of the common people in this general desolation.

Sepulture of the Neorites.

Roman soldiers suffocated with their own hands after the battle of Cannæ.

Whether in  
the calamities  
of life  
we derive  
any great  
advantages  
from the in-  
structions  
of science.

Most of the instructions of science, to encourage us, have in them more of show than of force, and of ornament than profit. We have abandoned nature, and will teach her what to do; her who did so happily and so securely conduct us. And in the meantime, from the foot-steps of her instructions, and that little which, by the benefit of ignorance, remains of her image imprinted in the life of this rustic rout of unpolished men, science is constrained every day to borrow, to set a pattern, for her disciples, of constancy, tranquillity, and innocence. It is pretty to see, that these which are so full of so much fine knowledge, should imitate this foolish simplicity, and that in the principal acts of virtue; and that our wisdom must learn, even from the beasts, the most profitable instructions in the greatest and most necessary concerns of human life: as, how we are to live and die, manage our fortunes, love and bring up our children, and to maintain justice. A singular testimony of human infirmity, and that this reason we so handle at our pleasure, finding evermore some diversity and novelty, leaves with us no apparent trace of nature. Men have made such use of it as perfumers do of oil; they have sophisticated it with so many argumentations and far-fetched discourses, that it is thereby become variable, and particular to every one of them, and has lost its proper, constant, and universal face. We must seek evidence of it from beasts not subject to favour, corruption, nor diversity of opinions. For it is indeed true, that even they themselves do not always go exactly in the path of nature, but where they swerve from it, it is so little, that you may always see the track; as horses that are led make several bounds and curvets, but it is always at the length of the halter, and they still follow him that leads them; and as the hawk takes his flight, but still under the restraint of his cryance. *Exilia, tormenta, bella, morbos, naufragia, meditare, ut nullo sis malo Tyro*.\* “Expect

\* Senec. epist. 91 et 107.

“ banishments, torture, wars, diseases, and ship-  
 “ wrecks, that thou mayest not be surprised by any  
 “ disaster.” What good will this curiosity do us, to  
 anticipate all the inconveniences of human nature,  
 and to prepare ourselves, with so much trouble, to  
 meet even things, which perhaps will never befall  
 us? *Parem passis tristitiam facit, pati posse.*\* “ It  
 “ troubles men as much that they may possibly suffer,  
 “ as if they really did.” Not only the blow, but  
 the crack of the whip strikes us. Or like people in  
 a fever, for it is certainly a fever, to go immediately  
 and scourge yourself, because it may fall out, that  
 fortune may one day make you undergo the lash;  
 and to put on your furred gown at Midsummer, be-  
 cause you will stand in need of it at Christmas.  
 Throw yourselves, say they, into the experience of  
 all the evils, nay the worst that can possibly befall  
 you; make the trial and there stand fast. On the  
 contrary, the most easy and most natural way would  
 be to banish even the thoughts of them. They will  
 not come soon enough, their true existence does not  
 continue with us long enough, we must lengthen and  
 extend them in thought; we must incorporate them  
 in us before-hand, and there entertain them, as if  
 they would not otherwise make a reasonable impres-  
 sion upon our senses. We shall find them heavy  
 enough when they come (says one of the leaders,  
 not one of the tender, but of the most severe sects):  
 in the mean time favour thyself; believe what pleases  
 thee best.† What good will it do thee to bespeak  
 and anticipate thy ill fortune; to lose the present for  
 fear of the future; and to make thyself at this in-  
 stant miserable, because thou art to be so in time?  
 These are his words. Learning, indeed, readily  
 does us one good office, in instructing us exactly in  
 the dimension of evils:

*Curis acuens mortalia corda.*‡

\* Senec. epist. 74.

† Idem, epist. 13 et 98.

‡ Virg. Geo. lib. i. ver. 123.



Whetting human minds with needful care.

It were pity that any part of their bulk should escape our sense and knowledge.

Of what  
use is pre-  
paration  
for death.

It is certain that, for the most part, preparation for death has administered more torment than the thing itself. It was of old truly said, and by a very judicious author, *minus afficit sensus fatigatio, quam cogitatio*: \* “Suffering afflicts the senses less than “the apprehension of it.” The thought of present death sometimes of itself animates us with a prompt resolution no longer to shun a thing that is utterly inevitable. Several gladiators have been known, who, after having fought timorously, have courageously entertained death, offering their throats to the enemies’ swords, and bidding them dispatch. The remote sight of future death requires a courage that is slow, and consequently hard to attain to. If you know not how to die, never trouble yourself; nature will fully instruct you upon the spot; she will exactly do that business for you; take you no care:

*Incertam frustra mortales funeris horam  
Quæritis, et qua sit mors aditura via:  
Pœna minor certam subito perferre ruinam,  
Quod timeas, gravius sustinuisse diu.†*

Mortals, in vain’s your curiosity  
To know the hour and death that you must die,  
Better your fate strike with a sudden blow,  
Than that you long should what you fear foreknow.

We trouble life with the care of death, and death with the care of life. The one vexes, the other frights us. It is not against death that we prepare, that is too momentary a thing; a quarter of an hour’s suffering, without consequence, does not deserve particular precepts. To say truth, we prepare ourselves against the preparations of death. Philosophy enjoins, that we should always have death before our eyes, to foresee and consider it before the time; and then gives us rules and precautions to

\* Seneca.

† Propertius, lib. ii. eleg. 27, ver. 1, 2.

provide that this foresight and thought do us no harm : just so do physicians, who throw us into diseases, to the end they may have a subject for their drugs and their art. If we have not known how to live, it is injustice to teach us to die, and to make the end different from the rest of the life. If we have known how to live consistently and quietly, we shall know how to die so too. They may boast as much as they please, *Tota philosophorum vita, commentatio mortis est* :\* “ That the whole life of a philosopher is the meditation of death.” But I fancy, that though it be the end, it is not the aim of life. It is its end, its extremity, but nevertheless not its object.

It ought to be to itself its own aim and design ; The true aim of life. its true study is to order, govern, and suffer itself. In the number of many other offices, which the general and principal chapter of knowledge how to live comprehends, is the article of knowing how to die ; and did not our fears give it weight, one of the lightest too.

To judge of them by the utility, and by the naked truth, the lessons of simplicity are not much inferior to those which learning teaches to the contrary. Men differ in sentiment and force ; we must lead them to their own good, according to their capacities, and by various ways : Simple nature disposes us to die with a better grace than died Aristotle, &c.

*Quo me cumque rapit tempestas, deferor hospes.*†

For as the tempest drives, I shape my course.

I never saw any countryman among my neighbours enter into the thought of what countenance and assurance he should pass over this last hour with ; nature teaches him not to dream of death till he is dying ; and then he does it with a better grace than Aristotle, upon whom death presses with a double weight, both of itself, and by so long a premeditation of it. Therefore it was the opinion of Cæsar,

\* Cic. Tusc. Quæst. lib. i. cap. 30. † Hor. lib. i. epist. 1, ver. 15.

that the death which was the least thought of beforehand, was the easiest and the most happy. *Plus dolet quam necesse est, qui ante dolet quam necesse est*.\* “He grieves more than is necessary, who grieves before it is necessary.” The bitterness of this imagination springs from our curiosity. Thus do we ever hinder ourselves, desiring to anticipate and over-rule natural prescriptions. It is only the learned doctors who dine worst, when in the best health, and knit their brows at the image of death. The common sort stand in need of no remedy or consolation, but just in the shock, and when the blow comes; and think no more of the matter than just what they endure. Is it not then, as we say, that the stupidity and want of apprehension in the vulgar gives them this patience in present evils, and this profound thoughtlessness of future sinister accidents? Are their understandings, by being more gross and dull, less to be penetrated and moved? If it be so, let us henceforth, for God’s sake, recommend stupidity, which so gently leads its disciples to the last favour we are promised from learning.

Socrates’s pleadings in Plato, where we are taught both by his doctrine and example to follow nature purely and simply.

We have no want of good masters, who are interpreters of natural simplicity. Socrates shall be one; for, as I remember, he speaks something to this purpose, to the judges who sat upon his life. “I am afraid, gentlemen, that if I entreat you not to put me to death, I shall involve myself in the charge of my accusers, which is, that I pretend to be wiser than others, as having some more secret knowledge of things that are above and below us. I know very well, that I have neither been familiar nor acquainted with death, nor have ever seen any person that has tried its qualities, from whom to inform myself. Such as fear it, suppose they know it; as for my part, I neither know what it is, nor what is done in the other world. Death is, perhaps, an indifferent thing; perhaps,

\* Senec. epist. 88.

“ a thing to be desired. It is nevertheless to be be-  
 “ lieved, if it be a transmigration from one place to  
 “ another, that it is a bettering of one’s condition,  
 “ to go live with so many great persons deceased,  
 “ and to be exempt from having any more to do  
 “ with unjust and corrupt judges: if it be an anni-  
 “ hilation of our being, it is yet a bettering of one’s  
 “ condition, to enter into a long and peaceable  
 “ night. We find nothing more sweet in life than  
 “ quiet repose, and profound sleep without dreams.  
 “ The things that I know to be evil, such as to of-  
 “ fend one’s neighbour, and to disobey one’s supe-  
 “ rior, whether it be God or man, I carefully avoid:  
 “ such as I do not know whether they be good or  
 “ evil, I cannot fear them. If I go hence to die,  
 “ and leave you alive, the gods only know whether  
 “ it will go better either with you or me; where-  
 “ fore, as to what concerns me, you may do as you  
 “ shall think fit; but, according to my method,  
 “ giving just and wholesome advice, I do affirm,  
 “ that you will do your consciences more right to  
 “ set me at liberty, unless you see farther into my  
 “ cause than I do myself. And judging according  
 “ to my past actions, both public and private, ac-  
 “ cording to my intentions, and according to the  
 “ profit that so many of my fellow citizens, both old  
 “ and young, daily reap from my conversation, and  
 “ the good I do to you all, you cannot duly acquit  
 “ yourselves towards my merit, but by ordering,  
 “ that, my poverty considered, I should be main-  
 “ tained in the Prytaneum,\* at the public expense;  
 “ a thing that I have often known you with less  
 “ reason grant to others. Do not impute it to ob-  
 “ stinacy or disdain, that I do not, according to the  
 “ custom, supplicate, and endeavour to move you  
 “ to compassion. I have both friends and kindred;  
 “ not being (as Homer says) begotten of a block or  
 “ of a stone, any more than others, that are able to

\* The public exchequer.

“ present themselves before you in tears and mourn-  
 “ ing, and I have three desolate children to move  
 “ you to pity. But I should do a shame to your  
 “ city, at the age I am, and in the reputation of  
 “ wisdom wherein I now stand, to appear in such an  
 “ abject form. What would men say of the other  
 “ Athenians? I have always admonished those who  
 “ have frequented my lectures, not to redeem their  
 “ lives by an indecent action; and in the wars of  
 “ my country, at Amphipolis, Potidea, Delia, and  
 “ other expeditions where I have been, I have effec-  
 “ tually manifested how far I was from securing my  
 “ safety by my shame. I would moreover endanger  
 “ your duty, and tempt you to unhandsome things:  
 “ for it is not for my prayers to persuade you, but  
 “ the pure and solid arguments of justice. You  
 “ have sworn to the gods to keep yourselves thus  
 “ upright; and it would seem as if I suspected, or  
 “ would recriminate upon you, should I not believe  
 “ that there are gods: and I would give evidence  
 “ against myself, not to believe in them as I ought,  
 “ by mistrusting their conduct, and not purely com-  
 “ mitting my affair into their hands. I entirely rely  
 “ upon them, and hold myself assured, they will do  
 “ in this what shall be most fit both for you and me.  
 “ Good men, whether living or dead, have no rea-  
 “ son to fear the gods.”

Was this a childish pleading of a sublimity incon-  
 ceivable, and was it unnecessary? Truly, he had  
 very good reason to prefer it to that which the great  
 orator Lysias had penned for him; admirably  
 couched, indeed, in the judiciary style, but unwor-  
 thy of so noble a criminal. Did one suppliant word  
 fall from the mouth of Socrates? Did that tran-  
 scendent virtue strike sail in the height of its glory?  
 Did his rich and powerful nature commit his defence  
 to art, and, in his highest attempt, did he renounce  
 truth and simplicity, the ornaments of his speaking,  
 to deck it with the embellishment of figures, and the  
 equivocations of premeditated speech? He did very

wisely, and like himself, not to corrupt the tenor of an incorrupt life, and to deface so sacred an image of the human form, for the sake of spinning out his decrepitude to one year longer, and to betray the immortal memory of that glorious end. He lived not to himself, but for an example to the world. Would it not have been a public damage, that he should have ended his life after a lazy and obscure manner? Doubtless, that careless and indifferent concern of his about death, very well deserved that posterity should have the more concern for it, which they also had. And there is nothing so just in justice, as what fortune ordained for his recommendation. For the Athenians abominated all those who had been the cause of his death to such a degree,\* that they avoided them as excommunicated persons, and looked upon every thing as polluted that had been but touched by them; no one would wash with them in the baths; none would salute, or own acquaintance with them; so that at last, unable longer to support this public hatred, they hanged themselves. If any one should think that, amongst so many other examples that I had to choose out of the sayings of Socrates, for my present purpose, I have made an ill choice of this, and judge that this discourse is elevated above the common opinion, I must tell them that I have purposely done it; for I am of another opinion, and think it a discourse in rank and simplicity much behind and inferior to what it is commonly taken for. He represents with an inartificial boldness, and a childish security, the pure and first impression and ignorance of nature. For it is to be believed, that we have naturally a fear of pain, but not of death, for its own sake.

It is a part of being, and no less essential than living. To what end should nature have begot in us a hatred to it, and a horror of it, considering that it

Death  
makes a  
part of our  
being, and

\* All this is exactly copied from Plutarch's treatise of Envy and Hatred.

is very beneficial to nature.

is of so great utility to her in maintaining the succession and vicissitude of her works? And that, in this universal republic, it serves more to birth and augmentation, than to destruction or ruin :

— *Sic rerum summa novatur,\**  
*Mille animas una necata dedit.†*

Beasts naturally solicitous of their preservation.

The failing of one life, is the passage to a thousand other lives ; nature has imprinted in beasts the care of themselves, and of their preservation. Nay, they proceed so far, as to fear the being worse, to avoid hitting or hurting themselves, and to be afraid of our haltering and beating them ; accidents which are subject to their sense and experience ; but that we should kill them they cannot fear, nor have they the faculty to imagine and conclude such a thing as death. Yea, it is said, that we see them not only cheerfully undergo it, horses for the most part neighing, and swans singing when they die ; nay, they moreover seek it at need, of which elephants have given many examples.

Socrates's way of speaking and living very different from ours.

But besides all this, is not the way of arguing which Socrates here makes use of, equally admirable, both for its simplicity and vehemence ? Really, it is much more easy to speak like Aristotle, and to live like Cæsar, than to speak and live as Socrates did. There lies the extreme degree of perfection and difficulty. Art cannot reach it. Now, our faculties are not so trained up. We do not try, we do not know them, we invest ourselves with those of others, and let our own lie idle. As some one may say of me, that I have here only made a nosegay of foreign flowers, and have brought nothing of my own but the thread that ties them.

With what new Montaigne has

In earnest, I so far yield to the common opinion, that those borrowed ornaments accompany me, but

\* Lucret. lib. ii. ver. 74.

† I know not where Montaigne found these words, nor consequently what they signify in the original ; but Montaigne immediately subjoins the sense he would have them bear.

I do not think that they totally cover and hide me ; <sup>charged his book with quotations.</sup> that is quite contrary to my design, who desire to make a show of nothing but what is my own, and what is my own by nature : and could I have been sure of credit, I had at all adventures spoken purely alone. I load myself more and more every day beyond my purpose and first method, upon the account of idleness and the humour of the age. If it misbecomes me, as I believe it does, it is no matter, it may be of use to some other. Some quote Plato and Homer, who never saw either of them : and I also have taken passages far enough from their source. Having a thousand volumes about me in the place where I write, I can presently, without trouble or learning, borrow, if I please, from a dozen such scrap-gatherers as I am, authors that I do not much trouble myself with, to embellish this treatise of Physiognomy. There needs no more, but a preliminary epistle of the German model, to stuff me with quotations, and we, by that means, go a begging for the liquorish glory, to cheat the silly world. These lumberpies of common places, wherewith so many furnish their studies, are of little use but to common subjects, and serve but for a show, and not to direct us ; a ridiculous fruit of learning, which Socrates so pleasantly discusses against Euthydemus. I have seen books composed of matters that were never either studied or understood ; the authors committing to several of their learned friends, the examination of this and the other matter to compile them ; contenting themselves for their share to have projected the design, and by their industry to have bound up this faggot of unknown provision ; the ink and paper at least are theirs. This is to buy or borrow a book, and not to make one ; it is to show men, not that a man can make a book, but that, whereof they may be in doubt, he cannot make one. A president in my hearing boasted, that he had heaped up two hundred and odd common places in one of his judgments : in telling this, he deprived



himself of the honour that had been attributed to him. In my opinion, a pusillanimous and absurd vanity for such a subject, and such a person. I do quite the contrary; and amongst so many borrowed things, am glad if I can steal one, disguising and deforming it for some new service. At the hazard of having it said, that it is for want of understanding in its natural use, I give it some particular dress with my own hand, to the end it may not be so absolutely strange. These expose their thefts to view, and value themselves upon them. And also they have more credit with the laws than with me. We naturalists think that there is a great and incomparable preference in the honour of invention to that of quotation.

If I would have spoke by learning, I had spoke sooner; I had wrote in a time nearer to my studies, when I had more wit, and a better memory; and would sooner have trusted to the vigour of that age than this, if I had intended to have professed writing. And what if this gracious favour, which fortune has even now offered me upon the account of this work, had befallen me in such a time of my life, instead of this, wherein it is equally desirable to possess, and to lose. Two of my acquaintance, great men in this faculty, have, in my opinion, lost half, in refusing to publish at forty years old, and choosing to stay till threescore. Maturity has its defects as well as verdure, and worse; and old age is as unfit for this kind of business as for any other. He who commits his decrepit age to the press, is a fool, if he think to squeeze any thing out thence that does not represent him deformed with dotage and stupidity. Our understandings grow costive and thick as they grow old. I deliver my ignorance in pomp and plenty, and my learning scantily and poorly; the latter accidentally and accessorially, the former principally and expressly; and write purposely of nothing but nothing, nor of any science but that of inscience. I have chosen a time, when my life,

Old age  
unfit for  
writing of  
books.

which I am to give an account of, lies wholly before me; what remains of it holds more of death. And of my death only, should I then be as talkative as some are, I would moreover give notice at my departure.

Socrates was a perfect pattern of all great qualities: I am vexed that he had so deformed a body, as it is said, and so unsuitable to the beauty of his soul, himself being so amorous, and so captivated with beauty. Nature surely did him wrong. There is nothing more probable than a conformity and relation of the body to the soul. *Ipsi animi, magni refert, quali in corpore locati sint: multa enim è corpore existunt, quæ acuant mentem: multa qua obtundant:*\* “It is of great consequence in what bodies souls are placed, for many corporal qualities sharpen the mind, and many others blunt it.” This speaks of an unnatural ugliness and deformity of limbs: but we call that ill-favouredness also, which is an unseemliness at first sight, being principally lodged in the face, and which disgusts us by the complexion, a spot, a forbidding countenance, sometimes from some inexplicable cause, where the limbs are nevertheless of good symmetry and perfect. The deformity that clothed a very beautiful soul in Stephen la Boetius, was of this predicament. This superficial ugliness, which nevertheless is always the most imperious, is of least prejudice to the state of the mind, and of little certainty in the opinion of men. The other, which, by a more proper name, is called a more substantial deformity, strikes deeper. Not every shoe of glossy leather, but every shoe neatly made, shows the true shape of the foot within it.

Socrates said of his deformity, that it denoted his soul to be as deformed, had he not corrected it by instruction; but, in saying so, I believe he did but

Socrates's  
deformity  
of body un-  
suitable to  
the beauty  
of his mind.

\* Cic. Tusc. Quæst. lib. i. cap. 33.

What the  
beauty of  
the body is,  
and how  
much to be  
esteemed,

Beautiful  
persons fit  
to com-  
mand.

jest, as his custom was, and never so excellent a soul made a jest of itself. I cannot repeat too often how great an esteem I have for beauty, that potent and advantageous quality. He called it a short tyranny; and Plato, the privilege of nature. We have nothing that excels it in reputation; it has the first place in the commerce of men; it presents itself to meet us, seduces and prepossesses our judgment with great authority and wonderful impression. Phryne had lost her cause, in the hands of an excellent advocate, if, by rending her robe, she had not corrupted her judges with the lustre of her beauty.\* And I find that Cyrus, Alexander, and Cæsar, the three masters of the world, never neglected beauty in their greatest affairs; no more did the first Scipio. The same word in Greek signifies *beautiful* and *good*, and the Holy Ghost oft calls those *good*, whom he means *beautiful*. I would willingly maintain the priority of things called *good*, according to the song, which Plato calls a trivial one,† taken out of some of the ancient poets; viz. health, beauty, and riches. Aristotle says, that the right of command appertains to the beautiful; and that when there are persons whose beauty resembles the images of the gods, veneration is likewise due to them. When one asked him,‡ why people oftner and longer frequented the company of handsome persons? “The question,” said he, “is not to be asked by any but one that is “blind.” The most and the greatest philosophers paid for their schooling, and acquired wisdom by the favour and mediation of their beauty. Not only in the men that serve me, but also in the beasts, I consider beauty as little short of goodness.

\* Sextus Empiricus adversus Mathematicos, lib. xi. p. 65. Quintilian, who reports the same passage, ascribes to Phryne the invention of this expedient, whereby she gained the favour of her judges, Instit. Orator. lib. ii. cap. 15; but Athenæus gives the honour of gaining her cause to Hyperides.

† Gorgias Plat. p. 309.

‡ Diog. Laert. in the Life of Aristotle, lib. v. sect. 2,

Yet I fancy that the shape and make of a face, and those lineaments by which men guess at our tempers, and our future fortunes, is a thing that is not very directly and simply to be ranked in the class of beauty and deformity, no more than every good smell and serenity of air promises health, nor than every fog and stink does infection in a time of pestilence. Such as accuse ladies of contradicting their beauty by their manners, are not always in the right; for, in a face which is none of the best, there may be an air of honesty and fidelity: as, on the contrary, I have sometimes seen between two lovely eyes, certain menaces of a dangerous and malignant nature. There are some physiognomies, that are favourable, so that in a crowd of victorious enemies, you would presently choose, amongst men you never saw before, one rather than another, to whom to surrender, and with whom to trust your life, and yet not properly for the sake of his beauty.

A man's countenance is but a slender security, and yet is something to be regarded too; and if I were to lash men, I would most severely scourge the wicked ones, who belie and betray the promises that nature has planted in their foreheads. I would with great severity punish malice in a courteous aspect. It seems as if there were some happy and some unhappy faces; and I believe there is some art in distinguishing affable from silly faces, such as are stern from the rigid, the malicious from the pensive, the coy from the melancholic, and such other bordering qualities. There are beauties which are not only haughty, but sour; and others that are charming, and also insipid. To prognosticate future adventures, is a thing that I shall leave undecided.

I have, for my own part, as I have said elsewhere, simply and nakedly embraced this ancient rule: "That we should not fail to follow nature, and that the sovereign precept is to conform ourselves to her." I have not, as Socrates did, corrected my natural temper by the force of reason, and have not

An advantageous physiognomy not directly founded on the fine features of the face.

Whether any assurance may be derived from physiognomy.

The precept of a conformity to nature of great importance, even with re-

gard to the  
outward  
man.

in the least molested my inclination by art. I go on in my old way; I contend not. My two principal parts live of their own accord in peace and good intelligence; and my nurse's milk, thanks be to God, was tolerably wholesome and in a good state. Let me say this by the way, that I see a certain image of scholastic honesty, almost only in use amongst us, in greater esteem than it is really worth; a slave to precepts, and fettered with hope and fear. I would have it such, as that laws and religions should not make, but perfect and authorise it; such as has wherewith to support itself without help; such as is rooted in us by the seed of universal reason, and imprinted in every man by nature. That reason which reclaimed Socrates from his vicious bent, rendered him obedient to the gods, and the men of authority in his city; courageous in death, not because his soul was immortal, but because he is mortal. It is a doctrine ruinous to all government, and much more hurtful than ingenious and subtle, which persuades the people, that a religious belief is alone sufficient, and without morality, to satisfy the divine justice. Custom demonstrates to us a vast distinction between devotion and conscience. I have a tolerable aspect, both in form and interpretation:

*Quid dixi habere me? Imo habui Chreme,\*  
Heu! tantum attriti corporis ossa vides.†*

Have, said I, Chremes? Now, alas! not so;  
But I had once, e'er I was brought so low.

and which makes a quite contrary appearance to that of Socrates.

Two notable proofs of great advantage which Montaigne derived from his aspect.

It has oft befallen me, that upon the mere credit of my presence, and my very aspect, persons who had no manner of knowledge of me, have put a very great confidence in me, whether in their own affairs or mine: and I have in foreign parts obtained favours

\* Terentii Heaut. act. i. scen. 1, ver. 43.

† From whence Montaigne quoted this line I know not.

singular and uncommon ; but two instances are, perhaps, worth particular relation. A certain person deliberated to surprise my house and me in it ; his artifice was, to come to my gate alone, and to be importunate to be let in : I knew him by name, and had reason to repose a confidence in him, as being my neighbour, and something related to me. I caused the gate to be opened to him, as I do to every one, and in he came, quite frightened, his horse panting, and all in a foam. He presently entertained me with this flim-flam : “ That about half a league off, he had unluckily met with a certain enemy of his, whom I also knew, and had indeed heard of their quarrel ; that this enemy had pursued him very hard ; that he therefore fled to my gate for refuge ; and that he was in great trouble for his followers, whom, he said, he concluded to be all either dead or taken.” I innocently did my best to comfort, hearten, and refresh him. Presently after came four or five of his soldiers, who presented themselves in the same countenance and affright to get in too, and after them more, and still more, very well mounted and armed, to the number of five and twenty or thirty, pretending that they had the enemy at their heels. This mystery began a little to awake my suspicion. I was not ignorant what an age I lived in, how much my house might be envied, and I had several examples of others of my acquaintance, who had met with such sort of guests. So it was, that knowing there was nothing to be got in having begun to do a courtesy, unless I went through with it, and as I could not disengage myself from them without spoiling all ; I chose the most natural and simple way, as I always do, and invited them all to come in. And, in truth, I am naturally very little inclined to suspicion and distrust. I willingly incline towards excuse, and the most favourable construction. I take men according to the common run, and do not believe there can be such perverse and unnatural inclinations, unless con-

vinced by manifest evidence, more than I do monsters and miracles; I am, moreover, a man who willingly commit myself to fortune, and throw myself headlong into her arms: and have hitherto found more reason to applaud than to condemn myself for it; having found her more solicitous of and more a friend to my affairs, than I am myself. There are some actions in my life, wherein my conduct may justly be called difficult, or, if you please, prudent. Yet of those, supposing the third part to have been my own, doubtless the other two thirds were richly hers. We are, methinks, to blame, in that we do not enough trust heaven with our affairs, and challenge more from our own conduct than appertains to us. And therefore it is that our designs so oft miscarry. Heaven is displeased at the extent that we attribute to the prerogatives of human prudence in prejudice of its own, and abridges them the more we stretch them. The last comers kept themselves on horseback in my court-yard, whilst their leader was with me in the parlour, who would not have his horse set up in the stable, saying, he would immediately retire, as soon as he should have news of the rest of his men. He saw himself master of his enterprise, and nothing now remained but the execution. He has since several times said (for he was not ashamed to tell the story himself), that my countenance and freedom had snatched the treachery out of his hands. He again mounted his horse, his followers having continually their eyes intent upon him, to see when he would give the sign; very much astonished to see him march away and leave his prey behind him. Another time, relying upon I know not what truce, newly published in the army, I took a journey through a very fickle country. I had not rode far before it got wind, and two or three parties of horse, from several places, were sent out to take me; one of them the third day overtook me, where I was charged by fifteen or twenty gentlemen in vizors, followed at a distance by a band of ragamuffins.

Here was I surrounded and taken, drawn into the heart of a neighbouring forest, dismounted, robbed, my trunks rifled, my casket taken, and my horses and equipage divided amongst new masters. We had here a very long contest about my ransom, which they set so high, that it was plain I was not known to them. They were, moreover, in a very great debate about my life; and, in truth, there were several alarming circumstances that threatened me with the danger I was then in :

*Tunc animis opus, Ænea, tunc pectore firmo.\**

Then, then, Æneas, was there need  
Of an undaunted heart indeed.

I still insisted upon the letter of the truce, that they should only have the gain of what they had already taken from me, which was not to be despised, without promise of any other ransom. After we had been two or three hours in this place, and after they had mounted me on a pitiful jade that was not likely to run away from them, and committed me to the guard of fifteen or twenty harquebusiers, and dispersed my servants to others, having given order that they should carry us off prisoners several ways; when I was got some two or three musket-shot from the place,

*Jam prece Pollucis, jam Castoris implorata.†*

Whilst I implor'd Castor and Pollux aid.‡

this sudden and unexpected alteration happened. I saw the chief of them return to me with milder language, making search amongst the troopers for my lost baggage, and causing as much as could be recovered to be restored to me, even to my casket: but the best present they made me, was my liberty; for the rest did not much concern me at that time.

\* Virg. Æneid. lib. vi. ver. 261. † Catullus, lib. xvi. ver. 65.

‡ Or as Montaigne might have said in his own language: after I had made a vow to all the saints in Paradise, or as we protestants say, in the Romish Calendar.



The true cause of so sudden a change, and of this second thought, without any apparent impulse, and of so miraculous a repentance, at such a time, in a serious and deliberate enterprise, and which was become just by custom (for at the first dash I plainly confessed to them of what party I was, and whither I was going), is what I do not yet rightly apprehend. The most eminent amongst them, who pulled off his vizor, and told me his name, said to me over and over again, that I was obliged for my deliverance to my countenance, and the frankness and courage of my speech, which rendered me unworthy of such a misfortune, and he desired me to be in no dread of the like again. It is possible that the divine Bounty chose to make use of this mean instrument for my preservation. It moreover defended me the next day from other and worse ambushes, which even these had given me warning of. The last of these two gentlemen is yet living, to give an account of the story; the first was killed not long ago.

The simplicity of his intention, which was visible in his eyes and his language, prevented his freedom in discourse from being resented.

If my face did not answer for me, if men did not read in my eyes and words, the innocence of my intention, I had not lived so long without quarrels, and without giving offence, considering the indiscreet liberty I take, right or wrong, to say whatever comes into my head, and to judge rashly of things. This practice may with reason appear uncivil, and ill-adapted to our way of conversation; but I have never met with any who have judged it outrageous or malicious, or that took offence at my liberty, if he had it from my own lips. Words repeated have another kind of sense, as well as sound. Neither do I hate any person whatever; and am so slow to offend that I cannot do it, to serve reason itself. And when occasion has called me to condemn criminals, I have rather failed in the strictness of justice. *Ut magis peccari nolim, quam satis animi ad vindicanda peccata habeam* :\* “ So that I have more con-

\* Titus Livius, lib. xxix. cap. 22.

“cern for men’s offences, than a heart to punish them.” Aristotle, it is said, was reproached for having been too merciful to a wicked man.\* “I was indeed,” said he, “merciful to the man, but not to his wickedness.” Ordinary judgments are exasperated to punishment by the horror of the crime. But this cools mine. The horror of the first murder makes me fear the second, and the deformity of the first cruelty makes me abhor all imitation of it. That may be applied to me, who am but a knave of clubs, which was said of Charillus, king of Sparta,† “He cannot be good, because he is not severe to the wicked.” Or thus; for Plutarch delivers both these ways, as he does a thousand other things, variously, and contrary to one another; “He must needs be good, because he is so even to the wicked.”‡ Even as in lawful actions, I do not care to be concerned when others are offended by them; so, to say the truth, in lawful things, I do not make conscience enough of employing myself when others approve them.

Aristotle  
reproached  
for being  
merciful.

## CHAPTER XII.

### *Of Experience.*

**T**HERE is no desire more natural than that of knowledge: we try all the ways that can lead us to <sup>Why experience is not a sure</sup>

\* Diog. Laert. in the Life of Aristotle, lib. v. sect. 17.

† Plutarch, of the Difference between the Flatterer and the Friend, chap. 10.

‡ I cannot imagine from which of Plutarch’s tracts Montaigne took this reflection; but in the treatise of Envy and Hatred Plutarch gives it us exactly as it is in the preceding note, viz. “How should he be good, when he is not rigid to the wicked.” chap. 3.

means to  
inform us  
of the  
truth of  
things.

it; where reason is wanting, we therein employ experience :

*Per varios usus artem experientia fecit,  
Exemplo monstrante viam.\**

By various proofs experience art has form'd,  
Example being guide.

which is a means much more weak and cheap. But truth is so great a thing, that we ought not to disdain any medium that will guide us to it. Reason has so many forms, that we know not which to adhere to; experience has no fewer. The consequence we would draw from the comparison of events is uncertain, by reason they are always unlike. There is no quality so universal in this image of things as diversity and variety. The Greeks, the Latins, and we, for the most express example of similitude, have pitched upon that of eggs. And yet there have been men, particularly one at Delphos, who could distinguish marks of difference amongst eggs so well, that he never mistook one for another; and, having many hens, could tell which had laid it.† Dissimilitude intrudes itself into our works; no art can arrive at a perfect similitude. Neither Perozet, nor any other cardmaker, can so carefully polish and blanch the backs of his cards, that some gamesters will not distinguish them by only seeing them shuffled by another: resemblance does not so much make one, as difference makes another. Nature has obliged herself to make nothing like to another.

Of what  
use is the  
multiplic-  
ty of laws.

And yet I am not much pleased with his opinion, who thought by the multitude of laws to curb the authority of judges, by retrenching them. He was not aware that there is as much latitude in the interpretation of laws, as in their form; and they deceive themselves, who think to lessen and stop our

\* Manilius, lib. i. ver. 61.

† Cic. Acad. Quæst. lib. iv. cap. 18.

debates by summoning us to the express words of the Bible : since human wit finds as large a field for controverting the sense of another, as for delivering his own ; and, as if there were less animosity and bitterness in glossing than inventing. We see how much he was deceived ; for we have more laws in France, than in all the rest of the world besides ; and more than would be necessary for the regulation of all the worlds of Epicurus : *Ut olim flagitiis, sic nunc legibus laboramus* : \* “ So that as formerly we “ were plagued with vices, we are now as sick of “ the laws :” yet we have left so much to the opinion and decision of our judges, that there never was so full and uncontrolled a liberty. What have our legislators got by culling out a hundred thousand particular cases and facts, and by adding to those, a hundred thousand laws ? This number holds no manner of proportion with the infinite diversity of human actions ; the multiplications of our invention will never reach the variety of examples. Add to them a hundred times as many more, yet it will never happen that, of events to come, any one will fall out, that, in the millions of events so chosen and recorded, shall so tally with any one, and be so exactly coupled and compared with it, that there will not remain some circumstance and diversity which will require a variation of judgment. There is little relation between our actions that are in perpetual mutation, and the laws that are fixed and immovable ; the most to be desired, are those which are the most rare, the most simple, and general : and I am farther of opinion, that we were better to have none at all, than to have them so numerous.

Nature always gives them better, than those are which we make ourselves ; witness the picture of the poets’ golden age, and the state wherein we see nations live, who have no other. Some there are, who, for their only judge, take the first passer by

The laws of nature better than our own.

Passengers made use of for judges.

\* Tacit. lib. iij. cap. 25.

that travels along their mountains, to determine their cause : and others, who, on their market-day, choose out some one amongst them, who decides all their controversies on the spot. What danger would there be, if the wisest should thus determine ours, according to occurrences, and by sight, without obligation of example and consequence ? Every shoe to his own foot. When king Ferdinand sent colonies to the Indies, he wisely provided that they should not carry along with them any students of the long robe, lest law-suits should get footing in that new world ; as being a science, in its own nature, the mother of altercation and division ; judging with Plato, that lawyers and physicians are the pests of a country.\*

How it comes to pass, that the vulgar tongue, which serves for every other purpose, becomes obscure and ambiguous in covenants and testaments.

How comes it to pass that our common language, so easy for all other uses, becomes obscure, and unintelligible in wills and contracts ? And that he who so clearly expresses himself, whatever he speaks or writes, cannot find in this any way of declaring himself which is not liable to doubt and contradiction ? If it be not that the great men of this art, applying themselves with peculiar attention to cull out hard words, and form artful clauses, have so weighed every syllable, and so thoroughly sifted every sort of connection, that they are now confounded and entangled in the infinity of figures, and so many minute divisions, that they can no longer be liable to any rule or prescription, nor any certain intelligence. *Confusum est quicquid usque in pulverem sectum est* :† “ Whatever is beaten into powder is “ confused.” As you have seen children try to bring a mass of quicksilver into a certain number of parts, the more they press and work it, and endeavour to reduce it to their own will, the more they irritate the liberty of this generous metal ; it baffles their art, and subdivides and sparkles itself into so many separate bodies, as are innumerable ; so it is here ; for in subdividing these subtleties, men are

\* De Repub. lib. iii. p. 621.

† Sen. epist. 79,

apt to increase their doubts; they are led into a way of stretching and diversifying difficulties, which are lengthened and dispersed. By starting and splitting of questions, they make the world fructify and abound in uncertainties and disputes; as the earth is made fertile, the deeper it is ploughed and the more it is harrowed. *Difficultatē facit doctrina*: "Doctrine begets difficulty." We doubted of Ulpian, and are now more perplexed with Bartolus and Baldus. We should blot out the trace of this innumerable diversity of opinions, not adorn ourselves with it, and intoxicate posterity. I know not what to say to it, but experience makes it manifest, that so many interpretations divide truth, and mar it. Aristotle wrote to be understood, which if he could not be, much less will another that is not so good at it; and a third than he who expressed his own thoughts. We open the matter, and spill it in pouring out. Of one subject we make a thousand, and in multiplying and subdividing them, relapse into the infinity of the atoms of Epicurus. Never did two men make the same judgment of the same thing; and it is impossible to find two opinions exactly alike, not only in several men, but in the same men, at different times. I oft find matter of doubt, of things which the commentary disdains to take notice of. I am most apt to stumble on even ground, like some horses that I have known, which make most trips in the smoothest way.

Who will not say that glosses augment doubts and ignorance, since there is no one book to be found, either human or divine, which the world busies itself about, whose difficulties are cleared by interpretation. The hundredth commentator still refers you to the next, more knotty and perplexed than he. When were we ever agreed amongst ourselves, that a book had enough, and that there was no more to be said on the subject? This is most apparent in the law pleadings. We give the authority of law to innumerable doctors, arrets *ad infinitum*, and to as

Glosses and commentaries only serve to obscure the text, and especially that of the books of the law.

many interpretations ; yet do we find any end of the necessity of interpreting ? Is there for all that any progress or advancement towards tranquillity ; or do we stand in need of any fewer advocates and judges, than when this mass of law was yet in its infancy ? We, on the contrary, obscure and bury the sense of it. We discover no more of it than what so many inclosures and barriers will permit. Men are not sensible of the natural disease of the mind. It does nothing but ferret and inquire, and is eternally wheeling, plodding, and perplexing itself ; and like the silk-worm, suffocates itself in its own web ; or like *mus in pice*, “ A mouse in a tar-barrel,” which, the more it struggles to get out, is the more entangled. It thinks it discovers at a great distance I know not what glimpse of imaginary light and truth ; but whilst it runs to it, so many difficulties, hindrances, and new inquiries cross its way, as mislead and intoxicate it. Not much unlike Æsop’s dog, that seeing something like a dead body floating in the sea, and not being able to approach it, attempted to drink the water, in order to lay the passage dry, and so drowned itself. To which tallies, what one Crates \* said of the writings of Heraclitus, “ That they required a reader who could “ swim well, that the depth and weight of his doctrine might not overwhelm and choke him.”† It is nothing but particular weakness that makes us content ourselves with what others, or ourselves, have found out in this pursuit of knowledge ; those of better understanding would not rest so content ; there is always room, and to spare, for one to succeed, nay even for ourselves, and every one else ; there is no end of our inquiries ; our end is in the other world. It is a sign either of a contracted mind when it is satisfied, or that it is grown weary. No generous

\* According to Diog. Laert. lib. ii. sect. 22, this was not Crates, but Socrates, who said of the writings of Heraclitus, that they had need of as excellent divers as any in the isle of Delos.

† Suidas in *Δηλῷ καλυμμένῳ*.

mind stops of itself; it always pushes on, and beyond its power; it has sallies beyond its compass. If it do not advance and press forward, and fall back, rush, turn and wheel about, it is but sprightly by halves; its pursuits are without bound or method; its aliment is admiration; ambiguity the chase; which Apollo plainly declared, by always speaking to us in a double, obscure, and oblique sense; not feeding, but amusing and puzzling us. It is an irregular and perpetual motion, without example and without aim. Its inventions heat, pursue, and introduce one another:

*Ainsi voit-on en un ruisseau coulant,  
Sans fin l'une eau, apres l'autre roulant ;  
Et tout de rang, d'un eternel conduit,  
L'une fuit l'autre, et l'une l'autre fuit.  
Par cette-ci, celle-là est poussée,  
Et cette-ci par l'autre est devancée :  
Toujours l'eau va dans l'eau, et toujours est-ce  
Même ruisseau, et toujours eau diverse.*

So in a running stream, where currents play,  
Successive waves still urge their liquid way,  
And as they swiftly glide along the shore,  
Each presses to o'ertake what's gone before.  
By this that's evermore push'd on, and this  
By that continually preceded is :  
In the same course the river ceaseless flows,  
But still new waves the varied mass compose.

There is more ado to interpret interpretations than things, and more books upon books than upon any other subject; we do nothing but comment upon one another. Every place swarms with commentaries; but of authors there is great scarcity. Is it not the principal and most reputed knowledge of our times to understand the learned? Is it not the common and final aim of all studies? Our opinions are grafted upon one another; the first serves for a stock to the second, the second to the third, thus step by step we climb the ladder. From whence it comes to pass, that he who is mounted highest has oft more honour than merit; for he is got up but a



grain upon the shoulders of the last but one. How oft, and perhaps how foolishly, have I stretched my book, to make it speak of itself? Foolishly, if for no other reason but this, that I ought to call to mind what I say of others who do the same; that the fond looks they so often cast upon their works, witness that their hearts pant with self-love, and that even the disdainful reproaches wherewith they lash them, are no other than the dissembled caresses of a maternal kindness; according to Aristotle, whose valuing and undervaluing himself, frequently spring from the same air of arrogancy: I urge for my excuse, that I ought in this to have more liberty than others, because I purposely treat of myself and of my writings, as I do of my other actions; but though my theme turn upon itself, I know not whether or no every one else will take such liberty.

Our disputes are endless, and most of them about words.

I have observed in Germany, that Luther has left as many and more divisions and disputes behind him, about the doubt of his opinions, than he himself raised about the holy scriptures. Our contest is verbal. I demand what nature is, what pleasure, circle, and substitution are? The question is about words, and is answered in the same coin. A stone is a body, but if a man should farther urge, and what is a body? Substance; and what is substance? and so on,\* he would drive the respondent to the end of his dictionary. We exchange one word for another, and often for one less understood. I better know what man is, than I know what animal is, or mortal, or rational. To satisfy one doubt, they give me ground for three; it is the Hydra's head. Socrates† asked Menon what virtue was; "There is," says Menon, "the virtue of a man and of a

\* We need go no farther than the English philosopher Locke, famous for his penetration and the incomparable rectitude of his judgment, who has plainly shown, that we have no clear, exact idea of what we call substance, lib. i. chap. 4, sect. 10, and lib. ii. chap. 23, sect. 2, &c. of his *Essay on the Human Understanding*.

† Plato, in *Menone*, p. 409.

“ woman, of a magistrate and of a private person, of  
 “ an old man, and of a child.” “ Very well,” says  
 Socrates, “ we were in quest of one virtue, and thou  
 “ hast brought us a swarm ; we put one question,  
 “ and thou returnest a whole hive.” As no event,  
 nor no form entirely resembles another ; so  
 there is not one that entirely differs from another ;  
 such is the ingenious mixture of nature. If our faces  
 were not alike, we could not distinguish man from  
 beast ; if they were not unlike, we could not distin-  
 guish one man from another. All things hold by  
 some similitude, every example halts. And the re-  
 lation which is drawn from experience is always  
 faulty and imperfect ; comparisons are always cou-  
 pled at one end or other ; so do the laws serve, and  
 are fitted to every one of our affairs by some wrested,  
 biassed, and forced interpretation.

Since the moral laws, that concern the particular duty of every one in himself, are so hard to be taught and observed, as we see they are ; it is no wonder if those which govern so many particulars, are much more so. Do but consider the form of this justice that governs us, it is a true testimony of human weakness, so full it is of error and contradiction. What we find to be favour and severity in justice (and we find so much of both, that I know not whether the medium is so often met with), are sickly parts, and unjust members of the very body and essence of justice. The country people come to bring me news, in great haste, that they just left, in a forest of mine, a man with a hundred wounds upon him, who was yet breathing, and begged of them water for pity's sake, and help to raise him up ; saying, they durst not come near him, but ran away, lest the officers of justice should catch them there ; and for fear, as it falls out with those who are found near a murdered person, they should be called in question about this accident to their utter ruin, having neither money nor any means to defend their innocence. What should I have said to these people ?

Imperfection of the laws that concern the subjects of a state.

It is certain that this office of humanity would have brought them into trouble,

Known in-  
nocents pu-  
nished in  
complai-  
sance to  
the forms of  
law.

How many innocents have we known that have been punished, even without the judge's fault, and how many more are there that have not arrived at our knowledge? this case happened in my time. Certain men were condemned to die for a murder committed: and their sentence, if not pronounced, was at least determined and concluded on. The judges, just in the nick, are advertised by the officers of an inferior court hard by, that they have some men in custody, who have directly confessed the said murder, and give such light into the fact, as is not to be doubted. It was then notwithstanding put to the question, whether or no they ought to suspend execution of the sentence already passed upon the former. They considered the novelty of the example, and the consequence of staying judgments, that the sentence of death was duly passed, and the judges could not retract. To conclude, these poor devils were sacrificed to the forms of law. Philip, or some other, provided against a like inconvenience, after this manner. He had condemned a man to pay a great fine to another, by a determined judgment. The truth some time after being discovered, it appeared he had passed an unjust sentence; on one side was the reason of the cause, on the other side the reason of the judiciary forms. He in some sort satisfied both, leaving the sentence in the state it was, and out of his own purse paying the costs of the condemned party. But he had to do in a repairable affair; mine were irreparably hanged. How many sentences have I seen more criminal than the crimes?

The inno-  
cent man is  
not sure of  
his life or  
property,  
by putting  
himself in-  
to the  
hands of  
justice.

All this makes me remember the ancient opinions, That of necessity a man must do wrong by retail, who will do right in the gross; and injustice in little things, that will have it in his power to do justice in great: that human justice is formed after the model of physic, according to which, all

“ that is useful, is also just and honest ; and what is  
 “ held by the Stoics, that nature herself proceeds  
 “ contrary to justice in most of her works ;” and  
 what is received by the Cyrenaics,\* “ That there is  
 “ nothing just in itself, but that customs and laws  
 “ make justice :” and what the Theodorians hold,  
 who maintain theft, sacrilege, and all sorts of un-  
 cleanliness just in a wise man,† if he knows them to  
 be profitable to him ; there is no remedy ; I am in  
 the same case that Alcibiades was, that I will ne-  
 ver, if I can help it, put myself into the hands of a  
 man who shall determine of my head, whether my life  
 and honour shall more depend upon the care and di-  
 ligence of my attorney, than upon my own inno-  
 cence. I would venture myself with such a justice  
 as would take notice of my good deeds as well as my  
 ill, and where I had as much to hope as to fear. In-  
 demnity is not sufficient satisfaction to a man who  
 does better than not to do amiss ; but our justice  
 presents us only one hand, and that the left hand  
 too ; let him be who he will, he shall be sure to go  
 off with loss.

In China, of which kingdom the government and  
 arts, without correspondence with, or knowledge  
 of ours, surpass our best examples in several parts  
 of excellence ; and of which the history gives me to  
 understand how much greater and more various the  
 world is, than either the ancients or we can pene-  
 trate ; the officers deputed by the prince to visit the  
 state of his provinces, as they punish those who be-  
 have themselves ill in their places, so do they libe-  
 rally reward those who have carried themselves  
 above the common sort, and beyond the necessity of  
 their duty : they there present themselves, not only  
 to be protected, but to get ; not simply to be paid,  
 but to be rewarded.

Judges es-  
 tablished in  
 China to  
 reward  
 good ac-  
 tions, as  
 well as to  
 punish the  
 bad.

\* Diog. Laert. in the Life of Aristippus, lib. ii. sect. 92.

† Ibid. sect. 99.

Montaigne  
never had  
a suit in  
any court  
of justice.

No judge, thanks be to God, ever yet spoke to me, in the quality of a judge, upon any cause whatever, whether my own or that of another, whether criminal or civil; nor was I ever within the walls of a prison. Imagination renders the very outside of a gaol my aversion: I am so fond of liberty, that should I be debarred access to any corner of the Indies, I would be somewhat uneasy. And whilst I can find either earth or air elsewhere, I shall never lurk where I must hide myself. Good God! how ill should I bear to be confined, as many people are, to a corner of the kingdom, deprived of the privilege of entering into the principal cities and courts, and the liberty of the public roads, for having quarrelled with our laws. If those under which I live, should but wag a finger at me, by way of menace, I would immediately go seek out others, let them be where they would; all my little prudence in the civil war, wherein we are now engaged, is employed, that they may not hinder my egress and regress.

What it  
was that in  
Mon-  
taigne's  
time kept  
up the cre-  
dit of the  
French  
laws, in  
other re-  
spects very  
unreasona-  
ble.

Now the laws keep up their credit, not for being just, but because they are laws: it is the mystical and the sole foundation of their authority; and it is well it is so; they being oft made by fools; for the most part by men that, out of hatred to equality, fail in equity; but always by men who are vain and fickle authors. There is nothing so grossly, nor so commonly faulty as the laws. Whoever obeys them because they are just, does not justly obey them as he ought. Our French laws, by their irregularity and deformity, in some sort lend a helping hand to disorder and corruption, as is manifest in their dispensation and execution. The command is so perplexed and inconstant, that it in some measure excuses both disobedience, and the vice of the interpretation, the administration and the observation of it. What fruit then soever we may reap from experience, will be of little service to our instruction, which we draw from foreign examples; if we make so little profit of that we have of our own, which is

more familiar to us, and doubtless sufficient to instruct us in that whereof we have absolute need. I study myself more than any other subject; this is my metaphysic, this my natural philosophy:

*Quâ Deus hanc mundi temperet arte domum,\*  
Qua venit exoriens, quâ deficit, unde coactis  
Cornibus in plenum menstrua luna edit:  
Unde salo superant venti, quid flamine captet  
Eurus, et in nubes unde perennis aqua.  
Sit ventura dies mundi quæ subruat arces:  
Quærite, quos agitat mundi labor.†*

By what means God the universe does sway,  
Or how the pale-fac'd sister of the day,  
When, in increasing, can her horns unite,  
Till they contract into a full orb'd light;  
Why ocean of the winds the better get,  
Why Eurus blows, and clouds are always wet;  
What day the world's great fabric must o'erthrow,  
Let them inquire, who would its secrets know.

In this university, I suffer myself to be ignorantly and negligently led by the general law of the world. I shall know it well enough when I feel it; my learning cannot make it alter its course; it will not change itself for me; it is folly to hope it, and a greater folly to concern a man's self about it, seeing it is necessarily alike, public and common. The bounty and capacity of the governor most absolutely discharge us of all care of the government. Philosophical inquisitions and contemplations serve for no other use but to feed our curiosity. Philosophers, with great reason, refer us to the rules of nature; but they have no need of so sublime a knowledge: they falsify them, and present us with nature's face painted with too high-coloured and too adulterate a complexion, from whence spring so many different pictures of so uniform a subject. As she has given us feet to walk with, so has she given us prudence to guide us in life; not such an ingenious, robust, and majestic prudence as that of their invention, but

\* Prop. lib. iii. eleg. 5, ver. 25, &c.

† Lucan. lib. i. ver. 417,

yet one that is easy, quiet, and salutary ; and such very well performs what the other promises, in him who has the good luck to know how to employ it sincerely and regularly, that is to say, according to nature. The most simply to commit a man's self to nature, is to do it the most wisely. Oh what a soft, easy, and wholesome pillow is ignorance and incuriosity, whereon to repose a well turned head ! I had rather understand myself well in myself, than in Cicero. Of the experience I have of myself, I find enough to make me wise, if I were but a good scholar. Whoever calls to mind the excess of his past anger, and to what a degree that fever transports him, sees the deformity of this passion better than in Aristotle, and conceives a more just hatred against it. Whoever remembers the hazards he has run, those that threatened him, and the slight occasions that have removed him from one state to another, does by that prepare himself for future changes, and the acknowledgment of his condition. The life of Cæsar himself is no more exemplary for us than our own, and though it was popular and commanding, it was still a life liable to all human accidents. Let us but listen to it, and we apply to ourselves all whereof we have principal need. Whoever calls to memory, how many times he has been mistaken in his own judgment, is he not a great fool if he does not ever after suspect it ? When I find myself convinced, by another's reason, of a false opinion, I do not so much learn what he has said to me that is new, which particular ignorance would be no great purchase, as I do in general my own weakness, and the treachery of my understanding, from whence I extract the reformation of the whole mass. In all my other errors I do the same, and find this rule greatly beneficial to life. I regard not the species and individual, as a stone that I have stumbled at ; I learn to suspect my steps every-where, and am careful to place them right. To learn that a man has said or done a foolish thing, is a thing of no moment. A man must learn that he is nothing but a fool, a much

more ample and important instruction. The false steps that my memory has so often betrayed me into, even then when it was most secure of itself, are not idly thrown away; it may now swear to me, and assure me as much as it will, I shake my head, and dare not trust it; the first opposition that is made to my testimony, puts me in suspense: and I durst not rely upon it in any thing of moment, nor warrant it in another person's concerns: and were it not that what I do for want of memory, others do more often for want of sincerity, I would always in matter of fact, rather choose to take truth from another's mouth than my own. If every one did but watch the effects and circumstances of the passions that sway him, as I have done that which I am most subject to, he would see them coming, and would a little break their impetuosity and career; they do not always seize us on a sudden, there are threatenings, and degrees:

*Fluctus uti primo cœpit cùm allescere vento,  
Paulatim sese tollit mare, et altiùs undas  
Erigit, inde imo consurgit ad æthera fundo.\**

As the sea first begins to foam and fret,  
Thence higher swells, higher, and higher yet,  
Till at the last so high the billows rise,  
They seem to bid defiance to the skies.

Judgment holds in me a magisterial scat; at least, it carefully endeavours to make it so: it lets my appetites take their own course, as hatred and friendship; nay, even that which I bear to myself, without suffering alteration and corruption. If it cannot reform the other parts according to its own model, at least it suffers not itself to be corrupted by them, but plays its game apart. That admonition to every one to know themselves, ought to be of important effect, since the God of wisdom and light caused it to be written on the front of his temple, as comprehending all he had to advise us. Plato says also,

\* Virg. *Æneid.* lib. vii. ver. 528, &c.



that prudence is nothing but the execution of this ordinance ; and Socrates verifies it by piece-meal in Xenophon. The difficulties and obscurity are not discerned in any science, but by those that are got into it ; for a certain degree of understanding is requisite to be able to know that a man is ignorant : and we must push at a door to know whether it be bolted against us. From hence this Platonic subtlety springs, that neither they who know are to inquire, forasmuch as they know ; nor they who do not know, forasmuch as to inquire, they must know what they inquire of. So in this of knowing a man's self, that which every man is seen so resolved and satisfied in with himself, and that which every man thinks he sufficiently understands, signifies, that every one understands nothing at all of the matter ; as Socrates tells Euthydemus. I, who profess nothing else, therein find so infinite a depth and variety, that all the fruit I have reaped from my learning, serves only to make me sensible how much I have to learn. To my weakness, so often confessed, I owe the propensity I have to modesty, my assent to the articles of belief imposed upon me, a constant faintness and moderation in my opinions, and a hatred of that troublesome and wrangling arrogance, wholly believing and trusting in itself, the capital enemy of discipline and truth. Do but hear how they advance and domineer ; the first fooleries they utter, are in the style wherewith men establish religion and laws. *Nihil est turpius quàm cognitioni et perceptioni assertionem, approbationemque præcurrere* : \* “ Nothing is more absurd than that assertion “ and approbation should precede knowledge and “ perception.” Aristarchus said that anciently there was scarce seven wise men to be found in the world, and in his time scarce so many fools. Have not we more reason than he to say so in this age ? affirmation, and obstinacy, are express signs of stu-

\* Cic. Acad. lib. i. cap. 12.

pidity. If a fellow has stumbled and had a hundred falls in a day, yet he will be at his ergo's as resolute and sturdy as before; so that one would conclude he had had some new soul and vigour of understanding infused into him; and that it happened to him as it did to that ancient son of Tellus, who took fresh courage, and was made stronger by his fall:

——— *Cui cùm tetigere parentem,  
Jam defecta vigent renovato robore membra.\**  
Whose broken limbs upon his mother laid,  
Immediately new force and vigour had.

Does not this incorrigible coxcomb think that he assumes a new understanding, by undertaking a new dispute? I accuse human ignorance by my own experience, which is in my opinion the world's best school-master. Such as will not conclude it so in themselves, by so vain an example as mine, or their own, let them believe it from Socrates, the master of masters. For the philosopher Antisthenes said to his disciples, "Let us go, and hear Socrates; I will be a pupil with you."† And maintaining this doctrine of his Stoical sect, that virtue was sufficient to make a life completely happy, he added; it had no need of any other thing whatever, except the vigour of Socrates. The long attention that I have employed in considering myself, also fits me to judge tolerably of others; and there are few things whereof I speak better, and more excusably. I happen very oft to see and distinguish the qualities of my friends more nicely than they do themselves. I have astonished some with the pertinence of my description, and have given them warning of themselves. By having from my infancy been accustomed to contemplate my own life in that of others, I have acquired a complexion studious in that particular. And when I am once intent upon it, I let few things

\* Lucan. lib. iv. ver. 599.

† Diog. Laert. in the Life of Antisthenes, lib. vi. sect. 2.

about me, whether countenances, humours, or discourses which serve to that purpose, escape me. I study all, both what I am to avoid, and what I am to follow. Also in my friends, I discover their inward inclinations by their productions; not by ranging this infinite variety of so different and detached actions into certain species and chapters, not distinctly distributing my parcels and divisions under known heads and classes :

*Sed neque quàm multæ species, nec nomina quæ sint,  
Est numerus.\**

But not the number of their kind and names,  
They are too many.

The learned speak and deliver their fancies more specifically, and by piece-meal. I, who see no farther into things than as custom informs me, generally give mine by way of experiment, without form and method. As in this, I pronounce my opinion by loose and disjointed articles; it is a thing that cannot be spoken at once, and in gross. Relation and conformity are not to be found in such low and common souls as ours. Wisdom is a solid and entire building, of which every piece keeps its place, and carries its mark. *Sola sapientia in se tota conversa est.*† “Wisdom only is wholly turned into itself.” I leave it to artists (and I know not whether or no they will be able to bring it about in a thing so perplexed, small, and casual) to marshal into distinct bodies this infinite diversity of faces, and to settle and regulate our inconstancy. I not only find it hard to piece our actions to one another, but I likewise find it very hard to design them properly every one by themselves by any principal quality, so ambiguous and capricious they are by the several lights. What is remarked for rare in Perseus, king of Macedon, that his mind, fixing itself to no one condition,

\* Vir. Geor. lib. ii. ver. 103, where he is speaking of the innumerable kinds of grapes.

† Cic. de Fin. lib. iii. cap. 7.

wandered through all sorts of life, and behaved in a manner so wild and extravagant, that it was neither known by himself, or any other, what kind of man he was,\* seems almost to suit all mankind. And I have seen another of his temper, to whom I think this conclusion might more properly be applied: he kept no medium, but was still running headlong from one extreme to another, upon occasions not to be guessed at; he steered no manner of course without wonderful contrariety; and had no one quality uncompounded: so that the best guess that man can one day make, will be that he affected and studied to make himself known, by being not to be known. A man had need have good ears to hear himself frankly censured. And as there are few that can bear this without being nettled, those who hazard the undertaking it to us, manifest a singular effect of friendship; for it is sincere love indeed, to attempt to hurt and offend us for our own good. I think it rude to censure a man whose ill qualities are more than his good ones. Plato requires three things in him that will examine the soul of another, to wit, knowledge, good will, and boldness.†

I was once asked what I would have thought myself fit for, had any one designed to make use of me in my younger years:

*Dum melior vires sanguis dabat, æmula necdum  
Temporibus geminis canebat sparsa senectus.‡*

Whilst better blood my limbs with vigour fed,  
And ere old age had snow'd upon my head.

For nothing, said I. And I am willing enough to excuse my inability to do any thing, that may enslave myself to another. But I would have told these truths to my sovereign, and have controlled his manners, if he had so pleased; not in gross by scho

Montaigne would have been a fit person to talk freely to his sovereign, to

\* Tit. Liv. lib. xii. cap. 20.

† Socrates, in Plato's dialogue, entitled Georgias.

‡ Æncid. lib. v. ver. 415.

tell him  
truths, and  
to teach  
him to  
know him-  
self.

lastic lessons, which I understand not, and from which indeed I see no true reformation spring in those that do, but by observing them gradually, at all opportunities, and simply and naturally judging them by the eye, and distinctly one by one, giving him to understand upon what terms he was in the common opinion, in opposition to his flatterers. There is none of us that would not be worse than kings, if so continually corrupted as they are with that sort of vermin. Could even Alexander, that great king and philosopher, defend himself from them? I would have fidelity, judgment, and freedom enough for that purpose. This would be a nameless office; otherwise it would lose both its grace and effect; and it is a part that is not indifferently fit for all men. For truth itself has not the privilege to be spoken at all times, and in all events; the use of it, noble as it is, has its circumscriptions and limits. It oft falls out, as the world now goes, that a man lets it slip into the ear of a prince, not only to no purpose, but even injuriously and unjustly. No man shall make me believe, that a virtuous remonstrance may not be viciously applied, and that the interest of the substance is not oft to give place to that of the form.

For such a purpose, I would have a man that is content with his own fortune :

*Quod sit, esse velit, nihilque malit.\**

Who likes that present state of his,  
And would not be but what he is.

Who  
would be  
the most  
proper  
person for  
the exer-  
cise of this  
office to  
princes.

and born to a moderate fortune; as on the one hand he would not scruple to touch his sovereign's heart to the quick, for fear of losing his preferment, and on the other, by being of a middling quality, he would have more easy communication with all sorts of people : And I would have this office limited to only one man, because to diffuse the privilege of this

\* Mart. Ep. lib. x. epig. 47, ver. 12.

liberty and privacy to many, would beget an inconvenient irreverence; and even of that one too, I would above all things require the fidelity of silence.

A king is not to be believed when he boasts of his constancy in standing the shock of the enemy for his glory, if for his profit and amendment, he cannot bear the freedom of a friend's advice, which can do no more than sting his ear, the remainder of its effect being still in his own power. Now, there is no rank of men whatever who stand in so great need of true and free admonition as they do. They act in a public sphere, and have so many spectators to please, that when men have used to conceal from them whatever would divert them from their own course, they insensibly have found themselves involved in the hatred and detestation of their people, sometimes upon such slight occasions as they might have avoided without any prejudice, even to their pleasures, had they been advised and set right in time. Their favourites commonly have more regard to themselves, than they have to their sovereigns; and indeed it stands them upon, as in truth most offices of true friendship, when applied to the sovereign, are disagreeable and dangerous in the essay; so that therein there is need, not only of very great affection and freedom, but of courage too.

To conclude, all this medley of things here compiled is nothing but a register of my own experiments in life, which for its internal soundness is exemplary enough to take instruction against the grain; but as to bodily health, no man can furnish out more profitable experience than I, who present it pure, and no way corrupted and changed by art and opinion. Experience is properly upon its own dunghill in the subject of physic, where reason wholly gives it place. Tiberius\* said, that whoever had

How much kings are in want of such a person.

Free advice necessary for kings.

The advantage that may be derived from Montaigne's Essays for the health of the soul, and much more for that of the body.

\* I cannot imagine where Montaigne met with that saying of Tiberius, that after the age of 20 years, a man ought to have nothing to do with physical remedies. Suetonius only says, that Tiberius, after he was 30 years of age, governed his health

lived twenty years, ought to be responsible to himself for all things that were hurtful or wholesome to him, and to know how to order himself without physic. And he might have learned it of Socrates, who, advising his disciples to be solicitous of their health, and to make it their chief study, added, that it was hard if a man of sense, that took care of his exercises and diet, did not better know than any physician, what was good or bad for him. Indeed physic professes always to have experience for the touch-stone of its operations. And Plato was right when he said, that to be a true physician, he who professed that science should first himself have passed through all the diseases he pretends to cure, and through all the accidents and circumstances whereof he is to judge. It is but reason they should get the pox, if they will know how to cure it: for my part, I would choose to put myself into such hands; for the others only guide us, like him who paints the sea, rocks, and ports, and draws the model of a ship as he sits safe at his table; but send him to sea, he knows not what course to steer. They make such a description of our maladies, as a town-crier does of a lost horse, or dog, of such a colour, such a height, such an ear; but bring the animal to him, and he knows him not for all that. God grant that physic may one day give me some good and visible relief, namely, when I shall cry out in good earnest:

*Tandem efficaci do manus scientiæ.\**

At length I own the power of thy pill,  
And let its operation cure or kill.

**The arts that promise to keep our bodies and souls**

after his own fancy, and without the help and advice of physicians. Sueton. in the Life of Tiberius, sect. 68. And Plutarch tells us, in his excellent Treatise of the Rules and Precepts for Health, that he remembered to have heard, that Tiberius used to say, that the man who after threescore years of age held his hand out to a physician to feel his pulse, deserved to be laughed at for a fool. Chap. 23 of Amyot's translation.

\* Hor. epode 17, ver. 1.

in health, promise a great deal, but there is none that less keep their promise. And in our times, those that make profession of these arts amongst us, manifest the effects of them less than all other men. One may say of them at the most, that they sell medicinal drugs; but that they are physicians a man cannot say. I have lived so long as to be able to give an account of my practice hitherto. And, for whoever has a mind to read it, as his taster, I give him this essay, of which these are some articles, as they occur to my memory. I have no custom that has not varied according to accidents; but I record those to which I have been most used, and that hitherto have had the greatest possession of me.

My form of life is the same in sickness as in health; the same bed, the same hours, the same meats, and the same liquors serve me; I add nothing to them but greater or less moderation, according to my strength and appetite. My health consists in maintaining my wonted state without disturbance. I see that sickness deprives me of it on one hand, and if I will be ruled by the physicians, they will rob me of it on the other hand; so that both by fortune and by art I am put out of my road. I believe nothing more certainly than this, that I cannot be hurt by the use of things to which I have been so long accustomed. It is custom that gives the form to a man's life, as it best pleases her, who in that is all in all: it is the beverage of Circe that varies our nature how it pleases. How many nations, and but a little way from us, think our fear of the sun's exhalations in a very clear day, that so manifestly hurt us, ridiculous, and our very watermen and peasants laugh at it. You make a German sick if you lay him upon a mattress, as you do an Italian if you put him on a feather-bed; and a Frenchman without curtains and a fire. A Spanish stomach cannot hold out to eat as we can, nor ours to drink like the Swiss. A German made me very merry at Augsbourg in finding fault with our hearths by the same arguments which we

Montaigne's  
course of  
life, the  
same in  
sickness as  
in health.



commonly make use of in decrying their stoves : for, to say the truth, that smothered heat, and the scent too of that matter with which they are heated again and again, offend most people who are not used to them, but not me ; yet as to the rest, this heat being equal, constant, and universal, without flame, without smoke, and without the wind that comes down our chimnies, they may in other respects endure comparison with ours. Why do we not imitate the Roman architecture ? For, they say, that anciently fires were not made in their houses, but on the outside, and at the bottom of them, from whence the heat was conveyed to the whole fabric by pipes contrived in the wall, which were drawn twining about the rooms that were to be warmed : which I have seen plainly described somewhere in Seneca. This German gentleman, hearing me commend the conveniences and beauties of his city, which truly deserves it, began to pity me that I was to go away. And the first inconvenience he alleged to me was, the dizziness which the chimneys elsewhere brought upon me. He had heard some one make this complaint, and fixed it upon us, he being by custom deprived of the means of perceiving it in his house. All heat that comes from fire makes me weak and dull, and yet Evenus said, that fire was the best condiment of life. I rather choose any other way of making myself warm. We are afraid to drink our wines when towards the bottom of the vessel ; in Portugal those fumes are reputed delicate, and is the beverage of princes. In fine, every nation has several customs and usances, that are not only unknown, but savage and miraculous to some others. What should we do with those people who admit of no testimonies if not printed, who believe not men if not in a book, nor truth if not of competent age ? We dignify our fopperies when we commit them to the press. It is of a great deal more weight to him you speak of, to say, “ I have seen such a thing,” than if you only say, “ I have heard such a thing.” But I,

Palled  
wine in  
esteem in  
Portugal.

who no more disbelieve a man's mouth than his pen, and who know that men write as indiscreetly as they speak, and that esteem this age as much as one that is past, do as soon quote a friend of my acquaintance as Aulus Gellius or Macrobius, and what I have seen as what they have wrote. And, as it is held of virtue, that it is not greater for having continued longer, so do I hold of truth, that for being older it is not wiser. I often say, that is mere folly that makes us run after strange and scholastic examples. Their fertility is the same now that it was in the time of Homer and Plato. But is it not that we derive more honour from the quotation than from the truth of the discourse? As if it were to borrow our proof from the shops of Vascosan, or of Plantin, than of what is to be seen in our own village: or else, indeed, that we have not the wit to cull out and make useful what we see before us, and judge of it lively enough to draw it into example. For if we say that we want authority to procure faith to our testimony, we speak from the purpose, forasmuch as, in my opinion, of the most ordinary, common, and known things, could we but find out their light, the greatest miracles of nature might be formed, and the most wonderful examples, especially upon the subject of human actions. Now upon the subject I am speaking of, setting aside the examples I have gathered from books, and what Aristotle says of Andron, the Argian, that he travelled over the arid sands of Lybia without drinking; a gentleman who has very well behaved himself in several employments, said, in a place where I was, that he had rode from Madrid to Lisbon in the heat of summer, without any drink at all; he is very healthful and vigorous for his age, and hath nothing extraordinary in the usance of his life, but this, to live sometimes two or three months, nay, a whole year, without drinking. He is sometimes athirst; but he lets it pass over, and holds it is an appetite which easily goes off of itself, and drinks more out of humour than either for need or plea-

sure. Here is another example : it is not long ago that I found one of the most learned men in France, among those of the greatest fortunes, studying in a corner of a hall that they had separated for him with tapestry, and about him a rabble of his servants, that you may be sure were rude and loud enough. He told me, and Seneca says almost the same of himself, he made an advantage of this noise ; as if beaten with this rattle, he so much the better recollected and retired himself into himself for contemplation, and that this tempest of voices reperculated his thoughts within himself. Being at Padua, he had his study so long situated in the rattle of coaches, and the tumult of the public place, that he not only formed himself to the contempt, but even to the use of noise, for the service of his studies. Socrates answered Alcibiades, who, being astonished at his patience, asked him how he could endure the perpetual scolding of his wife, “ Why,” said he, “ As those do who are accustomed to the ordinary “ noise of wheels to draw water.” I am quite otherwise ; I have a tender head, a brain very volatile ; and when it is bent upon any one thing, the least buzzing of a fly tears it into pieces. Seneca,\* in his youth, having, by the example of Sextius, formed a positive resolution of eating nothing that had life, passed over a whole year without it, as he said, with pleasure, and only returned to animal food, that he might not be suspected of taking up this rule from some new religion by which it was prescribed. But he took up, however, from the precepts of Attalus, a custom, not to lie any more upon soft bedding, but even to his old age made use of such as would not yield to any pressure. What the custom of his time denominated roughness, ours treats as effeminacy. Do but observe the difference between the way of living of my labourers, and that of mine ; the Scythians and the Indians have nothing

\* Senec. epist. 108.

more remote both from my force and method. I know very well that I have picked up beggar-boys to serve me, who soon after have quitted both my kitchen and livery, only that they might return to their former course of life: and I found one afterwards gathering muscles out of the sink for his dinner, whom I could neither by entreaties nor threats, reclaim from the sweetness and relish he found in indigence. Beggars have their grandeur and delights, as well as the rich; and it is said, their particular dignities and politics. These are the effects of custom, which can mould us not only into what form she pleases (and yet the sages say, we ought to apply ourselves to the best, which she would soon make easy to us), but also to change and variation, which is the most noble and most useful of her documents. The best of my bodily perfections is, that I am flexible and not very obstinate. I have some inclinations more proper and ordinary, and more agreeable than others; but I deviate from them with very little trouble, and easily slip into a contrary course. A young man ought to cross his own rules to awake his vigour, and to keep it from growing mouldy and rusty. There is no course of life so weak and sottish, as that which is carried on by rule and discipline:

*Ad primum lapidem vectari cum placet, hora  
Sumitur ex libro; si prurit frictus ocelli  
Angulus, inspectâ genesi collyria quaerit.\**

If but a mile he travel out of town  
The planetary hour must first be known;  
If he but rub the corner of his eye,  
He chooses salve by his nativity.

He will often relapse into excesses, if he will take my word for it; otherwise the least debauch ruins him. He renders himself uneasy, and disagreeable in conversation. The worst quality in a well-bred man is delicacy, and being attached to a certain par-

\* Juv. sat. vi. ver. 376.

ticular form ; and it is particular, if not pliable and supple. It is a kind of reproach, not to be able, or not to dare to do what he sees others do. Let such as those sit at home. It is in every man indecent, but in a soldier vicious and intolerable ; who, as Philopœmen said, ought to accustom himself to all variety and inequality of life.

The cus-  
toms to  
which  
Montaigne  
was a slave  
in his old  
age.

Though I have been brought up as much as was possible to liberty and indifference, yet, so it is, that through this indifference, by growing old, and having more settled upon certain forms (my age is now past instruction, and I have henceforward nothing to do but to take care of it as well as I can), custom has already, ere I was aware, so imprinted its character in me, in certain things, that I look upon it as a kind of excess to depart from them. And, without a force upon myself, I cannot sleep in the day-time, or eat between meals, nor breakfast, nor go to bed, without a great interval, as of three hours after supper ; nor get children till I have slept, and never standing upon my feet, nor endure to put myself in a sweat, nor quench my thirst either with pure water or wine, nor keep my head long bare, nor have it shaved after dinner ; and I would be as uneasy without my gloves, as without my shirt, or without washing when I rise from table, or out of my bed ; and could not lie without a canopy and curtains, as necessary things : I could dine without a table-cloth, but not without a clean napkin, after the German fashion. I foul them more than they, or the Italians do, and make but little use either of spoon or fork. I am sorry that the same is not in use amongst us, that I see at the tables of kings ; which is, to change our napkins at every service, as they do our plates. We are told of that laborious soldier Marius, that, growing old, he became nice in his drinking, and never drank but out of a peculiar cup of his own. I, in like manner, fancy glasses of a certain form, and do not willingly drink in a common glass with others : all metal offends me compared with matter

clear and transparent ; let my eyes taste too, as far as they can. I owe several such delicacies to custom. Nature has also, on the other hand, helped me to some of hers, as no longer to be able to endure two full meals in one day, without overcharging my stomach, nor a total abstinence from one of those meals, without filling myself with wind, furring my mouth, and blunting my appetite. I also dislike the evening air. For of late years, in marches, which often happen to be all night long, after five or six hours, my stomach begins to be queasy, with a violent pain in my head, so that I always vomit before day-break. When others go to breakfast I go to sleep, and when I rise am as brisk as before. I had had always been told, that the dews never fell but in the beginning of the night ; but for certain years past, after long and familiar acquaintance with a lord possessed with the opinion, that the air is more sharp and dangerous about the declining of the sun, an hour or two before it sets, which he carefully avoids, and despises that of the night ; he had almost brought me into his opinion. What, shall the very doubt and inquiry strike our imagination so far as to alter us ? Such as on a sudden give way to their propensities, bring entire ruin upon themselves. And I am sorry for several gentlemen, who, through the folly of their physicians, have in their youth and strength brought themselves into consumptions. It were even yet better to endure a cough, than by disuse for ever to lose the commerce of common life in an action of so great utility. Ill-natured science, to put us out of conceit with the most pleasant hours of the day : let us keep possession of it to the last. For the most part a man hardens himself by being obstinate, and corrects his constitution ; as Cæsar did the falling sickness by dint of contempt. A man should addict himself to the best rules, but not enslave himself to them ; yet there is one to which a slavish attachment is useful.

Both kings and philosophers go to stool, and

The care  
that Mon-  
taigne took  
to keep his  
body open.

ladies too; public lives are bound to ceremony; mine, that is obscure and private, enjoys all natural dispensation. Soldier and Gascon are also characters a little subject to indiscretion in this point; wherefore I shall say of this action, that it is necessary to refer it to certain prescribed and nocturnal hours, and to force a man's self to it by custom, as I have done; but not to subject himself, as I have done in my declining years, to look out for a particular convenience of place and seat for that purpose, and making it troublesome by long sitting: yet, in the foulest offices, is it not in some measure excusable to require more care and cleanliness? *Natura homo mundum, et elegans animal est* :\* “Man is by nature “a clean and elegant creature.” Of all the actions of nature, I hate most the being interrupted in that. I have seen many soldiers troubled with an irregular call, whilst I and my belly never fail of our punctual assignation, which is at leaping out of bed, if some violent business, or sickness do not molest us.

The surest  
course to  
be taken  
by valetu-  
dinarians.

I do not think therefore, as I said before, that valetudinarians can be safer than by keeping close to that course of life to wherein they had been bred and trained up. Alteration, be it what it will, proves hurtful. Can you believe that chestnuts can hurt a Perigourdin, or one of Lucca; or milk and cheese the mountaineers? Men enjoy them not only a new, but a contrary method of life, a change which a man in health could not endure. To prescribe water to a native of Bretagne of three-score and ten, to shut a seaman up in a stove, and to forbid a footman to walk, is to deprive them of motion, and at last of air and light :

— *An vivere tanti est ?  
Cogimur a suetis animum suspendere rebus,  
Atque ut vivamus vivere desinimus.  
Hoc superesse reor quibus et spirabilis aer  
Et lux qua regimur, redditur ipsa gravis.*†

\* Seneca, epist. 92.

† Gallus, eleg. i. ver. 55—255

To human life a gift of so much price  
 When our old habits we must sacrifice,  
 And live no longer,—to live otherwise?  
 I can't imagine that they longer live,  
 To whom nor light, nor air does comfort give.

If they do no other good, they do this at least, that they prepare patients betimes for death, by little and little undermining and curtailing the usage of life.

Both well and sick, I have ever willingly gratified the appetites that pressed upon me. I give great authority to my propensities and desires. I do not love to cure one disease by another. I hate remedies that are more troublesome than the disease. To be subject to the stone, and subject to abstain from the pleasure of eating oysters, are two evils instead of one. The disease torments us on the one hand, and the proscription on the other. Since we are ever in danger of mistaking, let us rather run a hazard by the continuance of pleasure. The world proceeds quite contrary, and thinks nothing profitable that is not painful; ease stands suspected by it. My appetite is in several things of itself happily enough accommodated to the health of my stomach. Acrimony and quickness in sauces were pleasant to me when young; but my stomach disliking them, my taste for them soon went off. Wine is hurtful to sick people; and it is the first thing that my mouth disrelishes when I am sick, and with an invincible disgust. Whatever I take against my liking does me harm; but nothing hurts me that I eat with appetite and delight; I never received harm by any action that was very pleasant to me; and accordingly have made all medicinal conclusions give entire precedence to my pleasure. And, when I was young,

Montaigne  
 whether  
 well or  
 sick in-  
 dulg'd his  
 natural ap-  
 petites.

*Quem circumcursans hūc, atque hūc sæpe Cupido  
 Fulgebat crocinâ splendidus in tunica.\**

Whilst Cupid round me fluttering did fly,  
 In his gay mantle of the Tyrian dye.

\* Catullus, carm. 56, ver. 133.



I gave myself the reins as licentiously and rashly as any body else to my then governing passion :

*Et militavi non sine gloria.\**

And in the service of beauty I gallantly fought.

yet more in continuance and holding out, than in a sally :

*Sex me vix memini sustinuisse vices.†*

It is certainly a misfortune, and a miracle at once, to confess at what a tender age I was first subjected to love : it was indeed by chance, for it was long before the years of choice or discretion : I do not remember myself so long ago. My fortune may very well be compared to that of Quartilla,‡ who could not remember when she lost her virginity :

*Inde tragus celeresque pili, mirandaque matri  
Barba mea.§*

Therefore my beard budded early to my mother's admiration.

Physicians commonly submit their rules to the violent longings that happen to sick persons, with very good success. This great desire, strange and vicious as it is, it cannot be imagined but that nature must have a hand in it. And then how easy a thing is it to satisfy the fancy? In my opinion, this part wholly carries it, at least, above all the rest. The most grievous and common evils are those that fancy loads us with. This Spanish saying pleases me in several senses ; *Defienda me dios de my* : “ God defend me from myself.” I am sorry when I am sick, that I have not some longing that might give me the

\* Hor. lib. iii. ode 26, ver. 2.

† Ovid. Amor. lib. iii. eleg. 7, ver. 26. Some very curious inquirers will blame me for not having explained this little verse ; and there are others whom I rather chose to keep fair with, would give me a rap on the knuckles if I had. All I can do to oblige the first, is to refer them to Fontaine's Tale de Berceau, ver. 246.

‡ Petronius, p. 17, the Paris edit. an. 1587.

§ Martial, lib. xi. ep. 23, ver. 7, and 8.

contentment of satisfying it; physic would hardly be able to divert me from it. I do the same when I am well. I can think of very little more than to hope or wish. It is a pity a man should be so weak and languishing, as to have nothing left him but wishing.

The art of physic is not so solidly established as <sup>The uncertainty of</sup> to leave us without authority for whatever we do; <sup>physic</sup> according to Fernelius and Scala it changes accord- <sup>gives a</sup> ing to the climates and moons. If your physician <sup>sanction to</sup> does not think it good for you to sleep, to drink <sup>most of our</sup> wine, or to eat such and such meats, never trouble <sup>longings.</sup> yourself, I will find you another that shall not be of his opinion; the diversity of physical arguments and opinions includes all sorts of methods. I saw a miserable sick person panting and burning with thirst, in order that he might be cured; who was afterwards laughed at by another physician, who condemned that advice as hurtful to him: did he not torment himself to good purpose? A man of that profession is lately dead of the stone, who had made trial of extreme abstinence to contend with his disease. His fellow physicians said, that on the contrary, this abstinence had dried his body up, and baked the gravel in his kidneys.

I have observed that, both in wounds and sicknesses, speaking discomposes and hurts me as much <sup>Why talking was</sup> as any irregularity I can commit. My voice spends <sup>hurtful to</sup> and tires me, for it is loud and strained; so that <sup>Montaigne</sup> when I have gone to whisper some great persons <sup>in his sick-</sup> about affairs of consequence, they have oft desired <sup>ness.</sup> me to moderate my voice.

This story justifies a digression here. A person <sup>A short digression on</sup> in a certain Greek school,\* speaking loud as I do, <sup>the manner</sup> the master of the ceremonies sent to him to speak <sup>of regulat-</sup> softly: "Tell him then he must send me," replied <sup>ing the</sup> the other, "the tone he would have me speak in." <sup>voice in</sup> <sup>conversa-</sup> <sup>tion.</sup>

\* This was Carneades, the Academic philosopher, see Diog. Laert. lib. iv. sect. 63.

To which the other replied, " That he should take " the tone from the ear of him to whom he spake." This was well said, if he meant, " Speak according " to the affair you are speaking about to your auditor ;" for if it mean, " It is sufficient that he " hears you ; or govern yourself by him ;" I do not think it to be reason. The tone and motion of the voice carries with it a great deal of the expression and signification of my meaning, and it is I who am to govern it, to make myself understood. There is a voice to instruct, a voice to flatter, and a voice to reprehend. I will not only that my voice reach him, but perhaps that it strike and pierce him. When I rattle my footman with a sharp and bitter tone, it would be very pretty for him to say, " Pray master, " speak lower, I hear you very well." *Est quædam vox ad auditum accommodata, non magnitudine, sed proprietate :\** " There is a certain voice accommodated to the hearing, not by the loudness, but " propriety." Speech is half his that speaks, and half his that hears ; the last of which ought to prepare himself to receive it, according to the bias it takes. Like tennis players, he that receives the ball, shifts and prepares, according as he sees him move who strikes the ball, and according to the stroke itself.

Distempers have their periods, which we must wait for with patience.

Experience has moreover taught me this, that we ruin ourselves with impatience. Evils have their life and limits, their diseases, and their recovery ; the constitution of maladies is formed by the pattern of the constitution of animals ; they have their fortunes and days limited from their birth. Whoever attempts imperiously to cut them short by force in the middle of their course, does lengthen and multiply them, and incenses instead of appeasing them. I am of Crantor's opinion, that we are neither obstinately and wilfully to oppose evils, nor truckle under them for want of courage, but that we are

\* Quintilian. Institut. Orat. lib. xi. cap. 3.

naturally to give way to them, according to their condition and our own: we ought to let diseases take their course; and I find they stay less with me, who let them alone. I have lost those which are reputed the most tenacious and obstinate, without any help or art, and contrary to the physician's rules. Let us a little permit nature to operate; she understands her own affairs better than we. But such a one died, and so shall you, if not of that disease, of another. And how many have nevertheless died, who have had three physicians to attend them? Example is a mirror, vague and universal, and in all senses. If it be a pleasant medicine, take it, it is always so much present good. I will never stick at the name nor the colour, if it be grateful to the palate: pleasure is one of the chief kinds of profit. I have suffered rheums, gouty defluxions, diarrheas, palpitations of the heart, megrims, and other accidents, to grow old, and die away in me, which I have been rid of when I was half fit to nourish them. They are sooner wrought upon by courtesies than bravado; we must patiently suffer the laws of our condition; we are born to grow old, to grow weak, and to be sick in despite of all medicine. It is the first lesson the Mexicans teach their children; so soon as ever they come out of their mother's wombs, they thus salute them, "Thou art come into the world, child, to endure; endure therefore, suffer, and be silent." It is injustice to lament that that is fallen out to any one, which may befall every one. *Indignare si quid in te inique, propriè constitutum est*.\* "Then be angry, when there is any thing unjustly decreed against thee alone."

See an old man who begs of God that he will maintain his health vigorous and entire, that is to say, that he will restore him to youth: What cannot he avoided

\* Senec. epist. 91.

must be en-  
dured with  
patience.

*Stulte, quid hæc frustra votis puerilibus optas ?\**

In vain, thou fool, are all thy childish pray'rs.

Is it not folly ? his condition is not capable of it. The gout, the stone, and indigestion, are symptoms of long years, as heat, rains, and winds are of long voyages. Plato† does not believe that Æsculapius troubled himself to provide by a regimen for prolonging life in a weak and wasted body, useless to his country, and to his profession, and to beget healthful and robust children ; and he does not think this solicitude suitable to the divine justice and prudence, which is to direct all things to utility. My good friend, your business is done, nobody can restore you, they can at the most but patch you up, and prop you a little, and prolong your misery an hour or two :

*Non secus instantem cupiens fulcire ruinam,  
Diversis contra nititur obicibus,  
Donec certa dies, omni compage soluta,  
Ipsam cum rebus subruat auxilium. ‡*

Like one who, willing to defer a while  
A sudden ruin, props the tott'ring pile,  
Till in short space the house, the props, and all  
Together with a dreadful ruin fall.

We must learn to suffer what we cannot avoid. Our life, like the harmony of the world, is composed of contrary things, also of several notes, sweet and harsh, sharp and flat, sprightly and solemn ; and the musician who would only affect one of these, what would he be able to say ? He must know how to make use of them all, and to mix them ; and we likewise the goods and evils which are congenial with our life : our being cannot subsist without this mixture, and the one tribe is no less necessary to it than the other. To attempt to kick against natural

\* Ovid. Trist. lib. iii. eleg. 8, ver. 11.

† De Republica, lib. iii. p. 623.

‡ Gallus, eleg. 1, ver. 173, &c.

necessity, is to represent the folly of Ctesiphon, who undertook to kick with his mule.

I consult little about the alterations I feel; for those people take advantage when they have you at their mercy. They cudgel your ears with their prognostics; and having formerly surprised me, weakened with sickness, injuriously handled me with their doctrines and magisterial taunts; one while menacing me with great pains, and another with approaching death; by which threats I was indeed moved and shaken, but not dejected, nor jostled from my place? and though my judgment was neither altered nor distracted, yet it was at least embarrassed by it. It is always agitation and struggle.

Now I use my imagination as gently as I can, and would discharge it of all trouble and contest, if I could. A man must assist, flatter, and deceive it, if he can. My mind is fit for that office. It wants no appearances throughout. And could it persuade, as it preaches, it would successfully relieve me. Will you have an example? It tells me that it is for my good to have the stone: that structures of my age are naturally to suffer some ruin: that it is now time they should begin to disjoint, and to confess a decay; it is a common necessity, and there was no new miracle to be wrought for me: I thereby pay what is due to old age, and I cannot expect a better account of it: that society ought to comfort me, being fallen into the most common infirmity of men of my age.\* I see every where men tormented with the same disease: and am honoured by their fellowship, as men of the best quality are most frequently afflicted with it; it is a noble and dignified disease. That of such as are afflicted with it, few have it to a less degree of pain, and yet they are put to the trouble of a wretched regimen, and the daily taking of nauseous drugs; whereas I owe my better state purely to my good fortune. For some

Why Montaigne avoided to consult physicians.

He loved to flatter his imagination in his illness.

The stone ordinary in old men, especially men of quality.

\* Dulce est miscriis socios habuisse doloris.

ordinary broths of eringos, and burst-wort, that I have twice or thrice taken to oblige the ladies, who, with greater kindness than my pain, would needs present me half of theirs, seemed to me equally easy to take, and fruitless in operation. They have a thousand vows to make to Æsculapius, and as many crowns to pay to their physician, for the voiding gravel easily and plentifully, which I often do by the benefit of nature. Even the decency of my countenance is not disturbed by it in company; and I can hold my water ten hours, and as long as any man that is in perfect health. The fear of this disease, says one, did formerly affright thee, when it was unknown to thee; the crying and roaring of those that make it worse by their impatience, begot a horror in thee: it is an infirmity that punishes the members by which thou hast most offended: thou art a conscientious fellow:

*Quæ venit indignè pœna, dolenda venit.\**

To guiltless sufferers our regret is due.

Consider this chastisement, it is very easy in comparison of that of others, and inflicted with a paternal tenderness: do but observe how late it comes; it only seizes and incommodes that stage of thy life; which is upon the matter steril, and lost; having, as it were by composition, given way to the licentiousness and pleasures of thy youth. The fear and the compassion that people have of this disease, serves thee for matter of pride. A quality whereof, if thou hast thy judgment purified, and thy reason be right and sound, thy friends will yet, notwithstanding, discover some tincture in thy complexion. It is a pleasure to hear it said of a man's self, "Here is great fortitude, here is great patience!" Thou art seen to sweat with the excessive pain, to look pale and red, to tremble, to vomit blood, to suffer strange contractions and convulsions, by starts to let tears drop from thine eyes, to make thick, black, and dreadful

\* Ovid. epist. 5, ver. 8.

urine, or have it suppressed by some sharp and jagged stone, that cruelly pricks and tears the neck of the bladder, whilst thou entertainest the company with thy usual countenance, drolling by fits with thy servants, making one in a continued discourse, now and then excusing thy pain, and making thy sufferance less than it is. Does it put thee in mind of the men of past times, who so greedily sought diseases to keep their virtue in breath and exercise? Put the case that nature inclines and forces thee to that glorious school, into which thou wouldst never have entered, of thy own free will. If thou tellest me, that it is a dangerous and mortal disease; what diseases are not? For it is a physical cheat to except any, and to say, that they do not tend directly to death: what matter is it, if they steer that way by accident, and if they slide and wheel gently into the path that leads to it? But thou dost not die because thou art sick, thou diest because thou art living. Death actually kills thee without the help of sickness: and to some, sickness has deferred death, who have lived the longer by reason that they thought themselves always dying. To which may be added, that, as of wounds so of diseases, some are medicinal and wholesome. The colic is oft no less long-lived than you. We know men with whom it has continued from their infancy, even to extreme old age, and if they had not parted company, it would have attended them longer still; you oftner kill it than it kills you: and though it present you the image of approaching death, were it not a good office to a man of such an age, to put him in mind of his latter end? What is worse, thou hast no longer any thing that should make thee desire to be cured. Common necessity will however presently call thee away. Do but consider how artfully and gently she puts thee out of conceit with life, and weans thee from the world; not compelling thee with a tyrannical subjection, as by many other infirmities which you see old men afflicted with, that hold them in continual torment, and keep them



in perpetual and incessant pains and infirmities ; but by warnings and instructions at several intervals, intermixing long pauses of repose, as it were to give thee scope to meditate and ruminate upon thy lesson at thy leisure ; in order to enable thee to judge aright, and to assume the resolution of a man of courage, she presents to thee the entire state of thy condition, both in good and evil, and with a very cheerful, and an insupportable life, alternately in one and the same day. If thou embracest not death, at least thou shakest hands with it once a month ; by which thou hast more cause to hope that it will one day surprise thee without warning ; and that, being so oft conducted to the waterside, and thinking thyself to be still upon the accustomed terms, thou and thy confidence will at one time or another be unexpectedly wafted over.\* A man has no reason to complain of diseases that fairly divide the time with health. I am obliged to fortune for having so often assaulted me with the same sort of weapons ; she forms and fashions me by usage, and hardens and habituates me so to her attacks that I can know within a little, for how much I shall be quit. For want of natural memory, I make one of paper : and as any new symptom happens in my disease, I write it down ; from whence it falls out, that being now almost past through all sorts of examples, if any astonishment threaten me, tumbling over these little loose notes, like the Sibyls' leaves, I never fail of finding matter of consolation from some favourable prognostic in my past experience. Custom also makes me hope better for the time to come, For the conduct of this evacuation having so long continued, it is to be believed that nature will not alter her course, and that no other worse accident will happen than what I already feel. Besides, the con-

\* This seems to be an allusion to what was fabled by the ancient Greeks and Romans, that the dead were transported over the river Styx in Charon's ferry-boat ; a fancy with which we still adorn our poetry, and sometimes adopt in prose too in our familiar conversation.

dition of this disease is not unsuitable to my forward and hasty complexion. When it assaults me gently, I am afraid, for it is then for a great while; but it has naturally brisk and vigorous excesses. It claws me to purpose for a day or two. My reins held out an age without alteration, and I have almost now lived another since they changed their state. Evils have their periods as well as benefit; perhaps this infirmity draws towards an end. Age weakens the heat of my stomach, the digestion of which being less perfect, it sends this crude matter to my reins; and why at a certain revolution may not the heat of my reins be also abated, so that they can no longer petrify my phlegm, and nature pave the way for some other manner of purgation. Years have evidently helped me to drain certain rheums; and why not those excrements which furnish matter for gravel? but is there any thing sweet in comparison of this sudden change, when from an excessive pain, I come, by the voiding of a stone, to recover, as from a flash of lightning, the beautiful light of health, so free and full as it happens in our sudden and sharpest fits of the colic: is there any thing in the pain suffered, that can compare to the pleasure of so sudden an amendment? Oh! how much more pleasant does health seem to me after sickness so near and contiguous to each other, as that I can distinguish them in the presence of one another in their best state, when they vie with one another, as it were, which shall have the mastery! What the Stoics say, that vices are profitably introduced, to give value and support to virtue; we can with better reason, and less hazard of censure, say of nature, that she has given us pain for the honour and service of pleasure and indolence. When Socrates, after his fetters were knocked off, felt the pleasure of that itching which the weight of them had caused in his legs, he rejoiced to consider the strict alliance between pain and pleasure, how they are linked together by a necessary connection, so that by turns

Health  
more pleasant  
after  
sickness.

they follow and mutually beget one another; and cried out to Æsop, that he ought from this consideration, to have taken a subject proper for a fine fable.

The advantage of the stone above all other distempers.

The worst that I see in other diseases is, that they are not so grievous in their operation, as they are in their issue. A man is a whole year in recovering, and all the while full of weaknes and fear. So dangerous and gradual is the recovery of health, that there is no end of it. Before you are allowed to throw off a handkerchief, and then a cap, before they allow you to take the air, to drink wine, lie with your wife, and eat melons, it is odd if you relapse not into some new distemper. The stone has this privilege, that it carries itself clean off, whereas others always leave behind them some impression and alteration, which renders the body subject to some new disease, and lend a hand to one another.

It produces some consequences that are of service.

Those are excusable, that content themselves with possession of us, without extending it farther, and introducing their consequences: but courteous and kind are such whose departure brings us any profitable issue. Since I have been troubled with the stone, I find myself freed from all other accidents, much more methinks than I was before, and have never had any fever since. I argue, that the extreme and frequent vomitings that I am subject to, purge me: and on the other side, my loathings, and the strange fasts I am forced to keep, digest my present humours: and nature, in those stones, voids whatever there is in me that is superfluous and hurtful. Let it never be said that this is a medicine too dear bought. For to what purpose are so many stinking apozemes, caustics, incisions, sweats, setons, diets, and so many other methods of cure, which oft, by reason we are not able to undergo their violence and importunity, bring us to our graves? So that when I am seized with the stone, I look upon it as physic; when freed from it, I think it an entire deliverance.

There is likewise another particular benefit of my disease ; which is, that it most plays its game by itself, and lets me play mine, or else I only want courage to do it ? for in its greatest fury, I have endured it ten hours together on horseback ; do but have patience, you need no other regimen ; play, dine, run, do this and the other thing too if you can ; your debauch will do you more good than harm. Say as much to one that has the pox, the gout, or a rupture ; the other diseases have more universal obligations, rack our actions after another manner, disturb our whole system, and to their consideration engage the whole state of life. This only pinches the skin, it leaves the understanding and will wholly at your disposal, as also the tongue, hands, and feet. It rather awakes than stupifies you. The mind is struck with the burning heat of a fever, overwhelmed with an epilepsy, distracted by a sharp megrim, and finally astonished by all diseases that hurt the whole mass, and the most noble parts : this never attacks the soul. If any thing goes amiss with her, it is her own fault, she betrays, dismounts, and abandons herself. There are none but fools who suffer themselves to be persuaded, that this hard and massy body, which is baked in our kidneys, is to be dissolved by draughts : wherefore, when it is once stirred, there is nothing to be done but to give it passage, and indeed it will force it of itself.

I likewise observe this particular convenience in it, that it is a disease wherein we have little to guess at. We are free from the trouble into which other diseases throw us, by the uncertainty of their causes, conditions, and progress. A trouble that is infinitely painful. We have no need of consultation and doctoral interpretations ; the senses well enough inform us what it is, and where it is. By such like arguments, both weak and strong, as Cicero did the disease of his old age, I try to lull, and amuse my imagination, and to soothe its wounds. If I find them worse to-morrow, I will provide new strata-

gems. True it is, I am come to that pass of late, that the least motion forces pure blood out of my kidneys: and what of that? I stir nevertheless as before, ride after my hounds with a juvenile ardour, and find that I have very good satisfaction for an accident of that importance, when it costs me no more but a stupor and alteration in that part. It is some great stone that wastes and consumes the substance of my kidneys, and of my life, which by little and little evaporates, not without some natural pleasure, as an excrement henceforward superfluous and troublesome. Now, if I feel any thing to roll, do not expect that I should trouble myself to consult my pulse or my urine, thereby to put myself upon some uneasy forethought; I shall soon enough feel the pain, without making it longer by the disease of fear. He who fears to suffer, already suffers what he fears. To which may be added, that the doubts and ignorance of those who take upon them to explain the springs of nature, with her internal progressions and the many false prognostics of their art, ought to give us to understand, that her ways are utterly unknown.

The guessing at diseases by urine very uncertain.

There is great uncertainty, variety, and obscurity, in what she either promises or threatens; old age excepted, which is an undoubted sign of the approach of death. In all other accidents I see few signs of the futurity, whereon we may ground our divination. I only judge myself by my real sensation, and not by discourse: to what end? since I am resolved to bring nothing to it but expectation and patience. Will you know how much I get by this? Observe those that do otherwise, and who rely upon so many different persuasions and counsels, how oft, and how much they labour under imagination, exclusive of any bodily pain. I have many times pleased myself, being well when I have been safe, and delivered from these dangerous accidents, to communicate them to the physicians, as if they were then beginning to discover themselves in me;

where I underwent the terrible sentences of their dreadful conclusions, being very well at ease; and I was the more obliged to the favour of God, and better satisfied of the vanity of this art.

There is nothing that ought so much to be recommended to youth as activity and vigilance. Our life is nothing but motion: I bestir myself with great difficulty, and am slow in every thing, whether in rising, going to bed, or eating. Seven of the clock in the morning is early for me; and where I govern, I never dine before eleven, nor sup till after six. I have formerly attributed the cause of the fevers, and other diseases I have fallen into, to the heaviness and dullness that long sleeping had brought upon me, and have ever repented my sleeping again in the morning. Plato is more angry at the excess of sleeping than that of drinking: I love to lie hard, and alone, even without my wife, as kings and princes do, but pretty well covered with clothes. They never warm my bed; but since my being grown old, they give me for need warm clothes to lay to my feet and stomach. The great Scipio was branded for a great sleeper; though, in my opinion, for no other reason, but that men were displeased, that he was the only man in whom no other fault was to be found. If I have any thing delicate in my way of living, it is rather in my lying than any thing else; but generally I give way, and accommodate myself as much as any to necessity. Sleeping has taken up a great part of my life, and I yet continue at the age I now am to sleep eight or nine hours at a stretch.

I wean myself to my advantage from this propensity to sloth, and am evidently better for so doing. I find the change a little hard indeed, but in three days it is over, and see but few that live with less sleep, when need requires, and that more constantly exercise themselves, nor to whom journies are less troublesome. My body is capable of long continued, but not of a violent or sudden agitation. I avoid of

Montaigne  
a great  
sleeper.

He corrects that habit in his latter days, and finds the benefit of it.

late all violent exercises, and such as incline me to sweat, my limbs being weary before they are hot. I am used to be upon my legs a whole day together, and am never weary of walking : but from my youth, I never loved to ride upon pavement. On foot I go up to the breech in dirt ; and indeed little fellows as I am, are subject in the streets to be elbowed and justled, for want of presence and stature ; and I have ever loved to rest myself, whether sitting or lying, with my heels as high, or higher than my seat.

The military profession very pleasant and honourable.

There is no profession so pleasant as the military ; a profession both noble in its execution (for valour is the strongest, most superb, and most generous of all virtues), and noble in its cause. There is no utility either more extensive, or more just, than the protection of the peace and grandeur of a man's country. The company of so many noble, young, and active men delights you ; as does the ordinary sight of so many tragic spectacles ; and the freedom of their conversation without art, with a masculine and unceremonious way of living. The variety of a thousand different actions ; the encouraging harmony of martial music, that ravishes your ears and warms your souls ; the honour of this exercise ; nay, even its severity and hardships, which Plato so little accounts, that in his Republic he makes women and children share in them, are delightful to you. You put yourselves voluntarily upon particular exploits and hazards, according as you judge of their lustre and importance, and see, when even life itself is therein excusably employed :

*Pulchrumque mori succurrit in armis.\**

How beautiful it is to die in arms.

To fear the common dangers that concern so great a multitude of men, not to dare to do what so many sorts of souls, and a whole people dare to do, is

\* *Æneid. lib. ii. ver. 317.*

for a heart that is effeminate, and mean beyond all measure. Company encourages even children. If others excel you in knowledge, in gracefulness, in strength, or fortune, you have natural causes to blame for that; but to give place to them in fortitude of mind, you can blame none but yourself. Death is more abject, more languishing, and painful in bed than in battle; and fevers and catarrhs are as painful and mortal as a musket shot: whoever is formed valiantly to bear the accidents of common life, would need no more courage to be a soldier. *Vivere, mi Lucili, militare est* :\* “Life, my Lucilius, is a warfare.”

I do not remember that I ever had the itch; yet scratching is one of nature’s sweetest gratifications, and nearest at hand, but the smart follows too close. I use it most in my ears, which are often apt to itch.

I came into the world with all my senses entire, even to perfection. My stomach is pretty good, as also is my head and my breath: and for the most part, they have continued themselves so in spite of my fevers. I have past the age to which some nations, not without reason, have prescribed so just a term of life, that they would not suffer men to exceed it; and yet I have some intervals, though short and inconstant, so bright, as are little inferior to the health and indolency of my youth: I do not mean vigour and sprightliness, it being not reason that it should follow me beyond its limits:

*Non hoc amplius est liminis, aut aquæ  
Cælestis patiens latus.*†

In life I find it much too late  
To stand all weathers at her gate.

My face and eyes presently discover me. All my alterations begin there, and appear worse than they really are. My friends oft pity me, before I feel the cause in myself; my looking-glass does not fright me, for even in my youth it has befallen me more than once to change my countenance, to put on a

His mind  
not much  
disturbed  
by the ail-  
ments of  
the body.

\* Senec. ep. 96.

† Hor. lib. iii. ode 10, ver. 19.



troubled aspect boding no good, without any great consequence; insomuch, that the physicians, not finding any cause within answerable to that outward alteration; attributed it to the mind, and some secret passion that preyed upon my vitals; but they were deceived. If my body governed itself as well according to my wish, as my mind does, we should move a little more at our ease. My mind was then not only free from trouble, but moreover full of satisfaction and joy, as it commonly is, half by complexion, and half by design:

*Nec vitiant artus ægræ contagia mentis.\**

————— I never yet could find,  
That e'er my body suffer'd by my mind.†

I am of the opinion, that this temperature of my mind, has oft raised my body from its lapses: the latter is often oppressed; and if the former be not brisk and gay, it is at least quiet and at rest. I had a quartan ague four or five months, that made me look wretchedly, while my mind was always, if not calm, yet pleasant; if the pain be without me, the weakness and languor do not much deject me: I have known several corporal faintings, that are shocking so much as to name, which yet I would less fear than a thousand passions and agitations of mind that I frequently see. I resolve no more to run, it is enough that I crawl along; nor do I complain of the natural decay that I feel in myself,

*Quis tumidum guttur miratur in Alpibus? †*

Who wonders to see a swell'd neck in the Alps?

nor regret that my duration shall not be as long and entire as that of an oak.

Nor disordered by  
the impres-

I have no reason to complain of my imagination, for I have had few thoughts in my life which have

\* Ovid. Trist. lib. iii. eleg. 8, ver. 24.

† Montaigne here interprets Ovid's words in a sense opposite to what they carry in that poet; for what he plainly meant to say is, that his mind was not a sufferer by any indisposition of the body.

‡ Juven. sat. 13, ver. 162.

so much as broke my sleep, except those of desire, which have awaked without afflicting me : I dream but seldom, and then of chimeras and fantastical things, commonly produced from pleasant thoughts, rather ridiculous than sad ; and believe it to be true, that dreams are the true interpreters of our inclinations ; but there is art required to sort and understand them :

*Rex, quæ in vitâ usurpant homines, cogitant, curant, vident,\* quæque aiunt vigilantes, agitantque, ea si cui in somno accidunt, minus mirum est.†*

“ It is no wonder, O king, if what men are accustomed to think, care for, see, and say, when waking, should also run in their heads when they are asleep.”

Plato moreover says, that it is the office of prudence to draw instructions of divination of future things from dreams. I see nothing in it, except the wonderful experiments related of them by Socrates, Xenophon, and Aristotle, all men of irreproachable authority.‡ Historians say, that the people of Atlantis never dream, and that they also never eat any thing that had life. I add, forasmuch as it is perhaps the reason why they never dream ; for Pythagoras ordered a certain preparation of diet, to beget proper dreams : mine are very gentle, without any agitation of body, or expression of voice. I have seen several of my time wonderfully disturbed by them ; Theon, the philosopher, walked in his sleep ; as also did Pericles his servant, and that upon the very tiles and tops of the house.§

\* This is taken from a tragedy of Accius, entitled Brutus, where a soothsayer addresses Tarquin the superbi, one of the chief dramatic personæ.

† Cic. de Div. lib. i. cap. 22.

‡ Herodotus, lib. iv. p. 322.

§ I knew a learned gentleman who affirmed, that the stories of sleep-walkers were true. In Mr. Menage's notes upon this place (in Diogenes Laertius, in the Life of Pyrrho, lib. ix. sect. 82), we find a passage of Galen, where this learned physician tells us, that having heard of persons walking in their sleep, he did not believe a

He was not  
dainty in  
his diet.

I hardly ever choose my dish at table, but fall to on the next at hand, and unwillingly change it for another. The clutter of plates and services displeases me as much as any other whatever. I am easily satisfied with little fare, and am an enemy to the opinion of Eavorinus, that in a feast you must suffer the meat you like to be snatched, and another plate of another sort to be set before you; and that it is a pitiful supper, if you do not stuff your guests with the rumps of various fowls; and that the beccafico\* only deserves to be eaten entire. I usually eat salt-meats, yet I choose bread that has no salt in it; and my baker never sends up other to my table, contrary to the custom of the country. In my infancy, what they had most to correct in me, was the refusal of things that children commonly best love, as sugar, sweet-meats, and marchpanes. My governor opposed this my aversion to dainty fare as a kind of nicety, and indeed it is nothing else but a difficulty of relishing any thing one tastes. Whoever cures a child of a particular aversion to brown bread, bacon, or garlic, cures him of all kind of delicacy. There are some who pretend to work and live hard, that wish for powdered beef and bacon amongst partridge; they have a good time of it; it is the delicacy of delicacies, it is the taste of an effeminate fortune, that disrelishes ordinary things, *Per quæ luxuria divitiarum tadio ludit.*† To cease to make good cheer with what another does, and to be curious in what a man eats, is the essence of this vice:

word of it, till being obliged once to travel on foot all night long, he was forced to believe it, by his own experience, &c. But according to this principle Galen gives us authority for not believing any thing at all of the matter, till we have experienced it as well as he.

\* A small bird, called a fig-pecker, because it feeds upon figs when they are ripe, especially in Piedmont. It sings like a Nightingale, and lives nine or ten years.

† Seneca, epist. 18.

*Si modica cœnare times olus omne patellâ.\**

If you scorn not a sallad in a mean dish.

There is indeed this difference, that it is better to oblige a man's appetite in things that are most easy to be had, but it is always vice to oblige a man's self. I formerly said a kinsman of mine was nice, who, by being in our gallies, had unlearned the use of beds, and to put off his clothes.

If I had any sons, I would wish them my fortune. The good father that God gave me (who has nothing of me but the acknowledgment of his bounty, though truly it is a very hearty one) sent me from my cradle to be brought up in a poor village of his, and there continued me all the while I was at nurse, and longer, bringing me up to the meanest, and most common way of living : *Magna pars libertatis est bene moratus venter* : † “ A well governed belly is a “ great part of liberty.” Never take upon your-  
Montaigne was brought up from his cradle in the meanest and most common manner of living.  
 selves, and much less give up to your wives, the care of their nurture ; leave the forming them to fortune, under popular and natural laws ; leave it to custom to train them up to frugality and hardships, that they may rather descend from them, than ascend to them. This humour of my father's yet aimed at another end, that is, to make me familiar with those people, and with that rank of men who most need our assistance ; believing that I would be more obliged rather to regard them who extended their arms to me, than those who turned their backs upon me. For this reason also it was, that he provided me sureties at the font, of the meanest fortune, to oblige and bind me to them.

Neither has his design succeeded altogether ill ;  
That mothers ought not to have the education of their children.  
 for, whether it be because there is more honour in such a condescension, or out of natural compassion, which has a very great power over me, I have a kind inclination towards the meaner sort of people. The  
What was the advantage of this education.

\* Hor. lib. i. epist. 5, ver. 2.

† Seneca, epist. 123.

The noble  
humour of  
Chelonis.

faction which I condemn in our civil wars, I shall more sharply condemn when I see them flourish and prosper. It will half reconcile me to them, when I shall see them miserable, and suppressed. How much do I admire the generous humour of Chelonis,\* daughter and wife to the kings of Sparta! Whilst her husband Cleombrotus, in the commotion of her city, had the advantage over Leonidas, her father, she, like a good daughter, stuck close to her father in all his misery and exile in opposition to the conqueror. But so soon as the chance of war turned, she changed her will with the chance of fortune, and bravely turned to her husband's side, whom she accompanied wheresoever his ruin carried him: having, as it appears, no other choice, than to cleave to that side which stood most in need of her, and where she best manifested her compassion. I am naturally more apt to follow the example of Flaminus, who was ready to give his assistance to those that had need of him, than to those who had power to do him good; than the example of Pyrrhus, who was of an humour to stoop to the great, and to domineer over the meanest sort of people.

Montaigne  
did not love  
to sit long  
at table.

Long sittings at table make me uneasy, and do me harm; for whether it be for want of more continency, having accustomed myself to it from a child, I eat all the while I sit. Therefore, that at my own house, though the meals there are of the shortest, I choose to sit down a little while after the rest, as Augustus used to do; but I do not imitate him in rising also before the rest of the company: on the contrary, I love to sit still a long time after, and to hear the guests talk, provided I am none of the talkers; for I tire and hurt myself with speaking upon a full stomach, as much as I find it pleasant and very wholesome to argue, and to strain my voice before meals.

\* The reader will be pleased to turn to what Plutarch relates of this generous princess in the Life of Agis and Cleomenes, chap. 5.

The ancient Greeks and Romans had more reason than we, in setting apart for eating, which is a principal action in life (if not diverted by other extraordinary business), many hours, and the greatest part of the night, eating and drinking more deliberately than we do, who perform all our actions in post-haste; and in extending this natural pleasure to more leisure and better use, intermixing with their meals several pleasant and profitable offices of conversation.

Long meals  
of the an-  
cients.

They, whose business it is to take care of me, may easily hinder me from eating any thing they think will do me harm; for in such things I never covet nor miss any thing I do not see. But if it once comes in my sight, it is in vain to urge me to forbear; so that when I design to fast, I must be parted from those that eat suppers, and must have only so much given me, as is required for a regular collation; for if I sit down to table, I forget my resolution. When I order my cook to alter the manner of dressing any dish of meat, all my family know it means, that my stomach is out of order, and that I shall not touch it.

The absti-  
nence of  
which Mon-  
taigne was  
capable.

I love to have all meats that will endure it undressed, and love them kept till they have contracted a *haut goût*. Nothing but hardness generally offends me (of any other quality I am as patient and indifferent as any man I have known); so that, contrary to the common humour, even in fish, it often happens that I think them both too fresh and too firm: not for want of teeth, which I ever had good, even to excellence, and that which age but now begins to threaten. I have been used to rub them with a napkin every morning, and before and after dinner. God is favourable to those from whom he takes life by degrees; it is the only benefit of old age; the last death will be so much the less visible and painful; it will kill but a quarter of a man, or but half a one at most. I have one tooth lately fallen out without drawing, and without pain: it was the na-

Account of  
his taste,  
with its  
changes and  
revolu-  
tions.

tural term of its duration. Both that part of my being, and several others, are already dead, and others half dead, of those that were most active and in highest esteem during my vigorous years; so that I melt and steal away from myself. What a folly would it be in my understanding to apprehend the height of this fall, already so much advanced, as if it were from the utmost precipice? I hope I shall not. Indeed I receive a principal consolation in the thoughts of my death, that it will be just and natural, and that henceforward I cannot herein either require or hope from destiny any favour that is not lawful. Men make themselves believe that their ancestors were taller and had longer lives. But they deceive themselves; and Solon, who was of those old times, nevertheless limits the longest duration of life to threescore and ten years. I, who have so much and so universally adored the ἀριστον μέτρον: “The golden mean of the ancient times;” and who have concluded the middle measure to be the most perfect, shall I claim to live to an exceeding old age? Whatever happens contrary to the course of nature, may be troublesome; but what comes according to her, must always be pleasant. *Omnia, quæ secundum naturam fiunt, sunt habenda in bonis:*\* “All things that are done according to nature, are to be accounted good.” And so Plato likewise says, that the death which is occasioned by wounds and diseases is violent; but that which old age leads us to is of all others the most easy, and in some sort delightful. *Vitam adolescentibus vis aufert, senibus maturitas:*† “Young men are taken away by force, old men by maturity.” Death mixes and confounds itself throughout with life; decay anticipates its hour, and even increases as we grow up. I have pictures of myself taken at twenty-five, and thirty-five years of age; I compare them with that lately drawn; how often is it no more me, how much more

\* Cic. de Senect. cap. 19.

† Ibid.

is my present image unlike the former, and how unlike to that I shall go out of the world with? It is too great an abuse of nature, to harrass her so that she must be forced to leave us; and to abandon our conduct, our eyes, teeth, legs, and all the rest, to the mercy of a foreign and solicited assistance; and to resign ourselves into the hands of art, when she is weary of following us. I am not very fond either of sallads, or fruits, except melons. My father hated all sorts of sauces, and I love them all. Eating too much is a clog to me; but for the quality of what I eat, I do not yet certainly know that any sort of meat hurts me; neither have I observed that either full-moon or decrease, spring or autumn, alter me. We have in us motions that are inconstant, and for which we cannot account. For example, I found radishes first agreeable, afterwards nauseous, and now again grateful. In several other things likewise I find my stomach and appetite vary after the same manner. I have changed and changed again from white-wine to claret, from claret to white-wine.

I am a great lover of fish, and consequently make my fasts feasts, and my feasts fasts; and believe what some people say, that it is more easy of digestion than flesh. As I make a conscience of eating flesh upon fish days, so does my taste make a scruple of mixing fish and flesh, the difference between them seeming to me to be too great.

From my youth I have used sometimes to slip my meals, either to sharpen my appetite against the next day (for as Epicurus fasted and lived on meagre food to accustom his pleasure to make shift without abundance, I on the contrary do it to prepare my pleasure to make better and more cheerful use of abundance), or else I fasted to preserve my vigour for the service of some action of body or mind; for both the one and the other are cruelly dulled in me by repletion (and above all things, I hate that foolish coupling of so healthful and sprightly a god-

Montaigne  
was fond of  
fish, and  
did not  
love to mix  
it with  
flesh.

Why he  
sometimes  
fasted.



dess with that little undigested belching deity, all over bloated by the fume of his liquor), or to cure my sick stomach, and for want of fit company. For I say, as the same Epicurus did, that a man is not so much to regard what he eats, as with whom; and I commend Chilo,\* for not engaging himself to be at Periander's feast, till he first was informed who were to be the other guests. No dish is so acceptable to me, nor no sauce so alluring, as that which is extracted from society. I think it more wholesome to eat less at a time, and often: but I desire to make the most of appetite and hunger. I would take no pleasure to be stinted in the physical way to three or four pitiful meals a day. Who will assure me, that if I have a good appetite in the morning, I shall have the same at supper? But especially, let us old fellows take the first opportunity of eating, and leave hopes and prognostics to the makers of almanacks. The utmost fruit of my health is pleasure; let us take hold of the first that offers. I avoid constancy in these laws of fasting. Whoever desires that one form shall serve him, let him avoid the continuing of it; we harden ourselves in it; our faculties are laid asleep by it; six months after, you shall find your stomach so used to it, that all your gain will be the loss of your liberty of doing otherwise, but to your prejudice.

Rules  
which he  
observed  
with re-  
gard to his  
clothing.

I never keep my legs and thighs warmer in winter than in summer; one single pair of silk stockings is all: I have suffered myself to keep my head warmer for the relief of my rheums, and my belly upon the account of my colic: my diseases were in a few days habituated to it, and disdained my ordinary provisions. I rose from a single cap to a napkin, and from a napkin cap to a quilted one. The waddings of my doublet serve only for show; they signify nothing, if I do not add a hare's skin or that of a vulture, and wear a cap under my hat. Follow this

\* In Plutarch's Banquet of the Seven Wise Men.

gradation, and you will go a fine length. I am resolved to proceed no farther ; and would leave off those too, if I durst. If you fall into any new inconvenience, all this is labour lost ; you are accustomed to it ; seek out some other way : thus do such ruin themselves, who submit to be fettered, and superstitiously confined to rules. They are for adding something more, and something more after that, so that there is no end of it.

As for our occupations and pleasures, it is much more commodious, as the ancients did, to lose a dinner, and defer making good cheer, till the hour of retirement and repose, without breaking into the day ; and so was I formerly used to do. For health, I since by experience find on the contrary, that it is better to dine, and that the digestion is better performed waking. I am not very apt to be thirsty, either well or sick, my mouth is indeed apt to be dry, but without thirst ; and commonly I never drink but from a desire that is created by eating, and when I have gone a good way in my meal. I drink pretty well for a man of the common sort : in summer, and at a hungry meal, I not only exceed the limits of Augustus, who drank just thrice and no more ; but not to offend Democrates's rule, who forbade that men should stop at four times, as an unlucky number, I proceed when need requires to the fifth glass, in all about three half pints. For the little glasses are my favourites ; and I love to drink them off at once, which other people avoid as indecent. I mix my wine most commonly with half, sometimes one third part, water ; and when I am at home, by an ancient custom that my father's physician prescribed both to him, and to himself, they mix that which is designed for me in the pantry two or three hours before it is brought in. It is said, that Cranaus, king of Athens, was the inventor of this custom of dashing wine with water ; whether profitable or no, I have heard disputed. I think it more decent and wholesome for children to drink no wine

till after sixteen or eighteen years of age. The most usual and common method of living is the most becoming: all particularity is in my opinion to be avoided; and I would as much hate a German that mixed water with his wine, as I would a Frenchman who drank it pure. Common custom gives the law in those things.

His notion  
with re-  
gard to air.

I fear a foggy air, and fly from smoke, as from the plague (the first repairs I fell upon in my own house were the chimnies and privies, a common and insupportable defect in all old buildings), and amongst the hardships of war, reckon the choking dust, with which we are smothered a whole day together. I have a free and easy respiration, and my colds for the most part go off without offence to the lungs, and without a cough.

He could  
bear very  
cold wea-  
ther better  
than hot.

The severe heat of summer is more an enemy to me than the cold of winter; for, besides the inconvenience of heat, not so remediable as cold, and besides the force with which the sun-beams dart upon the head, their glaring light offends my eyes, so that I could not now sit at dinner over-against a great fire.

He had a  
very long  
sight, but  
apt to be  
weakened  
by the exer-  
cise of it.

To dull the whiteness of paper, in those times when I was more used to read, I laid a piece of glass upon my book, and found my eyes much relieved by it. I am to this hour ignorant of the use of spectacles, and can see as far as ever I did, or as any other person. It is true, that in the evening I begin to find a little trouble and weakness in my sight, if I read; an exercise that always strained my eyes, especially by night. Here is one step backwards, and a very sensible one: I shall fall back another, from the second to the third, and so to the fourth, so gently, that I shall be stark blind before I shall be sensible of the age and decay of my sight: so artificially do the fatal sisters untwist the thread of our lives. Yet I doubt that my hearing begins to grow thick, and you will see I shall have half lost it, when I shall lay the fault on the voices of those that speak to me. The soul must be exceedingly intent

to be sensible how it ebbs away. My walking is quick and firm, and I know not which of the two, my mind, or my body, I have most to do to keep in the same state. That preacher is very much my friend, that can oblige my attention a whole sermon through. In places of ceremony, where every one's countenance is so starched, where I have seen the ladies keep even their eyes so fixed, I could never order it so, that some part or other of me did not lash out; so that though I was set, I was never settled; as the philosopher Chrysippus's\* chamber-maid said of her master, that he was only drunk in his legs; for it was his custom to be always kicking them about in what place soever he sat, and she said it at a time when, though the wine made all his companions drunk, he found no alteration in himself at all; the same may also be said of me from my infancy, that I have either folly or quicksilver in my feet, so much restlessness and unsettledness there is in them wherever they are placed.

*Chrysippus  
drunk in his  
legs.*

It is indecent, besides the hurt it doth to one's health, and even to the pleasure of eating, to eat so greedily as I do: I oft bite my tongue, and sometimes my fingers for haste. Diogenes, meeting a boy eating after that manner, gave his tutor a box on the ear. There were men at Rome that taught people to chew, as well as to walk, with a good grace. I thereby lose the opportunity of speaking, which gives so sweet a relish to meals, provided the table-talk be pleasant and short.

*He was too  
greedy in  
his eating.*

There is jealousy and envy amongst our pleasures; they cross and hinder one another. Alcibiades, a man well versed in making good cheer, banished even music from tables, that it might not disturb the pleasure of discourse, for a reason he had from Plato, viz. that it is the custom of vulgar men to call fiddlers and singing-men to feasts, for want of good discourse and pleasant talk, with which men of

*His judg-  
ment con-  
cerning the  
pleasures  
of the ta-  
ble.*

\* Diog. Laert. in the Life of Chrysippus, lib. vii.

understanding know how to regale one another. Varro requires this in great entertainments ; persons of graceful presence, and agreeable conversation, that are neither mute nor rattles ; neatness and delicacy both of place and provisions, and fair weather. A good treat is neither slightly artificial, nor a little voluptuous ; neither the greatest captains, nor the greatest philosophers, have disdained the use and science of eating well. My imagination has delivered three to my memory, which fortune rendered sovereignly sweet to me upon divers occasions, in my most flourishing age. My present state excludes me from more. For every one, according to the good temper of body and mind wherein he then finds himself, furnishes to his own use a particular grace and liking ; I, who but just crawl upon the earth, hate this inhuman wisdom, that will have us despise and hate all the culture of body. I look upon it to be as unjust to hate natural pleasures, as to be too fond of them. Xerxes was such a fool that when environed with all human pleasures, he proposed a reward to him that could find him out a new one ; and he is not less so, who denies himself any of those pleasures that nature has provided for him. A man should neither pursue nor fly, but receive them. I receive them I confess a little too affectionately and kindly, and easily suffer myself to follow my natural inclination. We need not exaggerate their vanity ; they themselves show it, and make us sufficiently sensible of it. Thanks be to our sickly minds that pall our joys, and put us out of taste with them, as with themselves, they entertain both themselves and all they receive, one while better, and another while worse, according to their insatiable, vagabond, and variable essence.

*Sincerum est nisi vas, quodcumque infundis, acescit.\**

All pleasures shun with sorrow in their train,  
For tainted vessels sour what they contain.

\* Hor. lib. i. ep. 2, ver. 34.

I, who boast that I so curiously and particularly embrace the conveniences of life, find, when I nicely consider them, but very little in them more than wind. But what? We are all wind throughout; and, moreover, the wind itself loves to bluster and shift from corner to corner more discreetly than we, and contents itself with its proper offices, without desiring stability and solidity, qualities that do not belong to it.

The pure pleasures, as well as the pure displeasures, <sup>In what rank he placed the pleasures of the imagination and those of the body.</sup> as some, are the greatest; as was expressed by the balance of Critolaus.\* It is no wonder; it makes them to its own liking, and cuts what it pleases out of the whole cloth; of which I every day see notable examples, and perhaps to be desired. But I, who am of a mixed and heavy constitution, cannot snap so soon at this one simple object, but I negligently suffer myself to be blindly carried away with the present pleasures of the general human law. Intellectually sensible, and sensibly intellectual. The Cyrenaic philosophers will have it, that as corporeal pains, so corporeal pleasures are more powerful, both as double, and more just. There are some, as Aristotle says, who out of a savage kind of stupidity pretend to disgust them: and I know others, who out of ambition do the same. Why do they not likewise forswear breathing? Why do they not live of their own, and refuse light because it shines gratis, and costs them neither pains nor invention? Let Mars, Pallas, or Mercury, afford them their light by which to see, instead of Venus, Ceres, and Bacchus. Will they not seek the quadrature of the circle, even in their conjugal embraces? I hate that we should be enjoined to have

\* In my opinion Montaigne here applies this balance to a purpose very different from that which Critolaus applied it to, if we may judge of this balance by what Cicero says of it. Tusc. Quæst. lib. v. cap. 27.

our minds in the clouds when our bodies are at table; I would not have the mind rivetted there, nor that it should be roving; but I am willing it should apply itself to that place, that it should sit, but not lie down there. Aristippus pleaded only for the body, as if we had no soul; Zeno stickled only for the soul, as if we had no body. Both of them were in the wrong. Pythagoras, say they, adhered to a philosophy that was all contemplation; Socrates to one that was all manners and action. Plato found out a medium between both; but they only say so for talk sake; for the true mean is found in Socrates; and Plato is more Socratic than Pythagorean, and it becomes him better. When I dance, I dance; when I sleep, I sleep. Nay, when I walk alone in a beautiful orchard, if my thoughts are some part of the time taken up with foreign occurrences, I call them back again to my walk, or to the orchard, to the sweetness of the solitude, and to myself.

Nature has rendered those actions agreeable which man is under a necessity of performing.

Nature has with a motherly tenderness observed this, that the actions she has enjoined us for our necessity should be also pleasant to us, and invites us to them, not only by reason, but also by appetite: and it is injustice to pervert her laws. When I see both Cæsar and Alexander, in the most weighty concerns of their great business, so fully enjoy human and corporeal pleasures, I do not say that they unbent their minds, but strained them higher; subjecting those violent employments and laborious thoughts by the strength of courage, to the custom of common life. Wise, had they believed that the former was their ordinary, the latter their extraordinary, vocation. We are great fools. He has passed over his life in indolence, say we: I have done nothing to-day. What! have you not lived? It is not only the fundamental, but the most illustrious of your occupations. Had I been put to the management of great affairs, I would have made it seen what I could do. Have you known how to

meditate, and manage your life? You have performed the greatest work of all. For a man to show, and set himself off, nature has no need of fortune; she equally shows herself in all degrees, and behind a curtain, as well as without one. Have you known how to compose your manners? You have done a great deal more than he who has composed books. Have you known how to take repose? You have done more than he who has taken cities and empires.

The glorious master-piece of man is to know how to live to purpose: all other things, viz. to reign, to lay up treasure, and to build, are at the most but little appendices, and small props. I take a delight to see a general of an army at the foot of a breach he intends presently to assault, give himself up entire and free at dinner, to talk and be merry with his friends; and to see Brutus, when heaven and earth conspired against him and the Roman liberty, stealing some hour of the night from his rounds to read and abridge Polybius, void of all fear. It is for little souls, that are crushed under the weight of affairs, not to know how cleverly to disengage themselves, and not to know how to lay them aside, and take them up again:

*O fortes, pejoræque passi,  
Mecum sæpe viri, nunc vino pellite curas.  
Cras ingens iterabimus æquor.\**

Brave spirits, who with me have felt worse sorrow,  
Drink cares away, we'll sail again to-morrow.

Whether it be in jest or earnest, that the theological and Sorbonnical wine, and their feasts, are turned into a proverb, I think it but reason, they should dine so much more commodiously and pleasantly as they have profitably and seriously employed the morning in the exercise of their schools. The con-

\* Hor. lib. i. ode 7, ver. 30.



science of having well spent the other hours is the just and savoury sauce of tables. The sages lived so; and that inimitable emulation for virtue, which astonishes us both in the one and the other Cato, that humour of theirs, severe even to importunity, is thus gently submitted, and made pliant to the laws of the human condition, both of Venus and Bacchus; and, according to the precepts of their sect, that require the perfect wise man should be as expert and intelligent in the use of pleasures, as in all other duties of life. *Cui cor sapiat, ei et sapiat palatus.\**

Relaxation  
and affabi-  
lity speci-  
ally becom-  
ing great  
and gene-  
rous souls.

Relaxation and affability, methinks, wonderfully honour, and best become, a great and generous soul. Epaminondas did not think, that to dance, sing, and be intent upon play with the boys of his city, derogated from the honour of his glorious victories, and the perfect reformation of manners that was in him. And amongst so many admirable actions of Scipio, the grandfather, a person worthy the opinion of a heavenly extraction, there is nothing that gives him a greater grace than to see him indolently and childishly trifling, in gathering and choosing shells, and playing at quoits upon the sea-shore with Lælius: and, if it was foul weather, amusing and pleasing himself in writing comedies, representing the meanest and most popular actions of mankind: and while his head was full of that wonderful enterprise of Hannibal and Africa, visiting the schools in Sicily, and being present at the philosophical lectures, even so as to attract the blind envy of his enemies at Rome. Nor is there any thing more remarkable in Socrates, than that, old as he was, he found time to learn dancing, and playing upon instruments, and thought it well spent; nevertheless, this very man was seen in extasy standing upon his feet a whole day and a night together in the presence of all the Grecian army, surprised and trans-

\* Cicero de Finibus, Bon. et Mal. lib. ii. cap. 9.

ported with some profound thought. He was the first who, among so many valiant men of the army, ran to the relief of Alcibiades, overpowered by the enemy, screened him with his own body, and disengaged him from the crowd by absolute force of arms. It was he who, in the Delian battle, relieved and saved Xenophon, when dismounted from his horse; and who, amongst all the people of Athens, enraged as he was at so unworthy a spectacle, first presented himself to rescue Theramenes, whom the thirty tyrants were dragging to execution by their guards; and desisted not from his bold enterprise, but at the remonstrance of Theramenes himself, though he was only followed by two more in all. He has been seen, when courted by a beauty, with whom he was deeply in love, yet maintain a severe abstinence in time of need. He has been seen continually to go to the war, and with his bare feet to travel upon the ice; to wear the same garb winter and summer; to surpass all his companions in bearing hardships, and to eat no more at a feast than at his own private dinner. He was known twenty-seven years together to endure hunger, poverty, the untractableness of his children, and the scratches of his wife, with the same countenance; and in the end, calumny, tyranny, imprisonment, fetters, and poison. But was that man invited to drink bumpers by any rule of civility? He was also the man of the army to whom the advantage of it remained. And he never refused to play at cobnut, nor to ride the hobby-horse with the boys, and it became him well; for all actions, says philosophy, equally become, and equally honour, a wise man. We have enough wherewith to do it, and we ought never to be weary of representing the image of this great man in all the patterns and forms of perfection. There are very few examples of life full and pure, and we wrong our instruction to propose to ourselves every day, such as are weak and imperfect, scarce good

for any one service, and such as draw us rather back, and that are rather corrupters than correctors of manners. The people deceive themselves; a man goes much more easily indeed by the ends, where the extremity serves for a bound, a stop, and a guide, than by the middle way, which is large and open, and more according to art than nature; but much less nobly and commendably.

What discovers the greatness of a soul.

Magnanimity consists not so much in mounting and in proceeding forward, as in knowing how to govern and circumscribe itself. It takes every thing for great, that is enough; and demonstrates itself better in moderate than eminent things. There is nothing so handsome and lawful, as well and duly to act the part of the man; nor any science so difficult, as to know how to live; and of all our infirmities, it is the most savage to despise our being.

It ought not to shun natural pleasures, but to taste them with moderation

Whoever has a mind to send his soul abroad, when the body is ill at ease, to preserve it from the contagion, let him do it if he can: but otherwise, on the contrary, let the souls favour and assist the body, and not refuse to participate of its natural pleasures, and with a conjugal complacency; using however, if it be a wise soul, moderation, lest by indiscretion they should be confounded with vexation. Intemperance is the best of pleasure, and temperance is not its scourge, but rather its seasoning. Eudoxus,\* who therein established the sovereign good, and his companions, who set so high a value upon it, tasted it in its most charming sweetness by the means of temperance, which in them was singular and exemplary.†

How we ought to behave with re-

I enjoin my soul to look upon pain and pleasure with an eye equally regulated and stedfast; *Eodem enim vitio est effusio animi in letitia, quo in dolore*

\* As Diog. Laert. affirms in the Life of Eudoxus (lib. viii. sect. 88) on the report of Nicomachus, the son of Aristotle.

† Aristotle positively says that Eudoxus was distinguished by his extraordinary temperance. Moral. ad Nicomachum, lib. x. cap. 2.

*contractio* :\* “ The overflowing of the heart in mirth, is as bad as the contracting of it in sorrow ;” but on the one gaily, and on the other gravely, and as far as it is able, to be as careful to extinguish the one, as to extend the other. The judging rightly of good, brings along with it the judging soundly of evil. Pain has something not to be avoided in its tender beginning, and pleasure has something that may be avoided in its excessive end. Plato couples them together,† and will have it that it should be equally the office of fortitude to fight against pain, and against the immoderate and charming blandishments of pleasure. They are two fountains, from which whoever draws, when and as much as he needs, whether city, man, or beast, is very happy. The first is to be taken physically, and upon necessity more sparingly ; the other for thirst, but not to drunkenness. Pain, pleasure, love, and hatred, are the first things that a child is sensible of ; if when his reason comes they are applied to it, that is virtue.

I have a dictionary to myself : I squander away my time when it is ill and uneasy ; but when it is good, I will not squander it away. I run it over again, and stick to it ; a man must run over the ill, and settle upon the good. This ordinary phrase of pastime, and passing away the time, represents the custom of those wise people, who think they cannot fare better than to let life run on and slide away, to pass it over, to kill it, and, as much as they can, to take no notice of it, and to steal from it, as a thing of a troublesome and contemptible quality. But I know it to be another kind of thing, and find it both valuable and commodious, even in its latest decay, wherein I now enjoy it : and nature has delivered it into our hands, in such and so favourable circumstances, that we need only thank ourselves if it be troublesome to us, or

\* Cic. Tusc. lib. iv. cap. 31.

† In his Dialogue of the Laws, lib. i. p. 636.

slide unprofitable away. *Stulti vita ingrata est, trepida est, tota in futurum fertur* :\* “ The life of a fool is uneasy, timorous, and wholly bent upon futurity.” Nevertheless, I compose myself to lose mine without regret, but yet as a thing that is perishable by its condition, not that it is troublesome or uneasy to me. Neither does it properly well become any to welcome death, excepting such as are fond of life. There is good husbandry in enjoying it. I enjoy it double to what others do ; for the measure of the fruition depends more or less upon our application of it. Now, especially, that I perceive mine to be so short in time, I am inclined to extend it in weight : I will stop the quickness of its flight, † by the suddenness of my grasping it : and by the vigour of using it, make myself amends for the haste in which it runs away. By how much the possession of life is more short, I must take the deeper and the fuller hold of it. Others are sensible of the sweetness of contentment, and of prosperity ; I feel it too, as well as they, but not as it slides and passes by ; for a man ought to study, taste, and ruminate upon it, to render due thanks for it to him that grants it to us. They enjoy the other pleasures as they do that of sleep, without knowing them ; and to the end, that even sleep itself should not so stupidly pass me unnoticed, I have formerly caused myself to be disturbed in it, to the end that I might take a view of it. I ponder with myself upon contentment ; I

\* Seneca, epist. 15.

† This perhaps furnished the hint for the following merry French catch, viz.

Plus inconstant que L'Onde et la Nûage,  
 Le Temps s'enfuit : pourquoi le regretter ?  
 Malgré la pente volage  
 Que l'oblige à nous quitter,  
 En faire l'usage c'est l'arrêter ;  
 Goutons mille douceurs :  
 Et si la vie est un passage,  
 Sur ce passage au moins semons des fleurs.

do not skim over it, but sound it, and bend my reason, now grown perverse and disgusted, to recover it. Do I find myself in any calm situation? Is there any pleasure that tickles me? I do not suffer it to cheat my senses. I associate my soul to it, not to be absorbed in it, but to take delight in it; not to lose itself, but to find itself in it; and I employ it on its part to view itself in this prosperous estate, to weigh, esteem, and amplify its happiness. It computes how much it stands indebted to Almighty God, that its conscience and other intestine passions are at rest, that the body is in its natural disposition, orderly and competently enjoying the delicate and flattering functions, by which he is graciously pleased to recompense the sufferings wherewith his justice in its turn scourges us. How great a benefit is it to man to have his soul so seated, that which way soever she turns her eye, the heaven is calm about her? No desire, no fear or doubt, that troubles its aspect, nor any difficulty past, present, or to come, which his imagination may not pass over, without offence. This consideration derives great lustre from the comparison of different conditions; and therefore it is, that I propose to myself in a thousand faces, those whom fortune, or their own error, torments and carries away; and moreover those who, more like to me, so negligently and carelessly receive their good fortune. They are men who pass away their time indeed, they run over the present, and that which they possess, to give themselves up to hope, and to the shadows and vain images which fancy places before them,

*Morte obitâ quales fama est volitare figuras,  
Aut quæ sopitos deludunt somnia sensus.\**

Such forms they say as dead men's spirits have,  
Or which in dreams our drowsy sense deceive.

\* Æneid. lib. x. ver. 641.

and which hasten and prolong their flight, according as they are pursued. The fruit and aim of their pursuit is to pursue; as Alexander said, that the end of his labour was to labour :

*Nil actum credens cum quid superesset agendum.\**

Thinking nought done, if ought was left to do.

For my part therefore I love life, and cultivate it, such as it has pleased God to bestow upon us; I do not offer to wish it had no necessity of eating and drinking; and I would think my offence as inexcusable, to wish it had been double to what it is. *Sapiens divitiarum naturalium quæsitior acerrimus : †* “ A wise man hunts sharply after natural riches.” Nor that we should support ourselves by putting only a little of that drug into our mouths by which Epimenides took away his appetite, and kept himself alive; nor that a man should stupidly produce children with his fingers or heels, but rather, with reverence I speak it, that he might voluptuously produce them with his fingers and heels; nor that the body should be without desire, and void of delight. These are ungrateful and wicked complaints. I accept kindly and gratefully what nature has done for me, am well pleased with it, and proud of it. A man does wrong to the great and Almighty Giver of all things, to refuse, disannul, or disfigure his gift; he has made every thing well. *Omnia quæ secundum naturam sunt estimatione digna sunt : ‡* “ All things that are according to nature are “ worthy of esteem.”

Of philosophical opinions, I more willingly embrace those that are most solid, that is to say, the most humane, and most our own: my discourses

\* Lucan. lib. ii. ver. 657. The poet speaks here of Cæsar, who was altogether as active and indefatigable as Alexander.

† Seneca, epist. 119.

‡ Cicero de Finib. lib. iii. c. 6. We find the sense here to be the same, though not the very words as quoted by Montaigne.

are suitable to my manners, low and humble ; philosophy brings forth a child to my liking, when it puts itself upon its ergo's, to prove that it is a savage alliance to match divine with earthly, rational with irrational, severe with indulgent, and the honest with dishonest ; that pleasure is a brutish quality, unworthy to be tasted by a wise man ; that the sole pleasure which he extracts from the enjoyment of a fair young wife, is the pleasure of his conscience to perform an action according to order : as to put on his boots for a profitable journey. Oh, that his followers had no more right, nor nerves, nor juice, in getting their wives' maidenheads, than there is in his lectures. \*

This is not what Socrates says, who is both his master and ours. He values, as he ought, bodily pleasure ; but he prefers that of the mind, as having more force, constancy, facility, variety, and dignity. This according to him goes by no means alone, he is not so fantastic, but only it goes first. Temperance in him is the moderatrix, not the adversary, of pleasures. Nature is a gentle guide, but not more gentle, than prudent and just. *Intrandum est in rerum naturam, et penitus quid ea postulet, pervidendum : \** “ A man must search into the nature of “ things, and examine thoroughly what she requires.” I every where search for the print of her foot, but we have confounded it with artificial traces. That sovereign Academic and Peripatetic good, which is to live according to nature, becomes by this means hard to limit and explain ; and that of the Stoics, bordering upon it, which is to consent to nature. Is it not an error to esteem any action less worthy, because they are necessary ? Yet they shall not beat it out of my head, that it is not a suitable marriage of pleasure with necessity, to which, says an ancient, the gods always consent. To what end

Corporeal  
pleasure  
has it  
here, though  
it is i  
ferior to  
the of the  
mind.



do we dismember by divorce, a fabric connected by so mutual and fraternal a correspondence : let us, on the contrary, renew it by mutual offices, let the mind rouse and quicken the dulness of the body, and the body stop and fix the levity of the soul. *Qui velut summum bonum, laudat animæ naturam, et tanquam malum, naturam carnis accusat, profecto et animam carnaliter appetit, et carnem carnaliter fugit, quoniam id vanitate sentit humanâ, non veritate divinâ.* “ He who commends the nature of the soul as the  
 “ supreme good, and accuses the nature of the flesh  
 “ as evil, does certainly both carnally affect the soul,  
 “ and carnally flies the flesh, because he is possessed  
 “ by such belief through human vanity, and not by  
 “ divine truth.” In this present that God has made us, there is nothing unworthy our care ; we are strictly accountable for it. And it is no slight commission to man, to conduct man according to his condition. It is express, simple, and the principal of all ; and the Creator has seriously and severely enjoined it. Authority has alone the power to work upon common understandings, and is of more weight in a foreign language, and therefore let us again charge with it in this place. *Stultitiæ proprium quis non dixerit, ignavè, et contumaciter facere quæ facienda sunt ; et aliud corpus impellere, aliud animum, distrahique inter diversissimos motus ?*† “ Who will  
 “ not say, that it is the property of folly, slothfully  
 “ and contumaciously to perform what is to be  
 “ done, and to bend the body one way, and the  
 “ mind another, so as to be distracted between the  
 “ most different motions ?” Which to make apparent, let any one some day tell you what whimsies and imaginations he puts into his own pate,\* and upon the account of which he diverted his thoughts

\* Aug. de Civitate Dei, lib. xiv. cap. 5, where he has a view properly to the Manichees, who held the flesh and the body to be the production of the evil principle.

† Seneca, epist. 74.

from a good meal, and complained of the time he spends in eating: you will find there is nothing so insipid in all the dishes at your table, as this fine talk of his (for generally we had better sleep than wake to the purpose we do): and that his discourses and notions are not so good as your fricassee. Though they were the raptures of Archimedes himself, what were they worth? I do not here speak of, nor mix with the rabble of us ordinary men, and the vanity of the thoughts and desires that divert us, those venerable souls, elevated by the ardour of devotion and religion, to a constant, and conscientious meditation of divine things, who, by a lively endeavour, and vehement hope, having a foretaste of the eternal nourishment, the final aim, and the last stop of Christian desires, the sole, constant, and incorruptible pleasure, disdain all regard to our beggarly, frothy, and ambiguous conveniences, and easily resign to the body the care and use of sensual and temporal food. It is a privileged study. I have ever amongst us observed supercelestial opinions, and subterranean manners to be of singular accord.

Æsop, that great man, saw his master piss as he walked: "What," said he, "must we dung too as we run?" Let us manage our time as well as we can, there will yet remain a great deal that will be idle, and ill employed. The mind has not other hours enough by its choice, wherein to do its business, without disassociating itself from the body, in that little space it requires for its necessity. They aim to put themselves out of themselves, and to escape from being men. What folly in this! Instead of transforming themselves into angels, they transform themselves into beasts; and instead of elevating themselves they sink. These transcendent humours affright me, like places that are high and inaccessible: and nothing is hard for me to digest in the life of Socrates but his ecstasies and com-

The folly  
of that  
man who  
aspires to  
be above  
what he is.

munication with demons. Nothing is so human in Plato as that for which they say he was called divine. And of our sciences, those seem to be the most terrestrial and low that are highest mounted. I find nothing so humble and mortal in the life of Alexander as his fancies about his immortalisation. Philotas pleasantly jeered him in his answer. He congratulated him by letter upon the oracle of Jupiter Ammon's having placed him amongst the gods; "For thy sake I am glad of it," said he, "but the men are to be pitied," who are to live with a man, and to obey him, who exceeds and is not contented with the measure of a man. *Diis te minorem quod geris, imperas* :\* "Because thou carriest thyself lower than the gods, thou dost command men." The pretty inscription wherewith the Athenians honoured the entry of Pompey into their city is conformable to my sense :

*D'autant es tu dieu, comme  
Tu te recognois homme.†*

So much thou hast of deity  
As thou dost own of man in thee.

It is absolute, and as it were, a divine perfection, for a man to know how to enjoy his being, as he ought. We seek other conditions, by reason we do not understand the use of our own; and go out of ourselves, for want of knowing what we do. It is to much purpose to go upon stilts; for when upon stilts, we must yet walk with our legs; and when seated upon the most elevated throne in the world, we are but seated upon our breach. The fairest lives, in my opinion, are those which regularly accommodate themselves to the common and human model; yet without miracle, and without extravagance: but old age stands a little in need of more tender treat-

\* Hor. lib. iii. ode 6, ver, 5.

† In the Life of Pompey, by Plutarch, chap. 7.

ment. Let us recommend it to God, the protector of health and wisdom ; but yet let it be gay and sociable :

*Frui paratis et valido mihi  
Latœ dones, et precor integrâ  
Cum mente, nec turpem senectam  
Degere, nec cythara carentem.\**

Grant this Apollo, and I ask no more,  
A mind to use my present store  
With health and life, but not so long  
As brings contempt, and cramps my song.

\* Horace, lib. i. ode 31, ver. 17, &c.

END OF MONTAIGNE'S ESSAYS.



## APPENDIX,

Containing Six Letters from Montaigne, which never appeared before in any Edition of his Essays, nor any where else, except in a small Collection, now extremely scarce, which Montaigne published with the Royal Privilege at Paris, A. D. 1571.

### LETTER I.

*An Introduction of Boetia's Translation of Xenophon's Tract, entitled Economy; To Monsieur de Lansac, Knight of the King's Order, a Member of his Privy Council, Superintendant of his Finances, and Captain of the Hundred Gentlemen of his Household.*

SIR,

I SEND you Xenophon's Economy, translated into French by the late Monsieur de la Boetia, a present which I thought very proper for you, not only for its coming in the first place, as you know, from the hand of a person of distinction, a very great man both in war and peace; but for having taken its second form from that person, whom I am certain you both loved and esteemed as long as he lived. This treatise will be a constant inducement to the continuance of your favourable opinion and good-will to his name and memory. And I will be bold to say that you need not fear the making any addition to your regard for him, since, as you took a

liking to him only from the public testimonies of his character, it is incumbent on me to assure you that he had so many degrees of ability beyond common fame, that you are very far from knowing him thoroughly. He did me the honour, which I rank with the greatest blessings of my fortune, to form so strict and close a connection of friendship with me, that unless my sight at any time failed me, there was not a bias, motive, or spring in his soul, which I could not discern and judge of. But without offence to the truth, he was, take him altogether, so wonderful a man, that lest my word should not be taken for any thing if I once transgress the bounds of probability, I am forced in speaking of him to constrain and contract myself short of the extent of what I know of him. And for this time, sir, I shall barely content myself with entreating you, for the honour and veneration which you owe to the truth, to believe and testify that our Guyenne never saw his fellow amongst the gentlemen of his robe. In hopes, therefore, that you render him that which is most justly due to him, and with a view to keep him fresh in your memory, I present you this book, which at the same time will satisfy you on my part, that had not my insufficiency laid me under an express prohibition to do it, I would have been as ready to present you with something of my own, as an acknowledgment of the obligations which I am under to you, and of that favour and friendship which you have for a long time shown to our family. But, sir, for want of better coin I offer you in payment the sincerest tender of my humble service.

Sir, I beg God to protect you, and am

Your obedient servant,

MICHAEL DE MONTAIGNE.

## LETTER II.

*An Introduction of Boetia's Translation of Plutarch's Rules of Marriage. A Monsieur Monsieur de Mesmes, Lord de Roissy et de Mal-assize, a Member of the King's Privy Council.*

SIR,

IT is one of the most remarkable follies which men are guilty of, to exert the whole force of their understanding to give a shock and an overthrow to opinions, that are commonly received, and such too as yield us satisfaction and content. For whereas every thing under heaven employs the means and instruments with which nature has furnished it, for the ornament and conveniency of its being, these men, that they may seem to be of a more gay and sprightly disposition, not capable of admitting and entertaining any thing but what has been a thousand times touched and poised in the nicest balance of reason, shake their minds out of a calm and easy situation for the sake of possessing them, after a long inquiry, with doubt, uneasiness, and fluctuation. It is not without reason that childhood and simplicity have been so much recommended by truth itself. For my part, I had rather be more at my ease, with less ability; more contented, with less understanding. Therefore, sir, though the men of most refined parts laugh at our concern for what may pass in the world after we are departed from it, as if the soul when lodged elsewhere had no longer any feeling for things below, yet I think it is a great comfort, with respect to the frailty and short space of this life, to think that it is capable of being strengthened and prolonged by fame and reputation; and I most heartily give into so pleasant and favourable an opinion, which is innate in us, without a curious inquiry into the how or the wherefore. From hence it is, that as I loved no mortal so well



as M. de la Boetia, the greatest man of this age in my opinion, I would think it a gross failure of my duty if I wittingly suffered a character so fragrant and so worthy of recommendation as his to vanish and slip out of my remembrance, and if I did not upon that score attempt to revive and raise him again to life. I believe that he is sensible of it in some measure, and that these efforts of mine affect and please him. In truth, he still lodges in my breast so entire and so lively that I cannot think him so deeply under ground, nor so totally removed from our correspondence. Now, sir, because every fresh discovery which I make of his person and character is as multiplication of this second life of his, and because his name is ennobled and honoured from the place that receives it, it is incumbent on me not only to cause it to be propagated to the utmost of my power, but also to recommend it to the care of persons of honour and virtue, in the number whereof you have so high a station, that in order to afford you an opportunity of receiving this new guest, and giving him a good welcome, I chose to present you with this small work, not for any service that you may reap from it, being very sure that you have no need of an interpreter, to converse with Plutarch and his companions; but it is possible that Madame de Roissy, when she sees the decorum in her household, and your good harmony represented to the life, will be well pleased to find her natural disposition, not only to have attained to, but even to have surmounted what the wisest philosophers have been able to conceive of the duty and laws of marriage. And in all cases, I shall ever esteem it an honour if it lies in my power, to do any thing that may give you or yours a pleasure; such is my obligation to serve you.

Sir, I pray God to give you a life long and happy,  
 Being

Your humble servant,

MICHAEL DE MONTAIGNE.

Montaigne,  
 April 30, 1570.

## LETTER III.

*Printed before Boetia's Translation of Plutarch's  
Letter of Consolation to his Wife, and inscribed  
by Montaigne,*

To Mademoiselle de Montaigne, my Wife.

YOU know, wife, very well, that, according to the fashion of the fine gentlemen now-a-days, you are not to expect to be still courted and caressed. For they say, that a man of parts may indeed take a woman, but that he is a fool if he marry her. Let them say as they list; for my own part, I keep to the plain fashion of old age, of which I now and then wear the beard. And in truth novelty is so expensive even now to this poor state (and yet I know not whether it may not still rise higher), that in all cases and places I wash my hands of it. Let you and I, wife, live after the old French way. You may remember how that dear brother and inseparable companion of mine, M. de la Boetia, did on his death bed give me his papers and books, which were afterwards my most favourite furniture. I neither desire nor deserve that they should be applied solely to my own use. For this reason, I have resolved to give some of them to my friends. And, because I think I have none more intimate than yourself, I send you his French translation of Plutarch's Letter of Consolation to his Wife, being very sorry, that fortune has rendered this so suitable a present for you, and that though you have had no child but one daughter, after long expectation, when we had been married four years, you were forced to part with her in the second year of her age. But I leave it to Plutarch to console you, and to admonish you of your duty in this case, desiring that you would for my sake give him credit; for he will discover my intentions to you, and what may be urged upon this head, much better than I can. To conclude, wife,

I earnestly recommend myself to your favour, and pray God to preserve you. I am

Your good husband,

Paris,  
Sept. 10, 1570.

MICHAEL DE MONTAIGNE.

## LETTER IV.

*Printed before some Latin Verses of Stephen de la Boetia.*

*To Monseigneur, Monsieur de l'Hospital, Chancellor of France.*

MONSEIGNEUR,

I HAVE a notion that such gentlemen as you, to whom fortune and the reason of things have committed the administration of the public affairs, are not more curious in an inquiry, than how you may attain to the knowledge of the men in your offices; for there is scarce any community so barren, but it has men enough in it for the commodious discharge of all its functions, provided its department and jurisdiction can be justly laid out. And when that point is once gained, there would be nothing remaining to hinder the perfect composition of a state. Now the more desirable this is, the more difficult it is; forasmuch as neither your eyes can see so far as to try and choose in so great and so diffuse a multitude, nor can they penetrate to the bottom of men's hearts to discover their intentions and their consciences, the chief articles to be considered; so that there was never yet any establishment ever so good, in which we have not often observed the mistake of such allotment and election. And in those, where ignorance and malice, dissimulation, bribery, intrigues, and violence carry the point, if any election is made meritoriously, it is undoubtedly to be

ascribed to fortune, which by the inconstancy of its various turns happened this one time to fall into the train of reason. This consideration, sir, has often been my comfort, knowing M. Stephen de la Boetia, one of the most proper and necessary men for the chief offices in France, to have lived all his days unemployed and neglected by his own fire-side, to the great damage of the commonweal; for as to his own part I must tell you, sir, that he so abounded in those possessions and treasures which defy fortune, that never was any man more satisfied or more contented. I know indeed that he was advanced to those dignities of his neighbourhood, which are reckoned great; and I know moreover that never was any man better qualified for them, and that at thirty-two years of age, when he died, he had acquired greater reputation in that class than any of his predecessors. But surely it is unreasonable to let a man who would make a good officer, remain a common soldier, and to employ those in mean offices who would act well in the chief. The truth is, that his abilities were not employed to the best advantage, nor sufficiently exerted; so that over and above his office, he had a surplus of great talents that were idle and unprofitable, which might have been of service to the public affairs, and an honour to himself. But, sir, since he was so backward to push himself into the grande monde, it not being the lot of virtue and ambition to lodge in one breast; and as he lived in times so stupid or so full of envy, that he could not possibly have any assistance from another's testimony of him, I long prodigiously that at least his memory, which alone must now and ever lay claim to the offices of our friendship, may receive the reward of his merit, and that it may have a place in the recommendation of persons of honour and virtue. For this reason, sir, I was desirous of bringing him to light, and presenting him to you by these few Latin verses that he has left behind him. Quite contrary to the mason who exhibits the gayest part of

his edifice towards the street, and to the mercer who makes a show and parade of the richest sample of his goods, the things most to be prized in my friend, the very juice and marrow of his merit, went away with him, and we have nothing left of him but the bark and the leaves. The man who is capable of displaying the well regulated sallies of his imagination, his piety, his virtue, his justice, the vivacity of his temper, the weight and solidity of his judgment, the sublimity of his conceptions, so far exalted above those of the vulgar, his learning, the gracefulness that usually accompanied all his actions, the tender love which he had for his wretched country, and his mortal and avowed aversion to every vice, but especially to that base traffic which is screened under the honourable name of justice, would certainly kindle a singular affection for him in the breast of all good men, mixed with a wonderful regret for the loss of him. But, sir, this is so far out of my power, that he never had a thought of leaving any evidence to posterity of the fruit of his studies, and nothing remains thereof but what he wrote now and then to pass away the time. Be this as it will, I entreat you, sir, to receive him with a good countenance; and as we often judge of the greater by the less, and as the very pastimes of great men give an honourable idea to the clear sighted, of the source from which they spring, I hope you will by this work of his rise to the knowledge of himself, and by consequence love and embrace his name and memory. In so doing, sir, you will but render an equivalent to the very settled opinion which he had of your virtue, and also accomplish what he exceedingly longed for whilst he lived. For there was not a man in the world, in whose acquaintance and friendship he thought himself more happy than in yours. But if any one takes it ill that I make so bold with other people's concerns, I must tell him, that never was any thing more exactly written or delivered in the schools of

the philosophers, concerning the prerogatives and duties of sacred friendship than what was the practice between this personage and me. \* For the rest, sir, this trivial present, like killing two birds with one stone, will serve, if you please, to show you the honour and veneration in which I hold your abilities, and singular inherent qualities; for as to such as are external and fortuitous, it is not my fancy to bring them into the accompt.

Sir, I pray God to grant you very happy long life.

Your obedient humble servant,

Montaigne,  
April 30, 1570.

MICHAEL DE MONTAIGNE.

## LETTER V.

*Or rather an extract of a letter, which Monsieur the Counsellor de Montaigne, wrote to his father Monseigneur de Montaigne, containing some particulars which he observed, of the sickness and death of the late M. de la Boetia.*

AS to his last words, if a good account of them is to be expected from any hand, it is undoubtedly from mine; not only because all the time of his sickness, he was not so fond of conversing with any body as with me, but also because, such was the singular and brotherly love we bore to one another, that I had a most certain knowledge of his designs, opinions, and temper, all his life-time, as much no doubt as it was possible for any one man to know of another, and because I knew them to be sublime, virtuous, determinate, and withal wonderful: I foresaw, that if his distemper would give him strength to express himself, nothing would come from his lips but what was great and very worthy of imitation; therefore

I gave the utmost attention to it. It is true, Monseigneur, that as my memory is very short, and moreover bewildered by the trouble of my mind for so heavy and important a loss, it is impossible but I may have forgot many things which I could wish were known; but as for those which I recollect, I will send you ~~them~~ with the strictest regard to truth that is possible. For in order to represent him thus cruelly stopped in his worthy progress; to show you his invincible courage in a body broke down and demolished by the furious efforts of pain and death, would, I confess, require a much better style than mine, because, though when he talked of grave and important subjects he mentioned them in such a manner that it was difficult to write them down so well, yet it seemed at this time as if there was an emulation between his thoughts and his words which should do him the last service. For sure I am that I never observed him to have so many and such fine imaginations, and those uttered with so much eloquence, as his were all the time of his illness. Presuming, Monseigneur, that you would not mislike it, I have chose to bring into my narrative his most trivial and common topics, which having been delivered by him at that time, and in the height of so great an affliction, are a singular evidence of a mind quite at ease, tranquil, and secure. On Monday the 9th of August, 1563, after I was come home from the Palais, I sent to invite him to dine with me. He returned me for answer, with thanks, that he was a little out of order, and that I should do him a pleasure if I would but spend an hour with him before he set out for Medor. Soon after I had dined I waited on him. He was lain down on the bed with his clothes on, and I found his countenance strangely altered. He told me that he had a looseness on him, attended with the gripes, ever since the day before when he played with M. d'Escars, and wore only a doublet under a silk garment; and that often when he caught a cold it was attended

with such fits. I thought it proper that he should undertake the journey he had intended, but advised him to go no farther that evening than to Germignan, which is but two leagues out of town. I did this the rather, because the place where he lay was close to some houses that were infected with the plague, of which he was somewhat afraid, since he returned from Perigord and the Agenois, where it raged in all parts; besides I had formerly myself found benefit in such a distemper as his was, by riding on horseback. Accordingly he set out, accompanied by his wife and his uncle M. de Bouillonas.

Early the next morning, behold, one of his domestics came to me from Mademoiselle de la Boetia, to acquaint me that he had been seized that night with a violent dysentery; she sent for a doctor and an apothecary, and desired me to come to him, which after dinner I did.

He was overjoyed to see me, and when I was taking my leave of him in order to return home, with a promise to visit him again next day, he desired me, with more affection and importunity than ever he had begged any thing in his life, to be with him as much as possible; this touched me a little to the quick. Yet I was actually going away when Mademoiselle de la Boetia, who had already a foreboding of I know not what calamity, entreated me, with tears in her eyes, that I would not stir from him that night. Accordingly she prevailed on me to stay, at which he was very much cheered. Next day I returned home, and on Thursday I went to see him again. His distemper was worse, and his flux of blood, with the gripings, which weakened him very much, increased every hour.

On the Friday I saw him again, and on Saturday I found him very low-spirited; he then told me that his distemper was of the contagious kind, and moreover, that it was disagreeable and choleric; that he very well knew my temper, and desired me to visit him but now and then, yet as often as I could. Af-



ter this I did not leave him. Till the following Sunday he had said nothing to me of what he thought of his being, and we discoursed only about the particular circumstances of his malady, and what the ancient physicians said of it. We had very little talk about public affairs, which I found, from the very first day, he had an aversion to. But on the Sunday he fainted away : and as he came to himself, he said that all things appeared to him in a confusion, and that he had seen nothing but a thick cloud and an obscure mist, in which every thing was confounded and disordered ; but that nevertheless all this fit had given him no displeasure. Death, said I then to him, has nothing worse than this : nay, nothing, replied he, so bad.

Having had no manner of sleep since the first attack of his distemper, and growing still worse, notwithstanding all remedies, so that certain draughts were now taken by him which are never ordered but in cases of the last extremity, he began from this time to despair altogether of his recovery, and communicated his thoughts to me. That same day, because he was in good temper, I said to him, that considering the extraordinary affection which I bore to him, it would ill become me if I did not take care, that as all his actions in health had been very prudent and well weighed, he should continue to act with the same prudence in his sickness ; and that if it were God's will that he should be worse, I should be very sorry that for want of advice he should leave any of his domestic affairs unsettled, not only by reason of the damage which his relations might suffer by it, but for the sake of his reputation ; which piece of advice he took very kindly at my hands ; and after having solved some difficulties which kept him in suspense, he desired me to call his uncle and his wife singly to him, that he might give them to understand, what he had resolved on as to his will. I told him that would cast them down. No, no, said he, I will comfort them, and

give them much better hopes of my recovery than I entertain myself. And then he asked me whether the fainting-fits which he had, did not a little surprise us. That is of no moment, said I to him, these are fits which are common to such distempers. True, brother, replied he, it is of no significance, though what you are most afraid of should be the consequence. To you alone, said I, it would be a happy turn, but the hurt would be to me, who should thereby lose the company of so great, so wise, and sure a friend, whose equal I am certain I should never find. It is very possible, he added, that you never may; and I assure you, that what makes me somewhat solicitous for my recovery, and not to hasten to that passage to which I am gone already half way, is the consideration of the loss you will sustain, as well as that poor man and poor woman there (alluding to his uncle and his wife) whom I love entirely, and who, I am sure, will have much difficulty to bear the loss of me; which indeed will be a very great one, both to them and you. I am also concerned for the regret it will be received with by many people, who have hitherto had a love and value for me, and whose conversation verily, if I could help it, I own I should be glad not to lose as yet. And if I go off the stage of this world, I entreat you, brother, as you know them, to give them a testimony of the friendship I retain for them, to the last breath of my life: and moreover, brother, I was not born perhaps to so little purpose, but I have had it in my power to serve the common cause. But be this as it will, I am ready to depart when it shall please God, being very sure that I shall enjoy the ease you have foretold to me. And as to you, my friend, I know you to be so wise, how much soever it affects you, that you will nevertheless conform patiently and willingly to whatever it shall please his divine Majesty to order concerning me; and I beseech you to take care that the mourning for my departure may not drive that good man and

good woman out of the pale of their reason. He then asked me how they behaved already: I told him very well, considering the importance of the case. I suppose so, said he, now that they have still some hopes; but should I once deprive them of any hopes, you will be much perplexed to keep them in temper. In pursuance of this regard for them, he always concealed from them the certain persuasion he had of his death, as long as he lived, and earnestly begged me to behave in the same manner. When he saw them near him, he affected to look brisk and gay, and fed them with flattering hopes.

I now left him to go and call them. They composed their countenances the best they could for a while; and after we were seated round his bed, we four being all alone, he spoke as follows with a settled countenance, as it were quite gay: "My uncle  
"and my wife, I assure you upon my credit, that  
"no fresh attack of my distemper, or misapprehension that I have of my recovery, has put it into my  
"head to call you, in order to apprise you of my  
"intention; for, God be praised, I am very well, and full of hopes; but having long been convinced, both by experience and study, of the little security that is to be placed in the instability and inconstancy of human affairs, and even of the uncertainty of that life whereof we are so fond, which is nevertheless but smoke and a mere nothing; and considering also, that because I am sick, I am so much the nearer advanced to the  
"danger of death, I am resolved to put my domestic affairs in order before I die, after having first  
"taken your advice." And then addressing his discourse to his uncle: "My good uncle," said he, "were I at this hour to give you an account of the  
"great obligations I have to you, I should not  
"know where to end. It is enough for me that hitherto, wheresoever I have been, and with whom  
"soever I have talked, I have always said that  
"whatever a wise, good, and most bountiful father

“ could do for his son, all this have you done for  
“ me ; both for the care that was necessary to give  
“ me good learning, and when you were pleased to  
“ push me into public employments ; so that the  
“ whole course of my life has been full of great  
“ and praise-worthy offices of your friendship to-  
“ wards me : in short, whatever I have, I hold  
“ from you, and acknowledge that I am obliged for  
“ to you, who have been to me a father indeed ; so  
“ that as the son of the family, I have no power to  
“ dispose of any thing, unless you are pleased to  
“ give me leave.” He then was silent, and staid  
till sighs and sobs gave his uncle leisure to answer  
him, that whatever he thought fit would be always  
very acceptable to him. Having purposed at the  
same time to make him his heir, he desired him to  
accept of his estate.

And then turning his discourse to his wife, “ My  
“ likeness,” said he (for so he often called her on  
account of some ancient relation between them),  
“ as I have been joined to you by the sacred tie of  
“ marriage, which is one of the most respectable and  
“ inviolable obligations which God has laid upon us  
“ here below for keeping up human society, I have  
“ loved, cherished, and esteemed you as far as I  
“ was able ; and am fully assured that you have re-  
“ turned me a reciprocal affection, which I cannot  
“ sufficiently acknowledge. I desire you to take  
“ that share of my goods which I give you, and  
“ to content yourself therewith, though I know  
“ indeed that it is very little, compared with your  
deserts.”

After this, addressing himself to me, “ My bro-  
“ ther,” said he, “ whom I love so dearly, and  
“ whom I have chosen out of such a multitude, in  
“ order to renew that virtuous and sincere friend-  
“ ship with you, the exercise of which has by the  
“ vices of the age been so long unknown to us, that  
“ there are only some old traces left of it in the me-  
“ mory of antiquity, I beseech you as a token of  
“ my affection for you, to accept of the gift of my

“ library and books ; a present very small, but given  
 “ with a good heart, and which is the fitter for you  
 “ considering you are a lover of learning. This will  
 “ serve you as a *μνημόσυλον*, or a remembrancer of  
 “ your companion.”

Then addressing himself to all three of us in general, he blessed God that in a case of such extremity he was accompanied by all those that were the dearest to him in the world, and said, he thought it a very goodly sight to see four persons assembled together so well agreed, and united in friendship, not doubting, he said, that we all loved one another unanimously, each one for the sake of the others. And after having recommended us to one another, he proceeded thus : “ Having now settled my temporal  
 “ affairs, I must also think of my spirituals. I am  
 “ a Christian, I am a Catholic ; such I have lived,  
 “ and such I am determined to die. Send for a  
 “ priest to come to me, for I am not willing to be  
 “ deficient in this last duty of a Christian.”

With this particular he ended his discourse, which he had carried on with such a steady countenance, such a strength of language and voice, that whereas, when I entered his chamber, I found him weak, mighty slow in the utterance of his words, his pulse very low, as if he had a lingering fever, and tending to death, his countenance quite pale and wan ; he seemed now, as if it had been by a miracle, to have resumed fresh vigour, with a more ruddy complexion and a stronger pulse, so that I made him feel mine in order to compare them together. At that instant my heart was so sunk that I could scarce answer him a word. But two or three hours after, in order to keep up his noble courage, and also because I wished, from the tender concern I had all my life long for his honour and glory, that there were more witnesses of so many strong proofs of his magnanimity, by having a larger company in his chamber, I said to him, that I blushed for shame to think that my courage failed me in the hearing of what he, who was so great a sufferer, had the courage to tell me ; that

hitherto I had thought, that God scarce ever gave us so great an advantage over human incidents, and could hardly believe what I had read of it in some histories ; but that having now seen such a proof of it, I praised God that I had found it in a person, by whom I was so much beloved, and who was to me so dear, and that this would serve me as an example to act the same part in my turn.

He interrupted me by desiring I would behave so, and demonstrate by the effect, that the conversation we had had in the time of our health was not only oral, but deeply engraved on our hearts, and ready to be put in execution upon the first occasion that offered ; adding, that this was the true practice of our studies, and of philosophy. Then taking me by the hand, " My brother, my friend," said he, " I assure thee I have done many things, I think, in my life, with as much pain and difficulty as I do this: And when all is said and done, it is a long while ago since I was prepared for it, and that I had got all my lesson by heart. But is it not enough to have lived to my age? I was just entering into my thirty-third year. By God's grace all my days hitherto have been healthy and happy; but through the inconstancy of human affairs they could not continue so longer. It was now time to launch into serious affairs, and to expect to meet with a thousand unpleasant scenes, as particularly the inconveniences of old age, of which I am by this means quit: and, besides, it is probable that I have lived to this hour with more innocence and less ill-nature than I should have done, if God had permitted me to live till my head had been filled with the care of getting wealth and ease. As for my part, I am certain that I am going to God, and the seat of the blessed." But now, because my countenance betrayed some uneasiness at these words of his, " What, brother," said he, " would you possess me with fear? if I had any terror

“ upon me, whose business should it be to take it off, but yours ?”

The notary, who was sent for to receive his last will and testament, coming in the evening, I made him commit it to writing, and then went to ask him whether he was not willing to sign it: “ Not sign it?” said he, “ I will sign it with my own hand. But I wish, brother, that they had given me more time, for I find myself extremely weary, and so weak that I am in a manner spent.” I was going to change the discourse, but he recovered himself on a sudden, and said to me, that he had not very long to live, and he desired of me to know whether the notary wrote a swift hand, for he should scarce make any pause in dictating. I called the notary to him, and he dictated his will to him on the spot, so fast that he had much ado to keep pace with him. When he had made an end, he desired me to read it to him, and said to me: “ See, what it is to take care of that fine thing, our riches.” *Sunt hæc quæ hominibus vocantur bona*: “ These are the things that men call good.” After the will was signed, his chamber being full of people, he asked me if talking would do him any harm; I said no, provided he spoke softly.

Then he called Mademoiselle de Saintquentin, his niece, to him, and spoke to her thus. “ My dear niece, I think that ever since I have known you, I have seen the rays of a very good nature sparkle in your countenance; but these last offices which you perform with so much affection and diligence in my present necessity, give me very great hopes of you, and really I am obliged to you, and thank you most affectionately. Now, in order to discharge my conscience, I advise you, in the first place, to devote yourself to God, for this is no doubt the principal part of your duty, and that without which no other action of ours can be either good or goodly; and when such devotion is

“ hearty, it necessarily draws after it all other virtuous actions. Next to God, you must love and honour your father and your mother, even your mother my sister, whom I take to be one of the best and most prudent women in the world ; and desire you to regulate your life by her example. Do not suffer yourself to be drawn aside by pleasures. Avoid as a pestilence those silly familiarities with which you see the women sometimes indulge the men ; for though there may be no harm in them at first, yet by little and little they corrupt the mind, and lead it to a thoughtless state, and from thence to the abominable sink of vice. Believe me, the surest protection of a young woman’s chastity is gravity. I desire you (and expect that you will remember me by frequently recollecting the friendships I have showed you), not to complain and grieve yourself for the loss of me ; and, as far as is in my power, I lay all my friends under the same prohibition, since it would look as if they envied the happiness of which, by the favour of death, I shall soon see myself in possession ; and assure yourself, my girl, that if God was now to indulge me with the choice, whether of living my life over again, or of finishing the journey which I have begun, I should be actually at a loss which to choose. My dear niece, adieu.”

He then called to Mademoiselle d’Arsat, his daughter-in-law, and said to her, “ My daughter, you have no great need of admonitions from me, as you have a mother whom I have found so prudent, so very conformable to my temper and inclinations, that she never once offended me. You will be very well instructed by such a tutoress ; and do not think it strange if I, who am not related to you by blood, have a care and anxiety for you. For since you are the daughter of a person so near to me in alliance, it is impossible but I must also be touched with whatever concerns you.



“ At the same time I have ever taken as much care  
“ of the affairs of M. d’Arsat, your brother, as if  
“ they were my own. You have enough both of  
“ wealth and beauty. You are a gentlewoman of a  
“ good family. You have nothing more to do than  
“ to grace them both with the talents of the mind,  
“ which I desire you would not fail of doing. I do  
“ not forbid you that vice which is so detestable in  
“ women ; for I am not willing so much as to think  
“ you can entertain a favourable thought of it, nay,  
“ I am of opinion that you abhor the very name of  
“ it. My daughter-in-law, farewell.”

Though the whole chamber was full of weeping and wailing, it did not interrupt the thread of his discourses, which were pretty long. But after he had made an end, he ordered every one to quit his room except his garrison, which was the name he gave to his maid-servants. And then calling to my brother de Beauregard, he said to him : “ M. de  
“ Beauregard, I thank you very heartily for the pains  
“ which you take for me. I have something very  
“ much at heart, which I long to tell you, and will  
“ therefore, with your leave, discover it to you.” And being encouraged by my brother, he proceeded thus : “ I swear to you that of all who have set about  
“ the reformation of the church, I never thought  
“ there was any one man that entered upon it with  
“ better zeal and a more entire, sincere, and undis-  
“ guised affection than you. And I verily believe,  
“ you was excited to it merely by the vices of our  
“ prelates, who undoubtedly stand in need of great  
“ amendment, and by certain imperfections, that  
“ have in a course of time crept into our church.  
“ I do not wish at this juncture to dissuade you from  
“ it, as I do not willingly desire any body to do any  
“ thing whatsoever against his conscience. But I  
“ would fain caution you, that in regard to the good  
“ reputation which your family has acquired by their  
“ perpetual agreement, a family than which not one  
“ in the world is dearer to me (good God, where is

“ such another family as this, which never did an action unbecoming an honest man !) in regard to the will of your father, that good father to whom you are so much obliged, and of your uncle, and for the sake of your brethren, you would avoid coming to extremities ; be not so sharp and so violent ; accommodate yourself to them. Make no separate combination nor party ; but unite yourselves together. You see what ruin these dissensions have brought upon this kingdom, and I can assure you that they will be attended with still greater mischiefs : and as you are not deficient either in wisdom or goodness, be cautious of bringing your family into these inconveniences, for fear they should deprive it of the honour and happiness which it has enjoyed to this hour. Take what I say to you, sir, in good part, and for a sure testimony of the friendship which I bear to you. For with this view I hitherto reserved my mention of it to you ; and perhaps the condition in which you now see me speaking it will give my words more weight and authority with you.” My brother thanked him very much.

On the Monday morning he was so bad that he quitted all hopes of life ; insomuch that the very next time he saw me, he in a very deplorable tone said : “ Brother, have you no pity for the many torments that I suffer ? Don’t you now see, that all the relief you give me serves only to prolong my pain ?” Soon after this he fainted ; so that we began to give him over for dead : at length by the power of vinegar and wine he was revived. But he did not live long after, and hearing us lament about him, he said : “ My God, who is it torments me so ? Why was I robbed of that profound and pleasant rest which I had ? pray leave me to myself.” And then hearing me, he said, “ And you too, brother, are not willing neither that I should be cured. Oh, what ease do you deprive me of !” At last, being a little more come to himself, he desired a

little wine, and liking it well, said to me, it was the best liquor in the world. "No, surely," said I, for argument sake, "water is the best." "Yes, without doubt," replied he, "water is an excellent thing, ἡδωρ ἀρίζον." His extreme parts, even to his face, were now become as cold as clay, attended with a death-sweat, which ran down all his body, and he had scarce any sign of a pulse left. This morning he confessed to his priest, who did not bring all the necessaries with him, and therefore could not celebrate the mass. But on Tuesday morning M. de la Boetia sent for him to assist him, as he said, in the performance of the last duty of a Christian. Consequently he heard mass and received the sacrament. And when the priest was taking leave of him, he said: "My spiritual father, I humbly beseech it of you, and those who are under your charge, to pray to God for me, that if it be ordered in the most sacred rolls of the decrees of God that I should now end my days, that he would take pity on my soul, and forgive me my sins, which are without number, as it is not possible for so vile and base a creature as I am, to perform the commands of so high and mighty a Master; or if it seemeth good to him, that I should tarry longer in this world, beg of him to put a speedy period to the agonies which I suffer; and that he would be so gracious to me, as to guide my steps hereafter in the path of his holy will, and to make me better than I have been." At this period he stopped a little to take breath, and seeing that the priest was going away, he recalled him, and said to him: "I am willing to declare this also in your presence: I protest, that as I have been baptised and have lived, so I am willing to die, in the faith and religion which Moses first planted in Egypt, which the patriarchs received afterwards in Judæa, and which in the progress of time has been handed down to us in France." It seemed as if he would fain have spoke a little more if he had been able to

have held out ; but he concluded with desiring his uncle and me to pray to God for him ; this being, he said, the best office that Christians can perform for one another. In speaking he happened to uncover his shoulder, and desired his uncle to cover it again, though he had a valet nearer to him : and then looking upon me, he said, *Ingenui est, cui multum debeas, ei plurimum velle debere* : “ It is the quality “ of an ingenuous mind to desire to be under still “ greater obligation to the person whom we are “ much obliged to already.” In the afternoon M. de Belot came to visit him, and taking him by the hand, said to him, “ My friend, I came hither, sir, “ on purpose to pay my debt, but I have found a “ worthy creditor, who has forgiven it me.” A little after, starting suddenly out of a dose, he said, “ Well, well, come when it will, I wait for it with “ serenity and pleasure.” Words which he repeated two or three times in his illness. Afterwards as they were forcing open his mouth to take a draught, he said, turning himself to M. de Belot, *An vivere tanti est ?* “ Is life worth all this ado ?” In the evening death begun, indeed, at night to strike him with its arrows, and as I was at supper, he sent for me, being nothing now but skin and bones, or as he called himself, *Non homo, sed species hominis* : “ Not “ a man, but of the human race.” And he said to me with the utmost struggles : “ My brother and “ friend, God grant that I may see the imaginations “ that I have just been entertained with, realised.” After he had stopped a while, and laboured hard with the deepest sighs for utterance, for then the tongue was beginning plainly to deny him its last office. I said, “ What were those ideas, brother ?” “ Great,” said he, “ very great.” “ It never hap- “ pened before,” I added, “ that I had not the ho- “ nour of being made acquainted with all your ideas ; “ will you not let me still enjoy that confidence ?” “ Yes, surely, brother,” said he, “ but it is not in “ my power to discover them ; they are wonderful,

“ infinite, and unspeakable.” There he stopped, for he could proceed no farther ; insomuch, that a little before he would fain have talked to his wife ; when he said to her, with the most cheerful countenance he could put on, that he had something to tell her ; and he seemed to strive to speak ; but his spirits failing, he called for a little wine to raise them, but it signified nothing ; for he fainted away on a sudden, and for a good while lost his sight. Being now just on the confines of death, and hearing the lamentations of his wife, he called her, and spoke thus to her : “ My image, you torment yourself before the time ; won’t you pity me ? Take courage. Verily I am more in pain for what I see you suffer than what I feel myself, and with reason, because as for the evils which we feel of our own, it is not, properly speaking, we who feel them, but certain senses which God has planted in us ; and, what we feel for others, we feel by a certain judgment and faculty of reasoning. But I see I am going.” This he said because his spirits failed him. Now being afraid that he had frightened his wife, he recovered himself and said : “ I find myself inclined to sleep : good night, wife, go your ways.” This was the last leave he took of her. After she was gone, “ Brother,” said he to me, “ keep close by me, if you please ;” and then either feeling the darts of death come thicker and sharper, or else the force of some hot medicine which they had made him swallow, he spoke with a stronger and more audible voice, and turned himself in bed with perfect violence, so that all the company began to have some hopes, because hitherto he had been so very weak that we despaired of him. Then, amongst other things, he begged me again and again, with the greatest affection, to make room for him, so that I was afraid he was delirious. Moreover, when I had gently remonstrated to him that he was overpowered by his distemper, and that these were not the words of a man in his right senses ; he did not seem to be

convinced, but repeated it still more strongly. "Brother, brother, what, won't you give me room?" insomuch that he forced me to convince him by reason, and to say to him, that since he breathed and talked he had by consequence his place. "Yes, yes," said he, "but that is not what I want; and besides, say what you will, I have no longer a being." "God will give you a better very soon," said I. "Would to God, brother," said he, "I was there now; I have longed to be gone these three days past." In this distressed state he often called to me, in order, for most part, to know whether I was near him. At length he inclined a little to rest, which confirmed us still more in our good hopes: so that I went out of his chamber to congratulate thereupon with Mademoiselle de la Boetia; but about an hour after naming me once or twice, and then fetching a deep sigh, he gave up the ghost about three o'clock on Wednesday morning, the 18th of August, 1563, aged 32 years, 9 months, and 17 days.

## LETTER VI.\*

*To Monseigneur Monseigneur de Montaigne.*

MONSEIGNEUR,

**I**N obedience to your commands last year at your house at Montaigne, I have with my own hands put that great Spanish divine and philosopher Raymond de Sebonde into a French dress, and have as much

\* I met with this letter by way of Dedication of Raymond Sebonde's Natural Theology, translated into French by Michael Seigneur de Montaigne, knight of the king's order, and gentleman in ordinary of his privy-chamber. Printed at Rouen by John de la Mere, an. 1641.

as lay in my power stripped him of that rough mien and unpolite aspect, which he first appeared in to you ; so that, in my opinion, he is comely and complaisant enough to appear in the best of company. It is possible that some delicate curious readers may perceive, that he has a little of the Gascogne turn and bias ; but they may be the more ashamed of their own negligence, in suffering a person, quite a novice and a learner, to get the start of them in this work. Now, Monseigneur, it is but reason that it should be published to the world, and have the credit of your name, because what amendment and reformation it has is all owing to you. Yet I plainly perceive, that if you should please to settle accounts with him, you will be very much his debtor, since in exchange for his excellent and most religious discourses, of his sublime, and, as it were, divine conceptions, it will appear that you have only brought him words and language, a merchandise so mean and vulgar, that he who has the greatest stock of it is peradventure the worse for it.

Monseigneur, I beg God to grant you a long and happy life.

Your most humble and most obedient son,

MICHAEL DE MONTAIGNE.

*N. B. Mr. Coste has inserted a letter before this, which is addressed to Mademoiselle de Paumier, but it is only a short one, of mere compliment.*

THE END.

# INDEX.

---

## A.

**A**BSENCE of friends, of what utility, vol. iii. pag. 241

Abstinence, of doing, iii. 304

Absurdities, what is the greatest, ii. 268

Abundance distasteful and clogging, i. 348

Abuses of the world, how begot, iii. 312

Abydeans, their rash death, i. 469

Accidents, fatal, how easily borne by some people, i. 326—Some accidents more intolerable than death, 452—Some without remedy, iii. 204

Accommodations of the quarrels of Montaigne's days, shameful and false, iii. 298

Accusations answered with an ironical and scoffing confession, iii. 331

Achaians abhorred fraud in war, i. 25

Acknowledgments of benefits, iii. 228

Acquaintance, domestic, i. 229

Action, forced, has neither grace nor honour, iii. 227

Actions of princes examined after their decease, i. 12—First actions of children are indecisive of what they will be hereafter, 166—Virtuous actions now unknown, 277—Actions of former ages, 278—What actions men should most covet to perform, 318—Inconstancy of, 429, &c.—Good actions to be judged by the intention, 435—External actions, no sure index of the mind, 438—Actions animate words, ii. 332—The most common actions, the most troublesome, iii. 103—Public actions subject to various interpretations, 300—Necessary actions pleasant, 418—Actions of all sorts, equally honourable to a wise man, 420

Adder, a song on, i. 258

Admiration, the foundation of philosophy, iii. 312

Admire nothing, ii. 249

Adoration, ii. 153—Of one God made man, 244

Advice, free, necessary to kings, iii. 377

Advocate, who fittest for, i. 42

Advocates, ii. 233

Ægina, the people of, had their thumbs cut off by the Athenians, ii. 399

Ælius Verus's answer to his wife, who reproached him for his amours with other women, i. 239



# INDEX.

- Æmilianus Scipio's character*, ii. 485  
*Æmilius Lepidus*, his orders respecting his burial, i. 18 & Note—His death, 76  
*Æmilius Regillus* could not restrain his soldiers from plunder, i. 28  
*Æneid*, compared with *Orlando Furioso*, ii. 8  
*Æschylus*, his death, i. 76  
*Æsculapius* struck with thunder, ii. 501  
*Æsop's fables and mythology*, ii. 5—His ass, 533—His dog, iii. 362  
*Affairs, domestic, despised*, iii. 209—How affairs ought to be conducted, 297  
*Affection unbecoming a courtier*, i. 201  
*Affection of a father towards his children*, i. 161—Of parents towards their children, 499, &c.—Natural affection of mothers, very weak, 520—Adulterate affection, *ib.*—Affection of wives towards their husbands till they have lost them, ii. 467—Loyal and vehement affection of a wife towards her husband, 469—Affection well tempered, 530  
*Affections, human, extended beyond our existence*, i. 11—Affections of beasts, what they are, iii. 30—Excited by small things, 45—Those of women subject to change, 115—Those towards children weakened by their imperfections, 227  
*Affinities of the sun with the Divinity*, ii. 155  
*Africanus*, verses in praise of him, i. 367  
*Age, considerations on*, i. 425 to 429—Its last effects, 426—Fit for managing an estate, *ib.*—Dispensing gentlemen from the fatigues of war, 427—Of maturity, *ib.*—The most capable of great actions, 428—Fit for marriage, 506  
*Agas of the world*, ii. 241  
*Agasilaus*, how clad, i. 273—His battle with the *Bœotians*, 360—Canonized by the *Thracians*, ii. 179—Mulcted by the *Ephori*, for insinuating himself into the hearts of the people, 443—In his travels lodged in temples; why, iii. 7—His opinion of love, 124  
*Agis*, king of *Sparta*, his answer to an ambassador from *Abdera*, ii. 64  
*Agrigentines*, their inconsistency, i. 432—Their regard to their favourite animals, ii. 40  
*Agrippians* lived without offensive arms, ii. 302  
*Air, evening, sharp and dangerous*, iii. 385  
*Albigenses* chose to be burnt alive rather than recant, i. 314  
*Albucilla's suicide*, ii. 291  
*Alcibiades*, his constitution, i. 193—His character, ii. 485—Why he cut off the tail and ears of his dog, iii. 45—His ambition, 302—He banished music from tables, 415  
*Alcimus's armour*, i. 530  
*Alexander the Great*, his cruelty, i. 5—His noble answer to *Poliperchon*, why he refused to fight by night, 30—Not afraid to swallow a dose of poison, 139—Blamed by *Philip*, his father, for singing at a feast, 308—Persuaded by his flatterers, that he was the son of *Jupiter*, 344—His deep sleep, 356—His horse, 378—His sweat, 410—His valour defective, 436—His sacrifice to *Thetis*, ii. 164—Excellent above all other kings and emperors, 480, &c.—

# INDEX.

- His actions that may fall under censure, 481—His virtue, iii. 8—  
 What passed between him and Thalestris queen of the Amazons,  
 114—Reproved by his father Philip, 143—His followers carried  
 their heads on one side, 302—Emulous of his father's victories,  
 302—Enjoyed corporal pleasures, 418—His labour and end of it,  
 426—His fancies about immortalization, 430
- Alexander the Sixth, pope, poisoned, i. 265
- Alexander, the tyrant, of Pheres, why he would not see tragedies,  
 ii. 400
- Alexia, two extraordinary events at the siege of it, ii. 462
- Almanacks liars, ii. 355
- Alphonsus, king, why he thought asses happier than kings, i. 349
- Alteration, whatever hurts and astonishes, iii. 385
- Alva, duke, compared to the constable De Montmorency, ii. 363
- Amadis des Gaules despised by Montaigne, ii. 4
- Amasis, king of Egypt, his marriage to a fair Greek, whom at first  
 he had not power to enjoy, i. 99
- Ambassadors detected in falsehoods, i. 39, 40—Sometimes conceal  
 from their masters what they think fit, 61—Their employment  
 not limited, ib.—Ambassadors of Samos, 197
- Ambition, enemy to society, i. 285—Of Cicero and Pliny, 300—  
 unworthy, 301—Its power, 437—Daughter to presumption, ii.  
 341—More untameable than love, 448—The only ruin of Cæsar's  
 actions, 452—Cæsar's ambition full of mischiefs, 483—A vice of  
 great men, iii. 302
- Anbraciota's suicide, out of impatience to enjoy the life to come,  
 i. 469
- Amendment, the surest proof of a sincere repentance, iii. 13
- American king's magnificent garden, iii. 149
- Americans, their compliment to Fernando Cortez, i. 242—The ex-  
 cellency of their policy, 248—The nature of their climate, ib.—  
 Their buildings and beds, 249—Their diet and pastimes, ib.—  
 Believe the immortality of the soul, 250—Their priests and pro-  
 phets, ib.—In what sense the savages are barbarians, 253—Their  
 moderation and cordiality, ib.—Their use of victory, 254—Their  
 undaunted behaviour when prisoners, 256—Their jealousy of their  
 wives, 257—Their love-songs, 258—Their language, 259—Virtue  
 betrayed them to the Spaniards, iii. 150, 151—Their answer to  
 the offers of the Spaniards, 152—Massacred by the Spaniards,  
 155—Thought to be richer than they were, 156
- Amestris, mother of Xerxes, cruelly pious, ii. 165
- Amphitheatres, rich and sumptuous, iii. 144
- Amurath sacrificed six hundred young Greeks to the manes of his  
 father, i. 241
- Amiot's translation of Plutarch commended, i. 472—His language  
 commended, ib.
- Anacharsis, his notion of government, i. 352
- Anacreon, his death by a grape-stone, i. 76
- Anagram of the name of Denisot the poet, i. 366
- Anaxagoras, the first philosopher who owned an infinite Creator,  
 ii. 155

# INDEX.

- Anaxarchus pounded in a stone mortar, i. 450  
 Ancient history, how far respectable, i. 128  
 Ancients, their deeds depreciated by many people, i. 278—Were good fellows, 444—Used to go open-breasted, ii. 67  
 Androsso hanged by his wife, Joan, queen of Naples; the reason, iii. 116  
 St. Andrew's cross, ii. 243  
 Androdus, of Dacia, his grateful treatment by a lion, ii. 97  
 Andron, the Argian, travelled over the sands of Lybia without drinking, iii. 381  
 Anger, its extravagance and impotence, i. 23—Indiscreet anger of parents, ii. 428—Anger transports men from their judgment, 429—Is pleased with, and flatters itself, 432—Is incorporated by concealing it, 433—How it ought to be managed in families, 435—Arms valour, 437  
 Anguien (M. de) makes two attempts on his own life, i. 460  
 Animals that live but a day, i. 87  
 Animals free agents, ii. 72—Taken care of by men, 74—Stronger than men, 75—Capable of discipline, 77—More temperate than mankind, 88, 89—Choice in their amours, 88—Their society, 100—Their senses operated differently from those of man, 277  
 Animosity between Cæsar and Pompey, iii. 291  
 Answer of the duke of Florence's fool, i. 272—Of an American savage to Montaigne, 259  
 Anti-Cato's of Cæsar, ii. 449  
 Antigonus, called by the poet Hermedorus the son of the sun, i. 345—His punishment of the treachery of his enemy's soldiers, ii. 537—His excuse for not giving any thing to a Cynic, iii. 319  
 Antinõus's advice to the besieged in Passaro to kill themselves, i. 461  
 Antiochus stopped in his conquests by a letter from the Roman senate, ii. 394—Corrected his own writings, iii. 223  
 Antipater's menace of the Lacedæmonians, i. 453  
 Antisthenes' answer to the question, What was the best thing to learn? ii. 29—Why he advised the Athenians to employ asses in agriculture, as well as horses, iii. 185—His opinion of Socrates, 373  
 Antonius defeated, i. 212  
 Ants' conference, ii. 83—Fore-knowledge, 91  
 Apes, very large, taken by Alexander in the Indies, iii. 101  
 Apollo appeared in a vision to Aristo, ii. 182, Note  
 Apollodorus's dream, i. 477  
 Apology for Raimond de Sebonde, ii. 41 to 286  
 Appearances, contrary, maintained in all subjects, ii. 260—Of senses, thought to be false, 262—In human things, 263—Outward, testimonies of internal constitution, iii. 9—Superficial, carry a great weight in all things, 178  
 Appetite contemns what it has in possession, ii. 299  
 Appetites of several sorts, i. 401—Of men, irresolute and fickle, 405—Appetites springing from love the most violent; why, ii. 446—Those residing in the soul, incapable of satiety, 447—Ap-

## I N D E X.

- petites rare in old age, iii. 16—Those of the body ought not to be augmented by the mind, 125
- Appion's character, ii. 97, Note
- Apple of discord, iii. 297
- Apples of Hippomanes, iii. 39
- Apprehension, quick, of danger, ii. 27
- Approbation, public, under what considerations it ought to be courted, ii. 320
- Arcesiläus, his gold and silver vessels, i. 294—What hastened his end, 448—His answer to a reproach that his scholars left his school for that of the Epicurean sect, ii. 21—Gouty, 117—His answer to a question, If it were possible for a wise man, or a philosopher, to be in love? iii. 129
- Archer refusing to try his art to save his life, ii. 348
- Archias, tyrant of Thebes, killed by a plot, for delaying to open a letter, i. 474
- Archilconida refuses the praise given to her son, i. 336
- Architect, the laconic speech of one to the Athenians, i. 198
- Architects' technical language, i. 402
- Archytas, his moderation of his passion, ii. 431, 432—His aversion to perfect solitude, iii. 256
- Areopagites ordering the parties to appear again after a hundred years, iii. 313
- Arete despised by Montaigne, i. 403
- Argyraspides, soldiers, punished for having betrayed their general, ii. 537
- Ariosto, not to be compared to Virgil, ii. 6—When born, 120, Note
- Aristarchus's opinion of the conceitedness of the world in his time, iii. 372
- Aristippus's answer to an argument for loving his children, i. 217—His opinions in favour of pleasure and riches, ii. 30—His acceptance of the perfumed robe from Plato, 254—Why he suffered Dionysius the tyrant to spit in his face, *ib.*—His answer to Diogenes, who reproached him for not being content to live on cabbage, rather than follow the court, *ib.*—His gain by philosophy, 346—His saying to some youths who blushed at his going to a bawdy-house, iii. 113—Living as a stranger in all places, 256
- Aristo, his notion of God, ii. 157
- Aristodenus, king, what determined him to kill himself, iii. 50
- Aristophanes' criticism on the style of Epicurus, i. 201
- Aristotle's method of instructing Alexander the Great, i. 188—His definition of rhetoric, 399—His silly compliment on man, ii. 116—His principles, 143, 199, 238—His opinion about the principle of natural things, 194—His contempt of slander, 403—His opinion of beauty, iii. 350—Reproached for being too merciful, 357
- Arius; nothing to be concluded against him from the nature of his death, i. 262
- Armenia, its mountains, i. 275
- Armies of the Turks support themselves cheaply, i. 385—Monstrous armies of no great effect, ii. 463
- Armour of the Parthians, i. 526—Of the French, more burden-

# INDEX.

- some than defensive, 527—Of the Medes, heavy and uneasy, *ib.*  
 —Of the Roman infantry, and their military discipline, 528—  
 Very heavy, 529
- Arms of value inflame the soldier's courage, *i.* 369—Increase the  
 enemy's resolution with the hope of rich spoil, 370
- Arms, coats of, uncertain, *i.* 364
- Arms, natural, of men, *ii.* 69
- Army expecting an enemy, *i.* 374
- Arras, the obstinacy of its inhabitants, *i.* 310
- Arrêts of parliament, *ii.* 147
- Arria's suicide to encourage her husband's, *ii.* 469, 470
- Arrogancy, a wrangling enemy to discipline, *iii.* 372
- Art inferior to nature, *i.* 247
- Artabanus, his reproof of Xerxes, *i.* 284
- Artaxerxes, how he mollified the rigour of some Persian laws, *ii.* 35
- Artibius, a Persian general, killed by his horse, *i.* 377
- Arts taught men by other animals, *ii.* 78—The liberal arts despised  
 by some sects of philosophers, 145
- Aruntius Lucius's suicide, *i.* 464
- Assassins think they merit heaven, *ii.* 424
- Asses esteemed happier than kings by king Alphonsus, *i.* 349
- Assyrians, how they managed their war-horses, *i.* 384
- Astapa, in Spain, the rash death of the citizens, *i.* 468
- Astrology, when it had not determined the motion of the moon,  
*iii.* 307
- Atalanta, diverted from her way, lost the race, *iii.* 38, 39
- Ataraxy of the Pyrrhonists, *ii.* 136, 250
- Atheism, what it is, *ii.* 51, 52
- Atheists reduced to acknowledge the Divine Power by force or by  
 reason, *ii.* 52
- Athenians, their folly and injustice, *i.* 19—What St. Paul thought  
 of their unknown god, 153
- Athens, city of, its antiquity, *ii.* 242—Its air and situation, 245—  
 Compared to ladies of pleasure, *iii.* 69
- Atlantis island, *i.* 243—The people there never dream, *iii.* 405
- Atoms of the Epicureans, what, *ii.* 202
- Attalus made Pausanias drunk, *i.* 441—His precept against soft  
 beds, *iii.* 382
- Attention, requisite in young men, *i.* 176
- Atticus Pomponius's death, by resolute abstinence from food, *ii.* 292
- Aufidius's death, *i.* 76
- Augury the most certain way of prediction, *ii.* 85
- Augustin (St.) his account of the transformation of a man into a  
 horse after his eating cheese, *iii.* 316, Note
- Augustus's revenge on Neptune after a storm, *i.* 23—His affliction  
 for the loss of some legions, *ib.*—Discovery of Cinna's conspiracy  
 against him, 133, 134—His speech to Cinna, and pardon of him,  
 135—What he got by that act of clemency, 136—His inconstancy  
 uncensured by the boldest critics, 430—His obscene epigram, *ii.*  
 93—His temples, 179
- Aurat ranked among the best Latin poets, *ii.* 363

## INDEX.

- Aurelius Marcus's book**, i. 444  
**Auroy**, battle of, i. 281  
**Austerity of Janes**, king of Naples and Sicily, iii. 33—Of life, affected by some churchmen, 35—Of men's decrees renders the propension of women more violent, 79  
**Authority of the counsels of kings** ought to be preserved, and how, iii. 183  
**Authors**, advice to them, i. 246—Their works, when first burnt by the common executioner, 522—Fond of their own works, 524, ii. 327, 328—Modern authors, that are simply pleasant, do merely entertain, 4  
**Avarice**, the source of it, i. 327—Its power, 438—It has no greater impediment than itself, iii. 283  
**Axiochus**, a dialogue, strictures on it, ii. 5—Uncertain who was the author of it, ib.

## B.

- BABEL**, confusion there, ii. 214  
**Bacchus's name**, i. 447  
**Bajazet's ripping up a soldier**, to be certain of his eating what he had no right to, i. 480, & Note  
**Balbus's tranquil life**, iii. 160  
**Balls, dancers, and tumblers**, ii. 8  
**Banquet of Plato**, i. 190.  
**Barbarian kings' way of binding themselves to each other**, ii. 398  
**Barbarians**, in what sense the savages of America are so called, i. 247  
**Barbarism**, what it is taken for, i. 246  
**Barbarity against men's lives**, i. 252  
**Barbels**, ii. 100  
**Bargaining** hated by Montaigne, i. 327  
**Barking of dogs**, of two sorts, ii. 63  
**Bashfulness** an ornament to young people, iii. 61  
**Basia**, epigrams on kissing, ii. 4  
**Bathing**, ii. 505, 511  
**Bathory**, Sigismund, king of Poland, his clothing, i. 273, 274  
**Baths** used by the ancients before dinner, i. 389—Particularly used by every nation, ii. 512—And drinking the waters, ib.  
**Battle at sea** gained against the Turks, i. 262—The battle of Dreux, 359—Fought on foot by cavalry, 379  
**Bayard**, captain, of great courage, i. 16, 366  
**Beasts** alter their natural affection, i. 521—Revered for gods, ii. 39—Entitled to some regard from men, 40—Impart their thoughts to one another, 63—Free choice and inclination to work, 65—Have a language of their own, 69—Their subtle way of hunting, 75—Knowledge and prudence in curing their diseases, ib.—Justice in serving their benefactors, 88—Their inclinations have an analogy with those of men, ib.—Inclined to avarice, 91—Their faculty of imagination, 104—Their faculties more perfect than men's, 277—Naturally solicitous of their own preservation, iii. 346  
**Beauties** masked, why, ii. 300—Beauties of the person, when pre-

# INDEX.

- ferred to those of the mind, iii. 32—Painted, reckoned among deformities, 128, 129—Of several sorts, 349, 350, 351
- Beautiful persons are fit to command, iii. 350
- Beautiful, called good, ib.
- Beauty, sought after by women, in defiance of the greatest pain, i. 322—Of the body, what it is, ii. 105—Of the Indians, 106—Amongst the Mexicans, ib.—Its preference among different nations, ib.—A thing of great recommendation, 333—First advantage that gave pre-eminence to men, 334—Beauty and stature regarded in the persons of princes and magistrates, ib.—Required in governors of places, 335—Of stature, the only beauty of men, ib.—Singular, of Spurlina, slashed and disfigured by himself with wounds and scars, and why, 453, 454—Of the body, what it is, and how to be esteemed, iii. 350
- Beauvais, bishop of, his conduct at the battle of Bouvines, i. 338, 339, & Note
- Bebius, a judge, remarkable particular of his death, i. 76
- Beccafico, or fig-pecker, a small bird so called, iii. 406, Note
- Bedouins held transmigration and predestination, ii. 321, 422
- Beds of the Americans, i. 249—Beds made use of to lie upon at meals, 390—Soft ones despised, iii. 382
- Bees' polity, ii. 64, 65—Battle, 95
- Beggars, in shirts, in the depth of winter, i. 272
- Behaviour, good, the science of, ought to be early inculcated, i. 181—Proceeding from natural inclinations, ii. 323, 324
- Being, dear to every thing, ii. 182
- Belief should be neither too easy nor too stiff, i. 209—The belief of patients prepossesses them with the operation of physic, ii. 502
- Believers, whether the number of them is a proof that they have truth on their side, iii. 308, 309
- Bell, the tolling of, a signal of war, i. 26
- Bellay's memoirs, ii. 19
- Bellay, the poet, ii. 363
- Belly, well governed, is a great part of liberty, iii. 407
- Benefit, reproach of one that is conferred, odious, iii. 230
- Bessus, how he discovered a murder he had committed, i. 476
- Betis's obstinacy punished by Alexander, i. 5
- Beze the Latin poet, ii. 363
- Bias's remarkable saying, i. 285—His description of a happy family-state, iii. 6, 7
- Bion, the philosopher, his remarkable saying, i. 22—Was an atheist, ii. 52—His frank description of his original, iii. 246
- Birds, predictions from the flight of them, ii. 85—Their speech and penetration, 86
- Birds of passage, ii. 86
- Births and burials interdicted in the precincts of the Isle of Delos, iii. 105
- Bissextile day, iii. 306
- Bitches guess which of their litter is the best, ii. 86
- Blind men love exercises, ii. 265, 266—A woman that was so, and did not know it, 397

## INDEX.

- Blindness cured by St. Stephen's shrine, i. 213—Counterfeit, became real, ii. 396—Occasioned by a dream, 397
- Blood (and even urine) of horses used for nourishment on emergent occasions, i. 384
- Blood of beasts interdicted by Moses, why, ii. 200—The blood of a he-goat good for preservation of life, 515
- Bloody-flux, slighted only as a looseness, iii. 326
- Blosius's declaration of friendship, i. 224
- Boddice of the ladies, i. 323, & Note
- Bodies, when young, ought to be bent, i. 193—Bodies perfumed, 390
- Bodinus, a good author, ii. 438
- Body, the matter that produces it, ii. 219—Capable of eternal rewards, 333—Its qualities, 334, &c.—Its health and vigour the cause of the sprightliness of the mind, iii. 377, 379, &c.—Its close connexion with the mind, 55; and with the soul, 348, 349
- Bœotians, battle between them and Agesilaus, i. 360
- Boetius, Stephen, his character, ii. 360
- Boetius's Voluntary Servitude, i. 178—His friendship for Montaigne and his writings, 215
- Bogez, his suicide, i. 464
- Boicalus's noble answer to the Romans, i. 453
- Boldness and courage of the Indians, iii. 149
- Boleslaus, king of Poland, betrayed to the duke of Russia, ii. 536—His vow of chastity on the wedding night, iii. 72
- Boniface the Eighth, pope, his character, i. 429
- Bonnes, Bartholomew de, his siege and capture of the castle of Commercy, i. 27
- Book, the best for a young man, i. 180
- Book-employment painful, i. 296
- Books, immortal children, i. 521—When first burnt by authority, 522—Considerations on, ii. 1 to 20—Proper to translate, 43—Of a singular esteem amongst great leaders, 455—Books without learning, walls without stone or brick, iii. 2—Their pleasure and inconvenience, 35, 36—Written upon love, 75—Less instructive than conversation, 167—Useful, and good, and yet no credit to their authors, 191
- Boots, of copper, worn in some countries, i. 117
- Borromeo, cardinal, his austere way of living, i. 325
- Bounty and benefits preferred before valour, iii. 232, 233—Bounty the more rare, is in proportion the more beautiful and attractive, 234
- Bordeaux, the office of mayor of that city conferred on Montaigne, iii. 279, 300
- Bouvines, the battle of, i. 338, 339, & Note
- Bowels of a Lacedæmonian boy torn out by a fox, ii. 439
- Bows carrying long arrows, i. 381
- Boxing prohibited by Plato, ii. 408
- Brachman virgins, iii. 30
- Brasilians died of mere old age, ii. 119
- Breach of faith has mischievous consequences, ii. 344



## I N D E X.

- Bread of the Americans**, i. 249—Without salt, iii. 406  
**Breath**, sweet, i. 410, 411  
**Bretaigné treaty**, ii. 389  
**Brevity**, so agreeable to men of understanding, censured, i. 178  
**Brittany**, duke of, pressed to death in a crowd, i. 75  
**Broth of eringos**, or burst-wort, taken to oblige the ladies, iii. 394  
**Brothels**, i. 115  
**Brother**, an affectionate name, i. 218  
**Brotherly love** neglected, i. 218  
**Brute-creatures' capacity**, ii. 64, 65  
**Brutes** subject to the force of imagination, i. 104  
**Brutus and Cassius**, i. 430—**Brutus's love of liberty**, 430  
**Bucephalus**, Alexander's horse, i. 378  
**Buchanan**, i. 204—Esteemed a first-rate poet, ii. 363  
**Buffoons**, who preserved their jests even till their dying-moments, i. 310—Retained by men of quality to make sport at meals, 392  
**Buildings of the Americans**, i. 249  
**Bull**, investing Montaigne with the freedom of the city of Rome, iii. 274, 275  
**Bunel**, Peter, his character, ii. 42  
**Burial** much overvalued by the Athenians, i. 19  
**Burial of suicides**, i. 457  
**Business**, a mark of understanding in some men, iii. 278—The business of most part of men is a farce, 287

## C.

- CÆLIUS**, the orator, in a passion, because he was not contradicted, ii. 433  
**Cæsar**, Julius, his saying to a decrepid old soldier, i. 84, 85—The measures he took to gain the love of his enemies, 142—His way of speaking, 200—Marched generally bare-headed before his army, 273—Whether his lamentation of Pompey's death was sincere, 281—The reason of his writing his own history, 301—Why he was called king Nicomede's Sponda, 393—His saying, 404—How he lost his life by his neglect, 474—His Commentaries commended and criticised, ii. 14, 17—Treated as he deserved, 25, Note—His clemency towards pirates, 33—The sun said to have mourned for his death, 289—Called thief and drunkard to his face, 370—His disposal of kingdoms, 393—Was very ambitious, 447, 449, 452—His amours and other pleasures, ib. ib.—Great character, ib. ib.—Wonderful parts, 449—Sobriety, ib.—Called a drunkard by Cato, 450—Clemency in the time of his government, 450, 451—His boundless ambition, 452—His art of war, 455 to 466—How he encouraged his troops, 455—Readily obeyed by his soldiers, 456—His promptness in his expeditions, ib.—Called his soldiers 'fellow soldiers,' 457—His severity to keep them in awe, ib.—His manner of exhorting his soldiers, 458—Instances of the rapidity of his progress in his military expeditions, 459—Would inspect every thing himself, ib.—Chose to conquer rather by wisdom than strength, 460—Was more circum-

# INDEX.

- spect in his enterprises than Alexander ; but boldly faced danger, when necessity required it, 461—His courage at the siege of Alexia, 462—Learned to be cautious, 463—Was an expert swimmer, 464—Beloved by his soldiers, *ib.*—The intrepidity of his soldiers, 465—His ambition moderate, but mischievous, 483—His war with Pompey, *iii.* 291—Did enjoy corporal pleasures, 418
- Cæsar and Pompey good horsemen, *i.* 378
- Cæsar's horse, *i.* 378
- Cabinet of the gods, natural ways of entrance into, *ii.* 234
- Calicut nobility, *iii.* 65
- Caligula's demolition of a fine palace, because it had been his mother's prison, *i.* 23
- Calisthenes, how he lost the favour of Alexander, *i.* 193
- Cambyses's dream that made him put his brother to death, *iii.* 50
- Cameleon changes its colour, *ii.* 85
- Canacro's servants hanged for betraying him, *ii.* 537
- Canius's application, in the article of death, to observe the departure of his soul, *i.* 482
- Cannibals, *i.* 242, &c.—Marry many wives, 257
- Cannon-shot unavoidable, *i.* 51
- Canopy of state allowed but in palaces and taverns, *i.* 407
- Cantharides, or Spanish fly, *i.* 477
- Capacity unfit for the management of public affairs, *iii.* 262—Greater in adverse than in prosperous fortune, 199, 284
- Capets, the meaning of that term, *iii.* 265, & Note
- Capilupus, a famous composer of centos, *i.* 165, Note
- Capua, the suicide of twenty-eight of its senators, *i.* 466, 467
- Capuchin's continency, *i.* 276
- Caracalla's armour, *i.* 528
- Carillus, how he curbed his passion, *ii.* 432
- Carneades over-studious, *i.* 189—His visit to Arcesilaus, *ii.* 117—His opinions, 143, 144, & Note ; 308, 309
- Carriage, ridiculous, of a gentleman in his own house, *iii.* 210
- Carthaginians confounded by a panic, *i.* 66—Their discovery of an island, 245—Their sacrifice of children to Saturn, *ii.* 166—In what case they punished their victorious generals, *iii.* 182
- Carvers retained by men of quality, *i.* 392
- Cassius and Brutus, *i.* 460
- Castalio, the learned, died of want, *i.* 270
- Cat of Montaigne, *ii.* 61
- Catena, the robber, his execution, *ii.* 35
- Cato the Elder, his parsimony, *i.* 403, 404—Reproached as having been a hard drinker, 442—Compared with Cato of Utica, *ii.* 412—Set about studying Greek too late in life, 413—Preserved his own health and that of his family without the use of physic, 497, 498
- Cato the Younger, observations concerning his death, *i.* 278—Passages out of five poets in praise of him, 279, 280—His tranquillity just before a popular commotion, 357—His age and suicide, 426—The virtuous pleasure he felt in slaying himself, *ii.* 24, 295—

## I N D E X.

- The mutability of his affections for his wife, 299—His virtue preferable to that of Cato the Censor, 412—His virtue was very vigorous, iii. 261
- Catulus Luctatius, why he fled in battle, i. 336
- Caunians' banishment of foreign deities, ii. 184
- Causes of events in the prescience of God, ii. 421—Fortuitous and voluntary, ib.
- Causcy, magnificent, between Quito and Cusco, iii. 157
- Cavalry, when they ought to dismount in a battle, i. 379
- Cea, island of, description of its customs, i. 452 to 472
- Celtiberians' character, i. 435
- Centos, a particular species of poetry, i. 165, & Note
- Ceremonies troublesome, iii. 27
- Ceremony followed by most men, ii. 323
- Cestius's scurvy treatment by Cicero for despising his style, ii. 12, 13
- Chabrias lost the fruits of a victory, to take care of the dead bodies of his friends, i. 20
- Chaces within the theatre at Rome, iii. 143
- Chance, its great dominion over men, i. 436—Has a very great share in human actions, iii. 183
- Change dangerous to governments, ii. 355—Pleasing to men, iii. 200—Gives form to injustice and tyranny, 214, 215
- Characters of men in general not easily determined, i. 430
- Charinus, his physics, ii. 505
- Chariots drawn by four oxen, iii. 137
- Charles the Fifth's character of the French officers and soldiers, i. 60—His resignation commended, i. 508
- Charles the Eighth, king of France, how he made so hasty a progress in Italy, i. 160, 161—How he was saved in battle by his horse, 377, 378
- Charles of Bourbon's signal at death, i. 386, Note
- Chasan's fury on being reproached for cowardice, i. 434
- Chastel, bishop of Soissons, his suicide, i. 470
- Chastisement instead of physic to children, ii. 428—The chastisement of offences ought to be performed without anger, iii. 283
- Chastisements ought to be deferred till anger be over, ii. 428
- Chastity valued in marriage, i. 114—An amiable virtue, 122—Chastity of the age in which Montaigne's father lived, 444—Vowed and kept on the wedding-night, iii. 72—How hard it is for women to preserve theirs, 80—Its duty or obligation hard to practise, 86—Corrupted by those who are least to be feared, 89—Extreme, of some women, ib.—Doth principally lie in the will, 90—Curiosity respecting women's chastity is pernicious, 91
- Cheerfulness a sign of wisdom, i. 185
- Cheese, the eating of it said to have transformed a man into a horse, iii. 316, Note
- Chelonis, the daughter of one king and wife of another, her generous temper, iii. 408
- Chess, an idle and childish game, i. 397—May help us to know ourselves, ib.
- Chewing accounted unbecoming, iii. 106

## INDEX.

- Child, a monstrous one, account of, ii. 425  
 Child-bearing, the pains of, supported with ease, i. 320  
 Children, the importance of giving them early correction, i. 112—  
     Whipped to death, 119—Difficulty of guessing by their first actions  
     what they will be hereafter, 166—They should not be trained up  
     by their parents, 172—Ought to mind every thing that passes,  
     177—Should be instructed early in the science of good behaviour,  
     181—When they should be instructed in the sciences, 183—How  
     their breeding may be discovered, 186—Capable of attending  
     lectures of philosophy, 187—In France, children that are hope-  
     ful, do not answer, 189—Ought not to be compelled to study by  
     severity, 191—Spoiled with delicacy, *ib.*—Ought not to be hu-  
     moured in any singularity, but to be habituated early to all man-  
     ner of customs, 192—Their progress must be estimated by their  
     actions, 195—Ought not to be suddenly awaked from their sleep,  
     204—Should not be allowed to drink wine, 446—Affection of  
     parents to them treated at large, 499 to 525—Their affection to  
     their parents less than that of their parents to them, why, 501—  
     Should be admitted to a share of their father's substance, 503—  
     Considered as instruments wherewith their parents may grow rich,  
     506—How they should call their fathers, and the treatment they  
     should receive from them, 510—Having attained to maturity,  
     they ought to be admitted to familiarity with their fathers, 511,  
     514—Affection of mothers to them, 520—Those of the Carthagi-  
     nians sacrificed to Saturn, ii. 166—Gloriously saved by Theoxena  
     from king Philip's edict, 409, 410—Abandoned to the care and  
     government of their fathers, 427—Of the Lacedæmonians, whip-  
     ped before the altar of Diana, 440—How they ought to be pro-  
     vided for by their fathers, iii. 203—Affections towards them weak-  
     ened by their imperfections, 228—Attach men to futurity, 272  
     —Not much to be coveted, why, 273  
 China, printing there, iii. 148  
 Chinese officers for distributing rewards and punishments, iii. 367  
 Chios, the remarkable chastity of the women there, i. 119  
 Chiron refused immortality, and why, i. 91  
 Chirurgeon, his end, or view, iii. 215—The chirurgeons of Greece  
     performed on scaffolds, 302  
 Choaspes, river, the water of it the constant beverage of the Per-  
     sian kings, iii. 235  
 Cholic as long-lived as men, iii. 395  
 Christian religion needs no events to authorize it, i. 261  
 Christianity, true, the mark of it, ii. 46—On what the profession of  
     it is founded, 51  
 Christians, who the completest, i. 409—Their zeal full of injustice  
     and cruelty, ii. 49  
 Chrysippus's writings, i. 163—His notion of the Deity, ii. 157; of  
     the seat of the soul, 200—Rebuked by Carneades, 264—Drunk  
     in his legs, iii. 415  
 Church afflicted with troubles, ii. 301  
 Cicero, his eloquence derided by Cato, i. 198—His ambition, 300  
     —Why he published his Familiar Epistles, 301—His affectation of

## INDEX.

- eloquence, 305—Why he made Eros his slave free, *ib.*—His philosophical works, *ii.* 10—His letters to Atticus, 11—Censured, 12, 430—Character of him, 12—His poetry, *ib.*—His eloquence, *ib.*—Very ambitious of glory, 308—His opinion of a solitary life, *iii.* 255, 256
- **Cimber**, though oft drunk, kept a secret as well as sober Cassius, *i.* 441—His conspiracy against Cæsar, *ib.*
- Cimbrians'** character, *i.* 435, 436
- Cimon's** honourable interment of three race-horses, *ii.* 40, 41
- Cinna's** conspiracy against Augustus, *i.* 134, 135—A remarkable action in the civil war against him, *ii.* 544
- Circe's** draughts, *ii.* 110
- Circumcision**, *ii.* 242, 243—Performed upon women, *i.* 117
- **Civility** too formal, blameable, *i.* 54—Its advantages when well regulated, 55
- Claudius**, emperor, his licence, *i.* 102—Was a cuckold, *iii.* 95
- **Cleanthes**, his unsettled opinion of the Deity, *ii.* 157—His opinion of the earth's motion, 237—His resolution to die, 293—How much he got by the labour of his own hands, *iii.* 285
- Cleombrotus**, why he threw himself into the sea, *i.* 469
- Cleomenes**, his perfidy, *i.* 28, 29—His answer to the Samian ambassadors, 197
- Clodomire**, king of Aquitaine, his life lost by his obstinate pursuit of his routed enemy, *i.* 370—His suicide, 459; *ii.* 230—His derision of an harangue upon valour, 430
- Climacidae**, Syrian women, their office, *ii.* 73
- **Climate** of America, description of, *i.* 248
- **Clipping** of horses, to lead them in triumph, *i.* 387
- Clitomachus** upon Carneades, *ii.* 144, 145, & Note
- **Clothes**, the custom of wearing them, *i.* 271 to 275—Were unknown to many nations, 271, 272—Divers fashions, 273—Changed four times in the day by a king of Mexico, 275—Those of silk disesteemed in France, 353—Those of our ancestors made up of horse-hairs, to restrain the appetite of love, *ii.* 446
- Clovis**, king, a remarkable occurrence that took place while he was besieging Angoulesme, *i.* 266—His punishment of a traitor, *ii.* 537
- Clowns** are the most desirous of amorous performances, *ii.* 119
- Coaches**, wonderfully swift, *ii.* 387—Of what use in battles, *iii.* 136—Used by the Hungarians against the Turks, *ib.*—Those of the emperors drawn by several animals, 137—By whores, *ib.*
- Coin**, the use of it unknown in the Indies, *iii.* 156
- Collation** between meals, *i.* 391
- Colonies** of the Romans, *ii.* 389
- Combats** of troop against troop, *ii.* 391, 404
- Comedians** touched to the quick in the acting of their parts, *iii.* 47
- Comedies** written in Montaigne's time censured, *ii.* 7
- Comines**, Philip de, *ii.* 18
- Command**, whether better than obedience, *i.* 346, 347—A difficult and troublesome employment, *iii.* 160, 161
- Commanding** mixed with vexatious thoughts, *iii.* 201

## INDEX.

- Commentaries of Cæsar esteemed by Montaigne, ii. 14—Mistakes that have been discovered in them, 17
- Commentators, why so numerous, iii. 363
- Commerce with well-bred women, iii. 28—Commerce or acquaintance with books, 32
- Commercy, castle of, besieged and captured by the English under Bartholomew de Bonnes, i. 27
- Common-place books, of what use, iii. 347
- Commotions, how to be appeased, i. 141
- Communication of beasts among themselves, ii. 62—Of men with beasts, 69, 70
- Company of ill men dangerous, i. 286—Accidental, upon the road, generally troublesome, iii. 255
- Comparisons between God and man ridiculous, ii. 164
- Complacency and satisfaction in doing good, iii. 4
- Complaint may be indulged in the agony of pain, ii. 489
- Complaints ease grief, iii. 46
- Complexion, pale, reckoned a beauty, and effected by the women with great prejudice to their health, i. 322
- Compliments, in letters, despised by Montaigne, i. 306
- Comportment, disdainful and indifferent, in the toleration of infirmities, merely ceremonial, ii. 489
- Composers of centos, i. 165
- Compositions that smell of oil and the lamp, i. 43
- Condemnations, to what end, iii. 165
- Conduct of the females to be left in a great measure to their own discretion, iii. 113—Of ourselves, the principal charge of every one, 281
- Confederacies, what is necessary in, i. 229
- Confession should be free and bold, iii. 57—Auricular, 59—Free and generous, enervates reproach, 246, 247
- Confidence that gains the heart, must be fearless, i. 141—Misplaced, attended with a happy issue, 142—Of another man's virtue, 333
- Confusion of other states pleasing to the eyes, iii. 333
- Conjugal love to be admired, i. 239
- Conjunction of the stars, iii. 157
- Conrad the Third, his reconciliation to Guelph, i. 2
- Conscience, origin of the laws of, i. 120—Observations concerning it, 475 to 480—Its wonderful power, 475—The advantage of a good conscience, 477—A bad one terrifies, ib.—Liberty of conscience, ii. 371, &c.—The advantages of a good conscience, iii. 4—Conscience ties up the tongue, and stops the mouth, 221—A quiet conscience the gift of God, 294
- Consolations, how they ought to be administered, iii. 36—Prescribed by philosophy, 37
- Conspiracies, whether they are best prevented by execution of the plotters, i. 138
- Constancy, wherein it consists, i. 50—Of some old men, women, and children, 241—Constancy in affliction, 289—Constancy and

# INDEX.

- perfection of virtue, 430—Of a child torn with biting pincers, &c. 450—Its seat, ii. 340—Wonderful constancy of some French peasants in the civil wars, 441, 442
- Constantius, emperor, his stiff gesture, ii. 325
- Constitution of several sorts, i. 193
- Consular place at table most accessible, i. 474, 475
- Consultations of physicians, ii. 503
- Contempt of riches, i. 332
- Continnence enjoined to women for their particular share, iii. 71—Difficult, or rather impossible, to women, 72
- Continency in marriage, i. 238
- Contradiction of judgment acceptable in conversation, iii. 169
- Convenience, none without inconvenience, ii. 376
- Conversation with the world, i. 172, 179—With all men, its utility, iii. 28 to 33—With beautiful and well-bred women, 28—Of greater advantage than reading, 167—With men of genius, why coveted, 175—The better for smart repartees, 190
- Copernicus, his system, ii. 238
- Cordus fasted himself to death for the fate of his writings, i. 523
- Corinth, its senate's justification of Timoleon, ii. 540—Its burghership offered to Alexander, iii. 279
- Corpses of beautiful women kept three days in Egypt before they were interred, iii. 110, 111
- Correction of the male children designated to the fathers, and that of the females to the mothers, i. 117—Of school-boys censured, 191—Never ought to be given in anger, ii. 432
- Corruption of manners is formed by the particular contribution of every man, iii. 198
- Cortez, Fernando, compliment paid to him by the Americans, i. 242
- Cosmography, ii. 238, 240
- Cossus's character, i. 440
- Cotys, king of Thrace, why he broke a costly vessel, iii. 292
- Counsellor, pleasant anecdote of one, iii. 303
- Counsels depend upon fortune, i. 376—Counsel's strength consists in time, iii. 14—Counsels ought not to be judged of by events, ib.
- Country, native, what attaches men to theirs, i. 121—Abandoned for the enjoyment of another air, iii. 243—Country-gentlemen, in France, their condition, i. 349
- Courage, reputation, and glory, as magnificent in the cabinet as the camp, i. 140—Damped by science, 160—What it is mistaken for, ii. 530
- Courser accustomed to the war, ii. 104
- Court, the practices of, serve as a rule to the French nation, i. 354
- Courtesy and manners, i. 54
- Courtiers mix with none but men of their own sort, iii. 254
- Covetousness, whence it proceeds, i. 327—Ungrateful, iii. 142
- Cowardice, how punished, i. 57, 58—Evades the blow of fortune, 456, 457, 459—Is the mother of cruelty, ii. 400, &c.
- Cowards naturally cruel and bloody, ii. 400
- Cramp-fish's wonderful quality of benumbing, ii. 85

# INDEX.

- Cranaus's method of mixing wine with water, iii. 413  
 Crassus, how he punished an engineer for not following his direction, i. 62  
 Crates's answer to one who asked him how long it was his duty to philosophize, i. 147—His receipt against love, ii. 127—His affectation of poverty, iii. 209  
 Creation of the world, ii. 243  
 Creatures esteemed by their proper qualities, i. 340  
 Credulity a mark of simplicity, i. 209  
 Cremutius, seeing his books burnt, starved himself, i. 528  
 Cretans, their imprecation against those they hated, i. 120—Reduced to drink the urine of horses, 385  
 Criminals dissected alive by surgeons, ii. 390—Condemned to execute themselves, 538, 539—Most cruel treatment of them, iii. 46—Left to choose in what manner they would be put to death, 252  
 Crinas, of Marseilles, his physics, ii. 505  
 Cripples, an old proverb about them, iii. 317  
 Crocodile and wren, ii. 101  
 Cræsus's barbarity, ii. 411, 412  
 Cross adored for the god of rain, ii. 243  
 Crossicius's wife turned into a man, i. 95  
 Crucifixes, ii. 154  
 Cruel men naturally cowards, ii. 400  
 Cruelties to children at colleges, i. 191—Horrid examples of, 242, 251—In domestic wars, whence they proceed, ii. 408—Of tyrants, ib. 410  
 Cruelty, chapter of, ii. 20, &c.—The extreme of all vices, 32—Instances of extreme cruelty, 36—An indication of it, 224—Has its origin in cowardice, 400  
 Crying of infants, common with most other animals, ii. 68  
 Cryllus, his valiant death, iii. 42  
 Ctesiphon's folly in attempting to kick with his mule, iii. 393  
 Cuckolding by the heathen gods, ii. 182  
 Cuckoldom, not frightful to many people, i. 326  
 Cuckoldry, the reproach of it silenced, ii. 341—Among the ancients, iii. 81—A character indelible, 92—Frequent, but not to be divulged, 93—Of the emperor Claudius, by his wife Messalina, 95  
 Cuckolds pitied, not disesteemed for it, iii. 92  
 Cup-bearers formerly retained by men of quality, i. 392  
 Curiosity, with which youth ought to be inspired, i. 177—Greedy for news, 473—Natural and original evil in a man, ii. 129—Curiosity of knowing, a scourge to men, 327—Pernicious to women, iii. 91—Increased by philosophical inquisitions, 369  
 Curtains of the amphitheatre, of purple and needle-work, iii. 146  
 Custom, its force, i. 109, 120—Stupifies our senses, 110—Divers customs of several nations, respecting marriage, &c. 113 to 120—Is the foundation of many things much authorized in the world, 123—Its fantasticalness in dress, 124—The custom of wearing clothes, 271—Of gentlemen vicious and unmanly, 526—Benumbs our senses to the sufferance of evils, iii. 232—A second nature,



## I N D E X.

- 285—Powerful over man's life, 379—Of different countries contrary, *ib.*  
 Customs, ancient, view of, i. 388 to 394  
 Cuttle-fish, how it angles for the small fry, ii. 75  
 Cyneas, his attempt to check the ambition of Pyrrhus, i. 352  
 Cynic philosophers, an impudent sect, ii. 259  
 Cyppus, how he became a cuckold, i. 95  
 Cyrus, his reverence for religion, i. 17—Lashed at school, and for what, 158—Was a great master of horsemanship, 384—Valued himself on his being able to drink more than his brother, 442—His bounty reproached, but proposed as a lesson to other kings, iii. 142—His precaution against the charms of his fair prisoner Panthea, 294

## D.

- DÆMON of Socrates, i. 49, 50  
 Damascus, gardens of, untouched by the soldiers of Selim, iii. 329  
 Damindas's gallant answer to one who threatened the Lacedæmonians with Philip's power, i. 452  
 Dancing practised by Epaminondas, iii. 420  
 Dandamys, an Indian sage, his censure of the lives of Socrates, Pythagoras, and Diogenes, ii. 533, 534  
 Dangers, common, fright none but mean hearts, iii. 402, 403  
 Darius's proposal to the Greeks and Indians, i. 121  
 Dashing wine, a Roman custom, i. 394  
 Daughters, the fault of their education, iii. 73—Naturally inclined to the passion of love, 73, 74  
 David, king, his Psalms, inspired by the Holy Ghost, i. 417  
 Day of death determines all the foregoing years, i. 68—Day of judgment, ii.  
 Dead men treated as being alive, i. 14—Dead bodies boiled, pounded, and drank with wine, 116  
 Deaf-born, why dumb, ii. 70  
 Death, sudden, caused by grief, i. 8—Discharges men of all obligations, 31—No man's happiness to be judged of before his death, 66—Deaths of celebrated personages, 67—The day of death the only criterion to judge past years by, 68—Instances, 69—The study of philosophy a preparation for death, 70—Contempt of death, 72—Unavoidable, 73—The end of our race, *ib.*—A harsh word to the Romans, 74—Hath many ways to surprise men, 75—Remembrance of, profitable to men, 77, 79—The best, 78—Image of, presented by the Egyptians to the company after their feasts, 78, 83—Arguments against the fear of, 86—Part of the constitution of the universe, 87—Cannot concern us either living or dead, 90—Appears less dreadful in the field of battle than in our houses, 92—Preferred to a continual trouble, 143, 144—What it is; several opinions concerning the same, 309—Prevented or hastened, *ib.*—Shameful, endured with great courage, and even pleasantry, instances, 310—Fondly coveted, 311—Constantly looked in the face, is voluntarily sought after, 314—

# INDEX.

- Frightful to some people, bantered by others, 315—How felt, 316—Preferred to slavery and a wretched life, 452, 461, 464—A recipe for all evils, 453—Its certainty, *ib.*—Depends upon the will, 454—Voluntary, judged best by some of the philosophers, but forbidden by God, 455—Sought after in extremity, 462—Desired out of hope of a greater good, 469—Voluntary, regulated by governments, 470—Courageous, of a lady, 471—How it may be tried what it is, 482—Its agonies, whether painful, 486—Ought to hold proportion with the life before it, *ii.* 26—Its horror dispelled by the promises of everlasting happiness, 50—The last remedy for trouble, 126, 127—What it is, 172, 173—Miserable, a sign of it, 224—Given for a reward, 248—Of another, how to judge of it, 287—Considered as a very great thing, 288—How felt, 290, 291—Voluntary, and effeminate, 290, 293, 294—Wished for, 295—Useful, laudable, though not attainable, 383—Denounced by officers to persons of quality condemned by the Roman emperors, 471, 472—Generally and particularly considered, *iii.* 40, 41—Familiarized by Socrates, 40—Not much thought of in a battle or duel, 41—How diverted from men's thoughts, 42—Preferred to banishment by Socrates, 236—Quiet and solitary, preferred, 243—Of several forms and qualities, 251, 252—The manner of, left to the choice of criminals, *ib.*—Whether it ought to be prepared for, 340—Contagious, not the worst sort, 336—Ought not to be premeditated, 341, 342—The most happy, which, *ib.*—A thing to be desired, and not to be dreaded, 344—Is more glorious in a battle than in a bed, 403
- Deaths, rash, fatal, *i.* 460
- Deceit and cunning in war hated by the Achaians, *i.* 25—Allowed in war, 26—Ought to be corrected in the greenest years, 111, 112
- Decii, both the father and the son, *ii.* 166
- Decorum, external, requisite in youth, *i.* 190, 191
- Decrepitude of the world, *iii.* 148—A solitary quality, 248
- Defeats, some more meritorious than victories, *i.* 255
- Defence, obstinate, of a place, punished, *i.* 55
- Deformity, *ii.* 106—Clothing a beautiful soul, *iii.* 349
- Deifications, and their juggling, *ii.* 158, 178
- Deliberation very troublesome to Montaigne, *ii.* 340—Requisite before engaging in affairs, *iii.* 297
- Delos fixed for Latona's lying-in, *ii.* 102, 103
- Deluges have caused great alterations in the habitable world, *i.* 243
- Demades's sentence upon an undertaker of funerals, *i.* 108
- Demerit ought not to be pronounced upon a man because of ill success, *i.* 262
- Demetrius's heavy armour, *i.* 530
- Democracy, *i.* 19, 121
- Democritus would not stop at the fourth glass, *iii.* 413
- Democritus's laughing countenance, *i.* 397—His extravagant preface to one of his books, *ii.* 115, 116—Met death, 127—His fondness for inquiring into natural philosophy, 149—His wild opinion of the Deity, 155—Said to have put out his own eyes, 274
- Demosthenes, the general, his suicide, *ii.* 291

# INDEX.

- Denisot, the poet, the anagram of his name, i. 366  
 Dependence upon princes, i. 176  
 Dependency, its disagreeable effects, iii. 225  
 Deserters punished with death by the Romans, i. 57, 58  
 Desire of gathering riches has no limits, i. 329—Impetuous, throws the mind into disorder, iii. 284  
 Desires of man, their inconstancy, ii. 246—Augmented by the difficulty of obtaining them, 297—Grow young again, 413—Ought to be mortified by age, 415—Ought to be circumscribed, iii. 287  
 Destiny, ii. 169, 177  
 Destriers, horses of service so called, i. 376  
 Devotion mixed with an execrable life, i. 416—Of the heathens, 420—Full of passions, ii. 49—Easy to counterfeit, iii. 12—Why so fervent in those who are going to die on a scaffold, 40—Without conscience, does not satisfy the gods, 352  
 Dexterity of riders on horseback, i. 387, 388—Of a man throwing a grain of millet through the eye of a needle, 407  
 Diagoras's saying to those who showed him the pictures of some who had escaped a shipwreck, i. 48, 49  
 Diagoras, the atheist, ii. 157  
 Dialogues of Plato, ii. 11  
 Dicæarchus's opinion of the soul, ii. 198  
 Difference between man and man, i. 339  
 Difficulty gives all things their estimation, ii. 297, &c.  
 Dignities often distributed by fortune, iii. 181—Conferred upon ancient men, 287  
 Dinner despised among the ancients, iii. 413—Judged more wholesome than suppers, ib.  
 Dioclesian's retirement to a private life, i. 351  
 Diodorus, the logician, his sudden death, i. 11  
 Diogenes, his opinion concerning men, i. 152; and see the note, 398—Why he studied philosophy, 194—How he behaved in the want of money, 226—Was a more cruel judge than Timon, 398—His churlish answer to Speusippus's good-morrow, 455—His churlish answer to his kindred who would have redeemed him from slavery, ii. 74—His impudence, 259—His affected contempt of glory, 306—What sort of wine he liked best, iii. 205—Patient of cold, 292  
 Diomedes mistaken for Dydimus, iii. 197 & Note  
 Diomedon, when condemned, prayed for his judges, i. 19  
 Dion, his unfair character of Seneca, ii. 438  
 Dionysius the tyrant, his barbarity, i. 3, see the note to page 152—How he discovered conspiracies against him, 143, 331—His poetry, ii. 328—His flatterers, iii. 164  
 Dioscorides, the inhabitants of that island Christians, i. 420  
 Discipline, military, of the Roman infantry, i. 528, 529  
 Discord, apple of, iii. 297  
 Discourse, pleasant and witty, i. 229, 230  
 Discourses of great men clouded with gravity, iii. 185—Dogmatical, prove their weakness, 314  
 Discoursing, the art of, iii. 165 to 197

# INDEX.

- Disease of the mind**, i. 288, 289
- Diseases of the mind and body cured with pain and grief**, i. 240—  
For which a man may destroy himself, 460—Caused by imagination, ii. 117, 118—Which the most painful, 489—Other causes of them, 504, 507—Of all sorts, cured by words and gestures, iii. 310—Have their courses and limits, 390—All mortal and dangerous, 395—Medicinal and wholesome, ib.—More grievous in their issue than in their operation, 398—Cannot be judged of by the urine, 400
- Dishes of meat served up according to the order of the alphabet**, i. 361
- Dismounting of cavalry in battle**, i. 379
- Disorders of the mind, how cured**, iii. 39
- Disputation, what makes it valuable**, iii. 174
- Disputes, the bad consequence of those that are ill conducted**, iii. 171—Should be punished as verbal crimes, 172—Endless, for most part about words, 364
- Dissimulation mortally hated by Montaigne**, ii. 344
- Distempers contracted by mere imagination**, i. 104
- Diversion should be allowed to youth**, i. 190—Observations on, iii. 36 to 50—Usefully administered by way of comfort, 36—Practised with success in war, 37, 38—Of the mind, a good method to cure its disorders, 39—Practised against revenge, 43; and love, ib.—A way of dissipating common reports, 45—Diversion of grief, 48
- Diversions, military**, iii. 37, 38
- Divination, strange origin of the art of**, i. 47—Of things to come, from dreams, iii. 405
- Divine and philosopher, whether it be consistent that they should write history**, i. 106
- Divine Being, known by his visible works**, ii. 53—His care of human affairs denied by the Epicureans, 234—The natural way of approaching him, 235
- Diviners punished when found false**, i. 251
- Divinity and philosophy dictate in every thing**, i. 237—Queen and regent, 421—Imprinted on the fabric of the world, ii. 53—Too curious an inquiry into it censured, 130—What, according to the ancient philosophers, 155—Absurdly attributed to virtues and vices, 159
- Divisions in France**, iii. 265
- Divorces considered**, ii. 302
- Dog of Xanthippus buried**, ii. 41—That animal revered as a king by some nations, 62—One, that feigned itself dead, 77—Another, that got oil out of a jar, 80—Instance of an Indian dog's magnanimity, 102
- Dogs, their different manners of barking**, ii. 63—Motions in finding out the ways, 76—Capable of reason, ib.—Leading blind men, 77—Trained to fight in armies, 82—More faithful than men, 88, 96—Revenging the death of their masters, ib.—Discovery of a thief, ib.—Dream, 105—Draw the coach of Heliogabalus, iii. 137

## I N D E X.

- Dogmatists**, their profession, ii. 142  
**Doing and saying** should go together, ii. 429  
**Domestic affairs** very troublesome, iii. 203  
**Domestics**, anger towards them, rules for, ii. 435  
**Dominion** begets contempt, ii. 325  
**Domitius's cowardice**, ii. 291  
**Double-dealers**, how far useful, ii. 530  
**Doublets**, the belly-pieces of, as high as the breast, i. 388  
**Doubt** better than assurance in things hard to be proved, iii. 315  
**Dowry**, great, ruin of families, i. 516  
**Dragon** in love with a maid, ii. 90  
**Dream** of Apollodorus, i. 477  
**Dreams** full of agitations, iii. 405—True interpreters of inclinations, ib.  
**Dress**, fantastical customs observed in, i. 12  
**Dreux**, battle of, i. 359  
**Drink** of the Americans, i. 249  
**Drinking**, a debauch in use amongst the best governed nations, i. 442, &c.—The last pleasure a man can enjoy, 446—A gentleman a whole year without it, iii. 381—How far allowed, 413  
**Drugs**, fragrant, mixed for sauces, i. 413—Mysterious in their choice and application, ii. 503—On what foundation the physicians pretend to know their virtue, 518—Drugs and poisons the worst sort of homicides, iii. 314  
**Drunkennes**, general reflections on, i. 438 to 452—Is a great and brutish vice, 439—Carried to a high and dead degree, 441—Amongst the ancients, 442, &c.—A vice less malicious and hurtful than others, 443—Recommended once a month, ib.—Indulged to the slaves by Lycurgus, to make the people more in love with temperance, ii. 390  
**Drusus's answer** to an architect who offered to contrive his house so that it should not be overlooked, iii. 7  
**Duels** common in the kingdom of Narsingua, ii. 402—Considered, 402, &c.  
**Duras**, Madam de, Montaigne's letter to her, ii. 520, &c.  
**Dwarfs** at the tables of princes, ii. 244  
**Dydimus**, author of several tracts on grammar, iii. 197; and see the note  
**Dying**, resolution of, how it ought to be digested, i. 83—In the nick of time, 266—With a voluntary resolution, 309—Of old-age very rare, 426—Through fear of death, 457—Dying persons' eyes closed by their nearest relations, iii. 252

## E.

- EARS**, the longest, reckoned the most beautiful, ii. 106—Dangerous organs, 273—Their passage stopped, 278—Hairy, of some animals, ib.  
**Earth**, vast difference between the distant parts of it, ii. 171  
**Eating**, natural, and without instruction, ii. 68—A sight hateful to some nations, iii. 106—Eating-schools at Rome, 416

## INDEX.

- Edict of January, 1562, famous by the civil wars, i. 216**  
**Education of children, the subject treated at large, i. 161 to 208—**  
     Is the greatest difficulty of human science, 166—Of Montaigne, 203, 204, 205—Violence in it condemned, 505—Its end, ii. 361  
**Edward the First, king of England; why he required his son to carry his bones to fight the Scots, i. 15**  
**Edward the Third, king of England, why he would not send succours to his son at the battle of Cressy, i. 337—His saying of Charles the Fifth, 382—His politics, 389**  
**Edward the Black Prince, his rage against the Limosins, how appeased, i. 1**  
**Effects, strange, produced by imagination, i. 96—The same, produced by two opposite causes, 407**  
**Eggs distinguished one from another, iii. 358**  
**Egypt, the oath of its judges, ii. 535**  
**Egyptians' skulls, why harder than those of the Persians, i. 273—Their vain sacrifice, ii. 35, 36—Regard to beasts, 40—Their impudent precaution about their gods, 159**  
**Election of two indifferent things, whence it proceeds, ii. 296—Referred to fortune and chance, 353**  
**Elephant, discovering the cheat of his keeper, ii. 80—Rival to Aristophanes, 89—One given as the price of a woman's prostitution, iii. 91**  
**Elephants taught to dance to music, ii. 79—Their subtlety and penetration, 80—Constituted the greatest force of the armies in the East, 81—Whether they have any sentiments of religion? considered, 83—Instance of the repentance of an elephant, 102**  
**Eloquence of the Athenians, Lacedæmonians, and Cretans, i. 202—Its effects, and when it flourished most at Rome, 400—Of Cicero, ii. 12—True, what constitutes it, iii. 97**  
**Emanuel, king of Portugal, his cruel edict against the Jews, i. 312**  
**Embraces of the Cynics in public, ii. 259**  
**Emonez, a girl of Chios, her question to the philosopher Arcesilius, iii. 129**  
**Emotions animate preachers towards belief, ii. 233**  
**Emperor, in what posture he should die, ii. 381**  
**Emperors obnoxious to passions, i. 343—Roman, their excessive prodigality, iii. 143, &c.**  
**Empire of Constantinople, by whom founded, i. 266—Roman, its divers forms, iii. 217, 218**  
**Employment, the most painful, iii. 161—The most pleasant to every one, 210—Does not corrupt an honest man, 237, 238**  
**Employments for a sedentary life, i. 294—For a retired life, 295**  
**Empyrics, i. 454**  
**Enchantments and visions, why so much credited, i. 96**  
**Enemy, vanquished, whether to be pursued to extremity, i. 368—Whether he should be insulted by the victorious soldiers, 371—Whether best to fall upon an enemy at once, or wait for an attack, 373—Whether a prince had better tarry for his enemy's approach, or go and attack him in his own dominions, 374**

## I N D E X.

- Engines made by Archimedes, i. 147—Those of Dionysius's invention, 382
- Enjoyment is not a sufficient testimony of a woman's affection, iii. 111
- Enjoyments are not alike, iii. 111
- Enmity suppressed by pity, i. 2
- Enquiry, office of, projected, i. 269
- Ensign, one remarkably fearful, i. 63
- Entelechia, ii. 199
- Enterprizes, military, much under the control of fortune, i. 137
- Enthusiasm sometimes transports a man beyond himself, i. 451
- Epaminondas, his noble defence against an accusation by the Thebans, i. 3—Glorious verse in his praise, 367—His fondness for his two famous victories, 525—Esteemed the most excellent of three great men, ii. 483—Had in great honour among the Greeks, 484—His knowledge; his manners, *ib.*—His consummate and uniform virtue, *ib.*—His obstinate poverty, *ib.*—His humanity, 485—Placed in the first rank of excellent men, 542—His delicacy in the article of justice, *ib.*—His humanity, *ib.*—His great virtues, 543—His custom of sacrificing to the Muses when he went to war, *ib.*—His magnanimity, 544—His cheerful death, iii. 42—Delighted in dancing, singing, and similar recreations, 420
- Ephori, one of them cut the two strings of Phrynis's music, i. 125
- Epicharis's death on the rack, ii. 441
- Epicurean sect, ii. 21, 234
- Epicurus, his writings free from quotations, i. 163—He and Seneca set in opposition to Pliny and Cicero, 304—Which he would have preferred, his books or children, 524—His life different from his doctrines, ii. 30—His insensibility, 122—His gods, 157—His atoms, 202—Was fond of glory, 307—His letter to Hermachus, *ib.*—How little he lived upon, iii. 285—Why he fasted, 411
- Epigram of the emperor Augustus, ii. 93
- Epirotes fled alive, ii. 411
- Epistles, familiar, of Cicero and Pliny, why published, i. 301
- Epistolary style of Montaigne, i. 305
- Epitomizing of books, a foolish undertaking without honour to the undertaker, iii. 191
- Equality of manners, i. 432—Should be maintained amongst men in their intercourse with one another, iii. 24
- Equity, remarks on, ii. 429
- Erasmus, a remarkable passage in his book called *Lingua*, i. 41, Note—Full of adages and apophthegms, iii. 9
- Eringo broth taken by Montaigne to oblige the ladies, iii. 394
- Eros, a slave of Cicero, enfranchised by him, i. 305
- Error and superstition, daughters of pride, ii. 129
- Errors of opinions, i. 409
- Escalin, Anthony, not so much known by that name, i. 366 & Note—His extraordinary rise, *ib.*
- Essays of Montaigne, their language, i. 303—Their tendency, iii. 377

# INDEX.

- Essenians, how they lived without the use of women, iii. 105
- Estates, the names of, assumed, in France, by the proprietors, i. 363—The wisest distribution of them before death, 516, 517
- Esteem not due to bad princes, i. 13—Of the people to be courted, ii. 320—Vulgar and common, seldom hits right, iii. 223
- Estimation not due to little performances, iii. 303
- Estissac, Madam de, letter to her from Montaigne, concerning the affection of parents to their children, i. 499 to 525—Her love to her children, 500
- Eternal, what it is, ii. 282, 283
- Eternity of God, ii. 283
- Eudamidas, his saying to a philosopher, talking of war, ii. 430
- Eudoxus's earnest wish to be close to the sun, ii. 150
- Eumenes, his notable answer to Antigonus, i. 26, 27—Betrayed by his own soldiers, ii. 537
- Events, different, from the same counsel, i. 132, &c.—In war, for the most part, depend upon fortune, 375—Of particular assignation attributed to God, ii. 177—Succeeding contrary to opinions, iii. 14—Poor testimony of men's worth and parts, 184—Often effects of good fortune, ib.
- Evil, what it is, how it concerns men, i. 308—The oldest, the most supportable, iii. 216
- Evils, how they ought to be endured, iii. 388, 389—Have their periods limited, 390—Mixed with good in life, 392
- Examples strange and scholastic, iii. 381, 382
- Excellent men and women, ii. 466 to 486
- Excess, sometimes allowable, i. 193—Even in lawful pleasures, to be condemned, 240
- Excuses and satisfactions scandalous, iii. 299
- Executioner outlived by the person whom he had executed, i. 460
- Executions, exceeding simple death, perfect cruelty, ii. 34—Whet the edge of vices, 302
- Exercise, fit for youth, i. 190, 191—Wherein men are to proceed to the utmost limits of pleasure, 297—Of riding recommended, 378—Makes things familiar, 481
- Exhortation to soldiers before a battle of great importance, ii. 458
- Expenses, how regulated by Montaigne, i. 331—Excessive, of princes, a testimony of pusillanimity, iii. 137—How they might be profitably laid out, 138—Of the Roman emperors at the public spectacles, ill-judged, 143—How domestic expenses ought to be managed, 210, 211
- Experience, guided by chance, not to be credited, ii. 507—Considerations on, iii. 357 to 431—Not a sure means to inform us of the truth of things, 358—Of every man sufficient to make him wise, 370—Rules reason in the art of physic, 377
- Extremes, hurtful to virtue, i. 235—Things kept up by, 407
- Eye, real, lost, by counterfeiting the loss of one, ii. 395, 396
- Eyes of a philosopher put out by him, because they should not corrupt his mind, ii. 274—Of animals, of divers colours, and their effects, 277—Of dying persons closed by their nearest relations, iii. 244—Beautiful, menacing a dangerous and malignant nature, 351



# INDEX.

## F.

- FACES**, some happy, some unhappy, iii. 351—Of men, like or unlike, 365
- Facility** of people in suffering themselves to be imposed upon by the leaders of a party, iii. 290
- Facts**, writers merely of, how far estimable, ii. 15
- Faggot-maker** thought to have a genius for the mathematics, ii. 351, 352
- Failings**, the reasons all men have to bear with one another, iii. 168, 177, &c.
- Fainting**, i. 484, 485—Not very dreadful, iii. 404
- Faintness** from frigidity, i. 408
- Faith** of military men very uncertain, i. 28—Wherein faith differs from human reason, &c. ii. 44—Its powerful operation, 45—Is the pure gift of God, 132—Breach of, odious, 344—Pledged, should never give way to private advantage, 541
- Falling-sickness** corrected by Cæsar, iii. 385
- Fame** bought at a great rate, iii. 303
- Familiarity** between parents and children, i. 511, 514—Necessary to be observed towards every body, iii. 23—With whom it should be sought, 28
- Families** of obscure extraction, the most proper for falsification, i. 363, 364—Ruined by a large jointure, 516
- Family**, excellent state of, according to Bias, iii. 6. 7—The government of, troublesome, and little understood by Montaigne, 201, 202—The most useful accomplishment in a mother of a family, 238
- Fancy**, frivolous and extravagant, suitable to human wit, iii. 168
- Farwells**, affections in, iii. 60
- Fashion**, of clothes, why to be followed by men of sense, i. 124—Of some nations, of going naked, 271—Of the French court, rules the whole kingdom, 354—Fatal to youth, 355—Inconstancy of, 389
- Fashions** of foreigners abominated, iii. 253
- Fasting** of Epicurus, to what end, iii. 411
- Father**, ought to be called so by his children, i. 510
- Fathers**, not concerned at the death of their children, i. 324—Ought to admit their children to a share of their substance, 503—Ought not to hoard up their money under the idea of gaining the affections of their children, 504—How they may gain the love and respect of their children, ib. & 506—Ought to maintain and advance their children, 507—Ought to make themselves familiar with their children, when they are capable of it, 511, 514—Hard-heartedness of, 516
- Fatua**, Faunus's wife, would see no man after marriage, iii. 89
- Faults** of great men should rather be concealed than those of little ones, i. 348
- Faustina's** medals, ii. 178
- Favorinus**, why he suffered himself to be foiled in a grammatical dispute by the emperor Adrian, iii. 164, 165
- Favour** of princes, by whom despised, iii. 295

## I N D E X.

- Fear, its strange effects**, i. 63—Is the strongest of all passions, *ib.*  
 —Of an ensign, and another gentleman, *ib.*—Opposite effects produced by it, 64—Adds wings to the heels, *ib.*—Sometimes fetters men, *ib.*—Sometimes acts as an incentive to valour, *ib.*—Supersedes all other passions, 65—Is more insupportable than death itself, *ib.*—Of a fall, more insupportable than the fall itself, ii. 340—Whence fear upon the waters proceeds, iii. 133
- Feast of the king of Tunis**, i. 413
- Features**, elegant, scarified for the sake of continency, ii. 453
- Feeding upon human flesh**, i. 118
- Feet performing the service of hands**, i. 112
- Felicity of men's lives depends upon the tranquillity of their spirits**, i. 68—Human felicity, according to Montaigne's opinion, iii. 17
- Fencers**, ii. 407
- Fencing-art useful to its ends**, ii. 405—Injurious to valour, 406—Contrary to the manner of fighting in battle, 407
- Fez, king of**, his victory in sickness, ii. 384
- Fidelity in love**, Montaigne's, iii. 121
- Fighting on horseback**, the inconvenience of, i. 379
- Fire sent for a new-year's gift**, i. 116
- Fires made on the outside**, and at the foot of the houses among the Romans, iii. 380
- Firmness of a prince riding a rough horse**, i. 388
- Fish kept in pools in their rooms by the ancients**, i. 392—Its pre-eminence over flesh, *ib.*—Account of a fish that chews, ii. 100—A food easy of digestion, iii. 411
- Flatterers scorned**, i. 344—Corrupt kings, iii. 376
- Flavius's constancy at his execution**, iii. 41
- Flight, in war**, granted by several nations, i. 51—Without affright and astonishment, iii. 134—Necessary, from evils that men cannot stand against, 293, 294
- Flights, poetic**, under the control of fortune, i. 137
- Floods**, strange alterations caused by, i. 243
- Flora, the famous courtesan**, her amour with Pompey, ii. 298—Her other amours, iii. 31
- Florentines proclaimed war by the tolling of a bell**, i. 26
- Foix, count de**, how he gained early intelligence of any important transactions, i. 212
- Foix, lady Diana de**, Montaigne's address to her on the education of children, i. 161 to 208
- Foix, counts de**, their writings, i. 167
- Follies of others**, not tolerated by the great, iii. 176
- Folly, what it is**, i. 451—For a man to venture what he has, in hopes of increasing it, ii. 341—Not to be cured by admonition, iii. 189
- Fondness and pernicious education by mothers**, i. 172
- Fool of the duke of Florence**, his wise answer to his master, i. 272, 273—In what a fool is most disgusting, iii. 189
- Foolish discourse**, what gives weight to it, iii. 178
- Fools never content**, i. 12
- Footstool**, the office of one performed by the Syrian women, ii. 73

# INDEX.

- Force cannot effect what reason and prudence can do, i. 505  
 Foresight of good and ill, iii. 134  
 Forgetting, not in our power, ii. 123, &c.  
 Form of man's being, depends upon the climate and soil, ii. 245  
 Formula of faith established by the ancients, i. 419  
 Fornication, according to Arcesiläus, ii. 256  
 Fortitude, what it is, i. 51; ii. 131—Of a Spanish peasant, 441  
 Fortune, has a great share in many arts, i. 137—Is oftentimes rational, 265, &c.—Its inconstancy, ib.—Sometimes seems to play upon men, 266—Emulates the miracles of men, ib.—Sometimes plays the physician, 267—Does what art cannot do, ib.—Directs the counsels of men, ib.—Surpasses the rules of common prudence, 269—Its benefits, how they ought to be relished, 345—Favours the executions of the most simple men, iii. 182  
 Foundation of Notre Dame la grande de Poitiers, i. 362  
 Foxes judging of the thickness of the ice by the faculty of hearing, ii. 72  
 France, Antarctic, i. 243  
 Francis, marquis de Saluzzo, his treachery to the king of France, i. 45  
 Francis, duke of Brittany, what learning he thought enough for a wife, i. 155  
 Francis the First, king of France, caught an ambassador in a lie, i. 39—Why he chose to wait for Charles the Fifth, to attack him in his own dominions, 374—Brought learning into esteem, ii. 41  
 Francisco Taverna, nonplussed by king Francis, i. 39  
 Frances, whence they came, ii. 389  
 Franget, Mons. de, governor, punished for cowardice, i. 58  
 French gentlemen's incredible bravery, i. 1, 2—Wisdom, anciently proverbial, but of no continuance, 189—Manners and customs, 388—Very changeable in their fashions, ib.—Held valour as the chief virtue, 498—Accoutrements for war, ancient and modern, 527—Language, ii. 332—Manners corrupted, 355—Their indiscretion in foreign countries, 404, 405—Scribblers and language, iii. 98, 99—Gentlemen have small legs, 318—Armies abound with foreigners, 327—Soldiers, when without order and discipline, 328—Laws, 368  
 Frenchmen, what the American savages thought of them, i. 258—Compared to monkeys, ii. 342  
 Friars of Florence who would submit their different opinions to a fiery trial, ii. 422  
 Friend, how useful and necessary, iii. 247  
 Friends, all things common among them, i. 225—More faithful than mercenary men, iii. 143—Taking leave one of another unpleasant, 243  
 Friendship, the subject treated at large, i. 215 to 233—Is the most perfect benefit of society, 217—Of several kinds, ib.—Incompatible with some connections, ib.—Begot by voluntary liberty, 218—Against nature, 220—Its true character, 222—True and perfect, 223—Common and ordinary, 225—Allows community of goods, ib.—Rare example of, 226—Perfect friendship admits no

## I N D E X.

- division, 227—Dissolves all other obligations, 228—Private, condemned for the public good, ii. 544—One, single and perfect, preferred before all others, iii. 23—Scarce, between husbands and wives, 68, 69—That flatters itself, 169—Civilized and artificial, 170—Purely of our own acquiring ought to be preferred before all others, 235—Conjugal, grows warm by absence, 238—Its true aim, 241—True and false, 281—Sound and regular, *ib.*—Singular, 375
- Friendships are scarce, i. 228
- Froissart, his story of the count de Foix's familiar spirit censured, i. 212—His character, ii. 15
- Frosts, sharp, at the mouth of the lake Mæotis, i. 274
- Frugality of the kings of France, iii. 138
- Fruition and possession principally appertain to the imagination, iii. 239
- Fruits eaten after dinner, i. 391
- Fruit-trees buried in the winter, i. 275
- Fulk, count of Anjou, his journey to Jerusalem, to be lashed, i. 324
- Fulvius, his wife's decent death, i. 466—His inhumanity, 467
- Funerals, not to be too magnificent, nor too mean, i. 18—An undertaker of, condemned by Demades, 108—Of the Scythian kings, ii. 74
- Fury and sleep, two ways to enter into the cabinet of the gods, ii. 235
- Futurity, mankind too curious after it, i. 11, 12

## G.

- GALEITY of reflection necessary in old age, iii. 50
- Galba, a saying of that emperor, misplaced to another's account, iii. 198
- Galba, another of that name, who dissembled sleeping, to favour Mecænas's amour with his wife, iii. 90—His amours, 128, 129
- Gallio, why recalled to Rome from exile, i. 240
- Gallus Vibius, how he became a madman, i. 94
- Games of divers sorts, ii. 244—Of chance, why left off by Montaigne, iii. 292
- Gaming, the conduct required in it, iii. 284
- Garden, magnificent, of the king of Mexico, iii. 149
- Gascons, their remarkable horses, i. 383—Generally addicted to stealing, 504—Their language, ii. 332—Noted for obstinacy, 442
- Gauls held missile arms in abomination, i. 382—Never permitted their sons to present themselves before them, till they came to bear arms, 515, 516—Slenderly clad, ii. 67
- Geese nourished with public care, ii. 40
- Generals, changing their habit upon the point of an engagement, i. 372—Richly clothed in a battle, *ib.*—Obscurely armed in war, 373
- Genius, poverty of, how discovered, i. 163
- Gentlemen's duty towards those that come to visit them, i. 53—The condition of country-gentlemen in France, 349

# INDEX.

- Geographers of Montaigne's time**, ii. 240, 241  
**Geometrical demonstrations**, ii. 240, 241  
**Geometry**, how far useful, ii. 187  
**German, Mary**, feigned to have been turned into a man, i. 96  
**Germans, drunk**, performing their duty, i. 441—**Great drinkers**, 443—**Loggerheads**, ii. 28  
**Gervase, St.**, his relics said to have recovered the lost sight of a child, i. 213  
**Geta, emperor**, his dishes served up to table alphabetically, i. 361  
**Getae**, their manner of sending deputies to their god, ii. 165  
**Giants**, iii. 156  
**Gifts**, prohibited between man and wife, i. 226—**Of kings**, how they ought to be bestowed, iii. 143  
**Gilippus**, undeserving of the character of a great man, i. 372, *Note*  
**Giraldus, Lilius**, his death, i. 270  
**Gladiators, Thracian**, their oath, ii. 73—**Roman gladiators**, 391  
**Glasquin, Bertrand**, how honoured after his death, i. 14—**His different names**, 365, *Note*  
**Glasses**, magnifying, ii. 280  
**Glory**, vain, and curiosity, scourges of the mind, i. 214, 335—**Inconsistent with repose**, 298—**Due to God alone**, ii. 305—**What it is**, *ib.*—**Contemned by certain philosophers**, 306—**Desired for the profit it brings along with it**, *ib.*—**To be desired for itself**, 308—**Recorded in books**, 319—**The shortest way to it**, iii. 8  
**Glosses upon books only augment doubts**, iii. 361  
**Goats trained up to give suet to children**, i. 520, 521—**Balls found in the paunch of one**, ii. 515  
**God**, his sacred name ought not to be taken in vain, i. 414, 422—**Purity of soul requisite in praying to Him**, 415—**Assists faith and religion**, not the passions of men, ii. 47, 48—**Ought to be loved above all things**, 49—**His grace forms our reason**, 54—**Equally exempt from virtue and vice**, 131—**Has made foolish the wisdom of the world**, 132—**Unknown**, adored at Athens, 153—**The Pagans' idea of Him**, *ib.*—**The folly of pretending to know Him**, by comparing him with man, 164—**His power and perfections above man's conceptions**, 168—**His power not to be limited by the rules of our speech**, 174—**Can alone can be said to subsist continually**, 283—**How his name may be increased**, 305  
**God made Man**, adored as such, ii. 244  
**Gods**, of the poets, favouring the deliverance of persons suffering under a languishing death, i. 487—**Lascivious**, ii. 181—**Partakers of men's quarrels**, 184—**Banished by the Caunians**, *ib.*—**Their power limited**, 185—**Of mean power; terrestrial**, *ib.*; **mortal**, 186—**Of the heathens**, patrons of governments, 321—**Obnoxious to passions**, iii. 163  
**Gold** should rather be despised by a prince than his subject, i. 353—**Hoarded together for ornament and show**, iii. 156  
**Golden age**, i. 218  
**Good and evil**, the Pythagorean doctrine of, i. 38—**The basis of our opinion respecting**, 308—**Imaginary**, of men, ii. 109—**Real**, of beasts, 110—**What is the greatest**, 118—**Moral**, confounded with

## I N D E X.

- evil in man, 379—Never sent absolutely pure to men, iii. 363—  
Sovereign of the Academics and Peripatetics, 427
- Good man, not one of a thousand, i. 285—Good men free from  
all injuries, 290
- Good-nature, remarks concerning, ii. 429
- Goodness in necessity, iii. 268
- Goods of fortune despised, i. 293—Equally evil to the unjust, 346  
—Of this world, ii. 180—Of the mind seem fruitless to men, if  
not produced to the view of others, iii. 211
- Goose in love with a child, ii. 90
- Government, every nation contented with that which it is used to,  
i. 121—A defect in, 269—Anacharsis's notion of it, 352—Of a  
family, more troublesome than hard, iii. 201, 202—What is the  
best for every nation, 212—Civil, a mighty thing, and hard to be  
dissolved, 217—Whether violence may be committed in a coun-  
try for the sake of rectifying it, 329
- Governments obnoxious to diseases, ii. 388
- Governor, of a place, how he ought to behave himself in the time of  
a siege, i. 26—Punishment of one for his cowardice, 58—Of a  
child, how he should behave, 168, &c.—Not to be praised for  
common actions, 302
- Gournay, Mary de, her character, ii. 363
- Gourvay, mademoiselle, why she called herself Montaigne's daughter,  
i. 218
- Gout; pleasant reply of a gentleman afflicted with that disease, to  
his physicians, i. 21—What Servius did to cure it, 454—Coun-  
terfeited, became real, ii. 395
- Gozo island, i. 461
- Gracchus's prompter, ii. 276
- Grammar, six thousand books written upon it by one author, iii. 197
- Grammarians, their language, i. 402
- Grammont, madam de, letter to her, i. 233
- Grandeur of the Romans, ii. 393, &c.
- Gratitude of a lion, ii. 97—Towards the dead, iii. 270
- Great, a title given to princes, i. 103
- Great men should not be praised for common things, i. 302—Should  
not excel in things altogether unnecessary, 303—Ought to have  
their faults hidden, 318—The respect anciently paid to them, 390  
—Have no true share in the exercises of honour and valour, iii.  
161—Are not so silly oftentimes as they seem to be, 180—Gainers  
by their silence, 181
- Greatness, its inconveniency, and advantage, iii. 158, &c.—Easily  
avoided, and despised, 159—Of soul, by what particularly disco-  
vered, 422
- Grecians, happier and wiser than the Romans, i. 202—Their fa-  
mous retreat from Babylon, 275
- Greediness in eating reproved by Diogenes, iii. 415
- Greek and Latin may be taught more easily than they commonly  
are, i. 202—Taught by way of pastime, 204—Greek studied in  
old age, ii. 413

## I N D E X.

- Greeks, proposal to them and the Indians, how received, i. 121—  
 And Romans compared, ii. 443, 444  
 Greyhound's imagination, ii. 105  
 Grief, excessive, the cause of sudden death, i. 8.—Other effects of  
 it, 10—Eased by a pleasant method, iii. 48—Imprinted by coun-  
 terfeited forms, 49  
 Gudgeon and whale, ii. 100  
 Guesclin, sir Bertrand du, constable of France, uncertain way of  
 spelling his name, i. 365, and Note  
 Guests, how they ought to be chosen, according to Varro, iii. 416  
 Guevara's letters, their character, i. 384  
 Guicciardin's history, ii. 18  
 Guienne, college, where Montaigne was bred, i. 207  
 Guise, duke of, his conduct at the battle of Dreux, i. 359—Shot at,  
 ii. 424  
 Gymnastics of Plato, iii. 78  
 Gymnosophists voluntarily burn themselves, ii. 420  
 Gypsies wash their children as soon as they are born, i. 320

## II.

- HABIT, makes things familiar, i. 481, &c.  
 Hairs, pulled off in great sorrow, i. 22—Suffered to grow on one  
 side, and shaved on the other, 118—Pinched off through effe-  
 minacy and luxury, 390  
 Halbert managed by the twist of a boy's neck, i. 113  
 Halyon's marvellous qualities, ii. 102—The wonderful structure  
 of its nest, 103  
 Hands, the various things they express, ii. 63  
 Hannibal's answer to Antiochus, when he asked him how the Ro-  
 mans would like his army, i. 371  
 Happiness, of men not to be estimated before they are dead, &c. i.  
 66—Imaginary, claimed by man; the real, left to beasts, ii. 109—  
 Eternal, what must be the change of our being to qualify us for  
 it, 161  
 Harangue cannot make men valiant on a sudden, iii. 189  
 Hare, a tutor for valour, ii. 422  
 Harpaste, Seneca's wife's fool, blind, and did not know it, ii. 397  
 Heads, of the Egyptians harder than those of the Persians, i. 273—  
 Uncovered in the presence of the gods, 274—Naked in all  
 seasons, ib.  
 Health, the regimen for it, ii. 87—The best and richest good of  
 nature, 119—Attendant on stupidity and sensibility, 120—Too  
 vigorous, must be abated by art, 388—A precious thing, 495—Al-  
 tered and corrupted by physicians, 496—Altered by use of phy-  
 sic, 507—What is, iii. 377, 379, &c.—More pleasant after sick-  
 ness, 397  
 Heat, coming from the fire, makes the head heavy, iii. 380  
 Heaven, God's palace, ii. 180  
 Hedgehogs' foreknowledge of the change of the wind, ii. 85

# I N D E X.

- Hegesias's saying of death, i. 455—His disciples pined themselves to death, why, iii. 40
- Heir-at-law, deficiency of the law in regard to confirming him an adult, i. 427
- Heirs, the choice of them, i. 518
- Heliodore, bishop, his fondness for his romance, i. 522
- Heliogabalus, his death, i. 262—His design of dying delicately, ii. 290—His diabolical licentiousness, iii. 137—His coach drawn by stags, by dogs, by tigers, by naked women, ib.
- Henry the Fourth (of France), how he chose to be called by his children, i. 510
- Henry the Seventh, king of England, his treachery to the duke of Suffolk, i. 31
- Henry the Eighth, king of England, caught an ambassador in an error, i. 40
- Heptameron of the queen of Navarre, ii. 32
- Heraclotes Dionysius, ii. 117
- Heraclitus, his excuse for passing his time with boys, i. 147—His face and humour, 397—His notion of the soul, ii. 199—What Socrates thought of his writings, iii. 362
- Hercules and the sexton of his temple threw dice for a supper and a mistress, ii. 181
- Heresies animated by disputes, i. 419
- Hermachus receives the charge of Metrodorus's children from the expiring breath of Epicurus, ii. 307
- Hermogenes, a notorious thief, iii. 146, Note
- Herodotus's mason, i. 32—His notion of the polar inhabitants, 358, 359
- Heroes shedding tears, i. 149
- Hierarchy of the idol gods of the philosophers, ii. 159, 160
- Hieron's notion of kings and kingly power, i. 347, 349
- Hierophilus, his physics, ii. 504
- Hilary, St., his miracles, a mere farce, i. 212—His prayer to God for the death of his wife and daughter, 264, 265
- Hilary, St., the solitary life of a dean of, i. 510
- Himbercourt, the sieur de, how he appeased the fury of the Liegeois, iii. 38
- Hippias bantered by Socrates, i. 160
- Hippias, Eleus, why he learned to do every thing for himself, iii. 229
- Hippomanes, and his golden apples, iii. 39
- Historian, the importance of the reader's knowing his profession, i. 60—The qualities requisite in him, 245
- Historians pleasant and easy, ii. 14—Of facts, 15—The most excellent, ib.—Of the middle sort, and of Montaigne's age, ib.
- Historics, the only good ones, ii. 16
- History, whether or no it should be written by a divine and a philosopher, i. 106—The benefit of that study to youth, 177—Profitable to be read at all times, iii. 179
- Homer criticised by Montaigne, i. 345—Had but one servant, 401—The founder of all sects of philosophy, ii. 146—Reckoned the leader of all generals, 261—Preferred to the greatest geniuses,



## I N D E X.

- 477—Was a guide and teacher to Virgil, *ib.*—A perfect instructor in the knowledge of all things, 478—A counsellor in military affairs, 479
- Honest man not corrupted by the employment he exercises, *iii.* 287, 288
- Honesty and profit, considerations on, *ii.* 524, &c.—Scholastic, *iii.* 532
- Honorary rewards, considerations on, *i.* 495, to 499
- Honour and glory, not communicable, *i.* 335, &c.—Of a victory, refused, 337—The place of, at the tables of the Romans, 392—Obtained by valour, *ii.* 310—What it is, 313—Of ladies, 322
- Hope, its limits, *i.* 459—Remains as long as there is life, *ib.*—Of future glory, *ii.* 213
- Horace's language, *iii.* 97
- Horse of king Charles, *i.* 377—Of Alexander, 378—Of Cæsar, *ib.*
- Horsemanship, dexterity in, *i.* 387
- Horsemen, when they ought to dismount in a battle, *i.* 379
- Horses of service, called destriers, *i.* 376—Trained up to help their riders, *ib.*—Of the Numidians, 377—Of the Mamalukes, 378—Horses and arms taken from conquered nations, 379—Of the Gascons, 383—Of the Swedes, *ib.*—Of the Massilians, *ib.*—Fettered in the stable by the Assyrians, 384—Of Scythia, *ib.*—Valued as much as men, *ib.*—Their blood and urine used for nourishment on emergent occasions, *ib.*—Unbridled in a battle, 385—Embowelled for men to creep into their bellies, 386—Feeding upon serpents, 387—Clipped, to be led in triumph, *ib.*—Their affection to each other, *ii.* 88—Their dreams, 104
- Hospital, ranked with the best poets, *ii.* 363
- Hospitals for beasts, *ii.* 40
- Houses, where all things lay open, *i.* 118—Garrisoned, plundered sooner than others, why, *ii.* 303
- Housewifery, the best knowledge for a mother of a family, *iii.* 238
- Humanity towards beasts, *ii.* 40
- Humility and submission the parents of virtue, *ii.* 113
- Humour, singularity of, should be early corrected, *i.* 192
- Humours gathered in men's bodies, *i.* 282
- Hungary given up by Solyman, *ii.* 395
- Husbandry, a servile employment, *i.* 294, 295—In the enjoyment of pleasures, *iii.* 424
- Husbands careful of the chastity of their wives, *iii.* 79—May be too careful of it, 94
- Hyperboreans, their voluntary death, *i.* 472
- Hypocrisy decried in war, *ii.* 315
- Hyposphagma, *ii.* 277

## I.

- ICETES seeks to assassinate Timolcon, *i.* 268
- Ideas of Plato, *ii.* 150
- Idleness, its pernicious consequences, *i.* 34
- Idols cemented with the blood of little children, *ii.* 165

## INDEX.

- Ignatius and his son, their heroic deaths, i. 269
- Ignorance and wisdom have the same effect, i. 408—Of several sorts, *ib.*—A compliment on the confession of ignorance, ii. 3—Recommended by religion, 114—Its effects preferable to those of knowledge, 117—Its advantage, 128—Mother of vices, iii. 3—The mischiefs of not owning it, 312—Strong and generous, *ib.*—Its vow in point of devotion, 323—A soft pillow for a well-turned head, 370
- Ignorant, better men among them than among the learned, ii. 112, 113
- Ill-luck good for something, ii. 342
- Imagination, its power and effects, i. 93—Strange effects produced by it, 96—A pleasant remedy for curing an evil of it, 97—A distemper contracted by the mere power of it, 104—The brute-creation subject to its power, *ib.* and 105—Its effects upon pregnant women, 105—Not the privilege of men only, but also of beasts, ii. 104, &c.
- Immortality, refused by Chiron, why, i. 91
- Immortality of the soul believed by the barbarians, i. 250—The evil consequences resulting from Plato's arguments in favour of it, ii. 50—On what the opinion of it is founded, 213—The truth of it assured to us by Revelation, 215—Maintained by several philosophers, 216
- Immortalization, Alexander's fancies about it, iii. 430
- Imposture, its subject, i. 260
- Impostures, their foundation, iii. 312
- Impurity, odious to God, i. 415
- Inanimate things too much sought after by mankind for amusement, i. 22
- Incense and perfumes used in churches, origin of the custom, i. 412
- Inclination forced, ii. 271, &c.
- Inclinations, natural, fortified by education, seldom altered and overcome, iii. 8, 9—Are not always to be followed, 20—Unnatural, not to be believed, 353
- Inconstancy, of man's desires, i. 404—Of our ordinary practices, 429—On what founded, 431—Pardonable in women's love, iii. 115
- Inconveniences, ordinary, are never light, iii. 204—Of human nature, ought not to be preoccupied, 339, 342
- Indathyrasis, king, his answer to Darius, when he reproached him for retiring always before him, i. 51.
- Indians, their custom of eating the bodies of their deceased parents, i. 121—Their adoration of the sun, 261—Ride upon oxen, 385—Their wives yielded themselves to a voluntary death, 418—Burned themselves, to deprive Alexander of the pleasure of his victory, 468
- Indies not conquered by the kings of Castile and Portugal, ii. 382
- Indifferency, a fault opposite to curiosity, i. 473
- Indigence accompanies riches as well as poverty, i. 329—Has its sweetness and favours, iii. 383
- Indivisibility of friendship, i. 227
- Industry, frivolous, deservedly rewarded, i. 407

## INDEX.

- Inequality among mankind, i. 339, &c.  
 Infant, monstrous, ii. 425  
 Infantry, Roman, their military discipline, i. 528, 529  
 Infants, swathing them not necessary, ii. 66  
 Ingratitude preferred by Montaigne to lying under an obligation, iii. 227  
 Injury professed, less hateful than a treacherous one, iii. 234  
 Injustice of the extremest sort according to Plato, iii. 330  
 Innocency grown into contempt, ii. 27  
 Innocents punished without the judge's fault, iii. 366  
 Innovation of great lustre, iii. 304  
 Innovations in a state, dangerous, i. 125, 126  
 Inquiries, philosophical, vanity of, ii. 201  
 Inquiring into matters and things useful to know, i. 177—After truth, man's proper business, iii. 175  
 Inquiry, vain, into causes without a certainty of the facts, iii. 307  
 Insensibility, perfect, not possible, nor desirable, ii. 122  
 Insolence, hereditary, i. 119  
 Instability of men's manners and opinions, i. 430—Of their condition, ii. 356  
 Instruction by contrariety, iii. 166—Of science, 338—Of nature, ib.  
 Intention, men's actions to be judged by it, i. 31, &c.—The only judge of well or ill doing, 435  
 Intentions, secret, ii. 345  
 Interment, ignominious, for suicides, i. 457  
 Interpreters readily found for writings the most obscure, ii. 260  
 Interview of two kings, i. 54  
 Inutility itself, not useless in nature, ii. 525  
 Invention, the principal part of poetry, i. 199  
 Invocation of the name of God in all our actions, i. 414  
 Iphigenia, her sacrifice, how represented by painters, i. 7.—Sacrificed at the port of Aulis, ii. 166  
 Irenæus's death, i. 262  
 Irresolution, most common vice of man's nature, i. 429  
 Ischolas's overthrow, more glorious than a victory, i. 255, 256  
 Isis, the Egyptian idol, ii. 159  
 Island discovered by the Carthaginians, i. 245  
 Italian umbrellas, iii. 236, 237  
 Italians, subtle and quick of apprehension, but not brave, ii. 27—Keep their wives in too great restraint, iii. 112  
 Itch, iii. 403  
 Ivory, battle of, i. 372

## J.

- JANUS, his double face, iii. 52  
 Jaropelc, duke of Russia, how he liked the treason, but punished the traitor, ii. 536  
 Jason Phereus, how cured of an imposthume, i. 267  
 Jaundice, its effect, ii. 277  
 Jealousy exasperates men against incontinency, iii. 82, and envy,

## INDEX.

- 83—Among beasts, *ib.*—Of women, furious and odious, 85, 86, 93
- Jests of some men that were going to be hanged, *i.* 310—Of some buffoons, who died with a joke in their mouths, 311
- Jewish women, who cast themselves from a precipice, *i.* 461
- Jews cruelly treated by the Portuguese, to make them change their religion, *i.* 312—Others, who, out of zeal for their religion, killed themselves and children, 313
- Joachim, the Calabrian abbot, his divination, *i.* 49
- Joan, queen of Naples, why she caused her husband to be hanged, *iii.* 116
- Jointure, a great one ruinous, *i.* 516
- Josephus's hope, *i.* 460
- Journal kept by Montaigne's father, of his family affairs, *i.* 270
- Joy, sudden and unexpected, its dangerous effect, *i.* 10—Joy and serenity of mind, the marks of wisdom, 185—Profound joy has more severity than gaiety in it, *ii.* 377
- Jubellius's suicide, *i.* 467, 468
- Judges of China, and their offices, *iii.* 367
- Judgment, uncertainty of, the subject treated at large, *i.* 368 to 376  
—Is a touchstone to try all subjects by, 395—Its inclination, *ii.* 226, &c.—Its uncertainty visible to every man, 228—Depends very much on the alterations of the body, 229—Its weakness not easy to be discovered, 231—Impossible to form a definitive judgment of things by appearances, 282—Judgment of the multitude contemptible, 313—The human judgment, a free and roving thing, *iii.* 307
- Judgments of other men appealed to, *iii.* 191
- Julian the Apostate, emperor, his punishments of his soldiers for cowardice, *i.* 58—Not affected by the praise of his courtiers, 351—His character, *ii.* 372, 373, &c.
- Julius, Cæsar, how he philosophized in his last moments, *i.* 482
- Justice ought not to be bought, *i.* 123—The executions of it ought to be simple, *ii.* 34—Is a principle created for the society and intercourse of men, 131—Foundation of the justice of laws, 252—Maliciously executed, 526—Universal, more perfect than peculiar and national, 533—Full of error and contradiction, *iii.* 365—Formed after the model of physic, 366

## K.

- KARANTI people, *iii.* 240
- Killing, an act of cowardice, *ii.* 401
- King, of Peru hanged after he had paid his ransom, *iii.* 153—Of Mexico taken prisoner, put to the rack, and hanged, 154
- Kingdoms, disposed of by Cæsar, *ii.* 393—Gained by the right of war, restored, 394
- Kinge, queen of Poland, her vow of chastity, *iii.* 72
- Kings, how they should be treated after their decease, *i.* 12—What they ought most to value themselves upon, 303—Subject to the same passions and accidents as other men, 313—Have a great

# INDEX.

- and painful duty incumbent on them, 346—In a worse condition than private men, for the fruition of pleasure, 347—Worse off than asses in some respects, 349—Prisoners to the limits of their dominions, *ib.*—Good and bad may have equal reverence, 350—May render wealth and luxury contemptible to their subjects, 354—Their souls cast in the same mould as those of cobblers, *ii.* 95—Ought to command their armies in person, and to be active even on a death-bed, 381, 384—The kings of Castile and Portugal not conquerors in the Indies, 382—Why kings should not be too profuse in their expenses, *iii.* 137—Whether liberality, and what degree of it, becomes them, 139, 141—What is properly the royal virtue, 141—The more excusable because of the difficulty of their office, 161—Why they are excluded from the honour resulting from the exercises of the body and mind, 162—The only thing they learn that is necessary, *ib.*—How their faults are hid, 164—They give the greatest offices at hap-hazard, 181—The respect due to them, 185—The need they have of an officer to talk freely to them, and teach them to know themselves, 375, 376
- Kisses, powerful and dangerous, become contemptible by salutations, *iii.* 109
- Kissing the hands of the great, a mark of respect, *i.* 390—Kissing in salutation, *ib.*
- Kitchens, portable, *i.* 392
- Knighthood, orders of, *i.* 495, 496, &c.—Difficult to bring a new order of into credit, 498
- Knowledge, of ourselves, *i.* 12, 397—Of what shall come to pass, 45—Of things present, 149—Of great men, repositied in their libraries, and in the heads of their attendants, 150—Should be made our own, 151—Without judgment, defective, 154, 197—Of the effects of things, 159—Knowing by rote, not worthy to be accounted knowledge, 171—Of the stars, too abstruse to be taught to children, 182, 183—Attained to with great difficulty, 210, 211—Of things, to what use it should be applied, 315—Whether it exempts those that have it from inconveniences, *ii.* 112—Cicero's commendation of the knowledge of literature, 114, 115—The knowledge of pleasure depends upon that of evil, 122—Knowledge throws men into the arms of ignorance, *ib.*—The increase of it increaseth sorrow, 125—How much the greatest men have attained to, 134—Of God, not to be attained by comparing him with man, 164—Of present things, as remote from us as that of the stars, 192—Of our own being, 193—Of the soul, very difficult to attain to, 197, &c.—Treated like a toy by the ancient philosophers, 203—Human, its extent, 224, &c.—Of man very difficult to man, 225, &c.—Its basis and limits, 263—Guided by the senses, 267, 268—What branches of, fittest for the women, *iii.* 26—Attained but very imperfectly by the most curious enquirer, 148—Honoured, 174—A thing of indifferent quality, *ib.*—A thing of great weight, 180—Of ourselves, recommended by Apollo, 275—Of causes, 307—Of ourselves, of greatest importance, 372

# INDEX.

## L.

- LABIENUS** buried himself alive, why, i. 522
- Lacedæmonian** youth, their constancy, i. 321—**Women**, 393—**Lad**, who would not be a slave, though captive, 452—**Women** expose their thighs, ii. 79
- Lacedæmonians**, their vain ceremony at the interment of their kings, i. 14—Their victory by flight, 51—Education of their children, 158—Their answer to Antipater, when he demanded fifty of their children for hostages, 159—Chivalry, 195—Their answer to Antipater's menace, 453—Policy without learning, ii. 128—Prayers to their deity, 247—The reason of their sacrificing to the Muses, 318—Their children whipped at Diana's altar, 440
- Lackeys** of the ancients, i. 394
- Ladies**, holding their hands to receive their king's spittle, i. 113—In the baths, 393—Dissuaded from preferring suicide to being ravished, 463—French, better natured, *ib.*—Their honour and duty, ii. 322—Learnedly speaking and writing, iii. 26—Never tempted, cannot boast of their chastity, 81—The boasting of their favours censured, 82, 83
- Ladislaus**, king of Naples, how poisoned, ii. 448
- Laërtius**, Diogenes, his character, ii. 14
- Lais's** character of the philosophers, iii. 260
- Language**, of the barbarians, i. 258—Of essays, 303—Of architects, 402—Mute, ii. 69—Different in animals of the same species, 70—Human, very deficient, 174—Confounded at Babel, 214—French, 332—Gascon, *ib.*—Magisterial, to servants, reprov'd, iii. 24—Set off or enriched by wits, censured, 25—Common, how rendered obscure and ambiguous in covenants, &c. 360
- Languages**, the Greek and Latin, may be learned with less pains than are usually taken, i. 202
- Laödicea**, the fair Greek, married to king Amasis, i. 99
- Latin** language taught to Montaigne before the French, i. 203
- Latin** Poets, ii. 363
- Laughing** and crying at the same time, i. 281
- Laurentina**, a harlot, won at hazard, ii. 181
- Law** of obedience, the first law of God to men, ii. 113—Whence rise the doubts and difficulties of the law, iii. 361—General law of the world, 369
- Laws**, of conscience, whence derived, i. 120—Of honour, opposed to those of justice, 124—Established by long custom, ought not to be altered, 125—May be changed in cases of extreme necessity, 130—Severe, of Persia, moderated by Artaxerxes, ii. 35—Necessary to keep men in order, 222—Subject to perpetual alteration, 250—Changed in England, *ib.*—Of nature, 252—On what their justice is founded, *ib.*—Of nature, lost in men, 253—Authorised by custom, 257—The justest have some mixture of injustice, 379—Of Solon, iii. 213—Multiplicity of, fatal to a state, 358—Those of nature, the best, 359—More in France than in all

## INDEX.

- Europe, *ib.*—Ethic, hard to be taught, 365—Imperfect, as far as they relate to the subjects, *ib.*—How they support their credit in France, 368—Ordinarily faulty, *ib.*
- Law-suits carefully avoided by Montaigne, *iii.* 296
- Lawyer, a pleasant story of one, *ii.* 513
- Lawyers, the fourth state in a government, *i.* 123—The contexture of their debates, *ii.* 355—Are the pest of a country, *iii.* 360
- Laziness hateful, *iii.* 123—Of married women, 238
- Leaders of parties, their impositions, *iii.* 290
- Leagues and confederations, *i.* 229
- Learned men, why contemptible, *i.* 148—Why vain and weak, *ii.* 361
- Learning, whether it is absolutely necessary, *i.* 151, 156—Character of pretenders to it, 152—Must be incorporated into the mind, 155—Not much required in women, *ib.*—Desired for profit-sake, 156—Despised by the Lacedæmonian youth, 158—Fit for children, 159—Its chief use, 167—Its great profit and value, *ii.* 41—Brought into esteem by Francis the First, *ib.*—Has its place amongst the necessary things of this life, 113—Not barely a remembrance of what we knew before, 207—Bought at a great rate, full of natural weakness, *iii.* 323, 324—Is a dangerous acquisition, 333—That which is of absolute necessity, is innate in man, *ib.*
- Led horse, to change in a battle, *i.* 377
- Legs of the French gentlemen smaller than others, why, *iii.* 318
- Leo, pope, his death, *i.* 262
- Leonidas's defeat preferable to the most glorious victory, *i.* 255
- Leonora, Montaigne's only daughter, *i.* 505
- Lepidus's wife broke his heart, *iii.* 84
- Leprosy, how cured, *ii.* 519
- Lesson ought to be measured to the scholar's capacity, *i.* 169
- Lessons more profitable in practice than theory, *i.* 194
- Letters, published by Cicero and Pliny, to what end, *i.* 301—Of ceremony, and offers of service, 306—Of favour and recommendation, 307—With qualities and titles, *ib.*—Of this age, *ib.*—Why the reading of them should not be deferred, 474—Six original letters from Montaigne, *viz.* To Monsieur de Lansac; being an Introduction of Boetia's Translation of Xenophon's Economy, *iii.* 433, 434:—To Monsieur de Mesmes, an Introduction of Boetia's Translation of Plutarch's Rules of Marriage, 435, 436:—A letter printed before Boetia's Translation of Plutarch's Letter of Consolation to his Wife, and inscribed by Montaigne, to Mademoiselle de Montaigne, his Wife, 437, 438:—To Monsieur de l'Hospital, Chancellor of France; printed before some Latin verses of Stephen de la Boetia, 438 to 441:—Extract of a letter which the Counsellor de Montaigne wrote to his father; containing some particulars of the sickness and death of M. de la Boetia, 441 to 457:—A letter of Montaigne to his Father, 457, 458
- Lettre-ferits, the term defined, *i.* 153
- Levinus, the consul, his engagement with Pyrrhus, *i.* 372

## INDEX

- Lewis, St.** his severe treatment of himself through devotion, i. 324—  
How he prevented a Tartarian king from going to kiss the pope's toe, ii. 47
- Liars** ought to have a good memory, i. 37
- Liberal sciences**, i. 181
- Liberality**, in a sovereign hand, not in its true lustre, iii. 139, 142—  
A virtue imprinted in princes from their youth, 140—Immoderate, 141—Is of little commendation in princes, 142—Reproached to Cyrus, ib.
- Liberties**, counterfeited, practised without success, ii. 533
- Liberty**, of conscience, ii. 371, &c.—Becoming ladies, what, iii. 88—What is, 89
- Libo** advised by his aunt Scribonia to kill himself, i. 462
- Libraries**, what preserved them from fire, when the Goths ravaged Greece, i. 160
- Library**, Montaigne's, its situation and form, iii. 34
- Licinius**, an enemy to knowledge, ii. 128
- Lie**, of giving it, ii. 365—Revenge with a box on the ear, 403
- Life**, in itself, is neither a good nor an evil, i. 88—Of men, compared to the assembly of the Olympic games, 181—Its shortness and uncertainty, 428—Many ways to get rid of it, 453—Of a wise man, ib.—The contempt of it ridiculous, 457—Painful and irksome, exchanged for death, 464—A good one the mark of true Christianity, ii. 46—Of men, compared to a dream, 276—Exquisite, what, iii. 6—By what trifling objects the desire of it is kept up, 46—Hidden from the sight of other men, 106—Divided between folly and prudence, 119—Only communicated by the working of the belly, 197—Tender, and easily disturbed, 204—Ruled by fortune, 252—Private, why loved, 257—Weak and sottish, carried on by rule and discipline, 384—Compared to the harmony of the world, 392—Limited by Solon to seventy years, 410—The use Montaigne made of it, 423—The measure of its enjoyment depends on the application of it, 424—Ought to be loved and cultivated, 426
- Lingua**, a book so called, written by Erasmus, remarkable passage from it, i. 41, Note
- Lion**, the remarkable gratitude of one, ii. 97
- Lions** harnessed to the coach of Mark Antony, iii. 137
- Lipsius's** politics, i. 165
- Lipsius, Justus**, his character, ii. 250
- Little world**, man so called, ii. 190
- Lives** of retired men painful and difficult in their duties, iii. 8—The fairest, which, 430
- Livia's** counsel to Augustus, on Cinna's conspiracy, i. 134
- Living**, by the example of others doth more harm than good, iii. 211—Living well, is man's master-piece, 419
- Livy's** history, i. 177
- Loadstone**, its virtue, i. 279
- Locke**, the English philosopher, his character, iii. 364, Note
- Lodgings** that our author liked best in travelling, iii. 251



# INDEX.

- Lombards' horses that would wheel about in a gallop, i. 383, Note  
 Longings, violent, of sick persons, iii. 388  
 Lord's prayer recommended to be used by all Christians, i. 414  
 Lords of France called Royetelets, by Cæsar, i. 349  
 Lorrain, cardinal of, comparison between him and Seneca, ii. 437  
 Losses that befall men by the injury of others, are sharp, iii. 334  
 Love, conjugal, attended with respect, i. 2, 238—Unnatural, how to be cured, 122—To women, 219—Its definition, ib.—Terminates in friendship, 227—Restrained by divinity, 236—How to be cured, ii. 127—Its ascendant over the mind of man, 236—A law to keep it in breath, 298—Stronger than ambition, 447, 448—The entertainment of the Muses, iii. 62—Is more animated and lovely in poetry than in its own essence, ib.—Its transports banished from marriage, why, 63—Not to be found in the married state any more than virtue in nobility, 64—Being founded wholly upon pleasure, differs therefore from marriage, 69—The general tendency of mankind to it, 75—Edicts at Rome for its service, ib.—Its definition, according to Zeno and Socrates, 103—Makes men like to beasts, ib.—Inspired by nature, should not be condemned, 104—Stimulated by talking of it discreetly, 107—Of the Spaniards and Italians timorous and secret, 108—Should be made by degrees, ib. and 114—Montaigne's fidelity in it, 114—Foolishly conscientious, 121—Of Montaigne's time, had little to do with sincerity, 122—Not sociable with prudence, 124—What it is, and how it hurts none but fools, ib.—Of what profit in old age, 126—Requires relation and correspondency, 128—What age the fittest for, 129—Its comportment, ib.—Preferred to fear, 231  
 Lover, having gained his mistress's consent, refused to enjoy her, iii. 109  
 Love-songs of American savages, i. 258  
 Loyalty unknown in Montaigne's age, iii. 207  
 Lucan's fondness for his Pharsalia, i. 523  
 Lucius Crossicius, feigned to have been turned from a woman into a man on the wedding-day, i. 95  
 Lucretius's philosophy too weak for a love-potion, i. 448—Character of his poetry, ii. 6—His picture of the amours of Mars and Venus, iii. 96  
 Lucullus made a great general, by learning, i. 151  
 Luther's opinion, the disputes about it in Germany, iii. 364  
 Luxury, laws against, i. 354  
 Lybians, their general good state of health, ii. 498  
 Lycas's character, ii. 124  
 Lycon, the philosopher, his direction for his funeral, i. 18  
 Lycurgus forbade the Lacedæmonians to strip their vanquished enemies, i. 371—Allowed theft to be practised, ii. 254—The general trustee for his fellow-citizens, iii. 225  
 Lying, a hateful vice, i. 38—Coupled with stubbornness, ib.—Instances of, 39, 40—Condemned, ii. 344—A vice reproached to the French, 369—Reproach of, offends, ib.—An argument of the contempt of God, ib.—How expiated by the Indians, 370—Practised amongst the Greeks and Romans, ib.

## I N D E X.

**Lyncestes** killed with thrusts of pikes by Alexander's soldiers, while he hesitated in his speech, iii. 220  
**Lysis**, the Pythagorean, tutor to Epaminondas, ii. 22, Note

### M.

**MADAM**, a title given to women of great quality, i. 407  
**Madness** in great wits, i. 450, 451 ; ii. 120  
**Maggot**, its passions as strong as those of an elephant, ii. 96  
**Magnanimity** in adversity, i. 2, 3—Wherein it consists, iii. 9, 419, &c.  
**Magpie** that imitated the sound of a trumpet, i. 79  
**Mahomet**, his paradise, ii. 160—Was a very great lecher, 448  
**Mahomet the Second**, murders his brother, ii. 537  
**Mahometans** tearing their flesh to gratify their prophet, ii. 167  
**Maid** throwing herself out of a window for fear of a rape, i. 432  
**Maids** restoring their reputations merely by their constancy, iii. 82  
     —Waiting on ladies, ought not to be kept too close, 113—Dressed up in bashfulness and fear, ib.  
**Mail**, coats of, i. 529  
**Maladies**, disfiguring the countenance, the most dangerous, ii. 428  
     —Long and grievous, restore the body to a better state, iii. 219  
**Mamelukes**, their horses very dextrous, i. 378  
**Mamertines** city, how treated by Pompey, i. 4  
**Man**, a variable creature, i. 4—His whole duty, 12—To how many crosses he is liable before death, 68, 85—How animated, 101—A miserable creature, 239—His real merit and superiority over others, 255—What renders him easy or uneasy, 333—To be valued for what he has in him, not what he has about him, 340—His imperfection demonstrated from his inconstancy, 404—His sovereign good, 405—At what age he is capable of displaying his ability, 428—His respect due to the animals, ii. 40—His advantage above the other creatures, 57—Subject to presumption, 61—By what right he claims a superiority over all animals, ib.—Not the only animal abandoned naked upon the bare earth, 66—Furnished with natural weapons, 69—The sole animal whose nudity offends his companions, 108—Wherein superior to the beasts, 110—His sovereign good, what, 118—His beautiful figure, 183—Thinks every thing created for himself, 183, 184—His confused idea of himself, 190—Called a little world, ib.—Why he seldom doubts of things, 193—Defined by Plato, 202—Solicitous to prolong his being, 213—His first production, 219—Not the measure of all things, 220—Cannot find out what is necessary for him, 246, &c.—Whether he has all the senses, 264—The importance of his knowing himself to be his own master, 292—Whipped about like a top, 431—Is a good lesson to himself, 490—Whether it is vanity in him to speak sincerely of himself, 492—How he ought to value himself, 493—Why created rational, 501, 502—Difference between the learned and the self-sufficient man, iii. 3—Should sit in judgment upon himself, 5—Man's chiefest sufficiency, 18, 19—Made by the gods for their sport, 103—That dares not adore the statue of a saint, if not covered with a veil, 104—Avoids to

# INDEX.

- see a man born, every one runs to see him die, 105—His capacity to be judged of in conversation, 186—Pleased with change, 200—Well-bred, is of a compound education, 354—Why he does not care to know himself, 275—A fool to be a slave to other men's affairs, 277—That is sensible of what he owes to himself and to others, 281—Ought to know his own solid interest, 284—Allowed to exceed the demands of nature in things that he considers his necessities, 285—Ought to limit his desires to be secure from misfortune, 287—Cannot fix himself to his more necessity, 322—His countenance a slender security, 351—His true master-piece, 419—His folly in aspiring to be more than man, 429
- Manners, of beasts proposed to men, for the regimen of their health, ii. 86—Of the vulgar, more regular than those of the philosophers, 362
- Marcellinus, Ammianus, i. 529; ii. 372
- Marcellinus Tullius, his deliberate death, ii. 293
- Marcellus, his soldiers called Mercenaries, ii. 465
- Mares honourably buried, ii. 40, 41
- Marius's sound sleep, i. 358—Styled at one time the son of Mars, and at another the son of Venus, 429—Nice in his drinking, iii. 384
- Marot's dispensation to the ladies, i. 464
- Marriage, a contract, i. 220—What it is, 237—The fittest age for it, 506—The marriage-tie, ii. 301, 302—In honour among the Romans; why, 302—Happy proof of it, 466, 467—More necessary, but not less honourable than virginity, 545—Not accompanied with the raptures of love, iii. 63, 64—Ideas of a good marriage, 66—It is the most happy state in human society, ib.—With a mistress commonly repented of, 66—When there is treachery in it, 68—Its bitters and sweets kept secret by the wise, 93—Between a blind wife and a deaf husband, 94—Dissolved by the impotency of the husband, 116, 117
- Marriages between relations, ii. 252, 253—Unhappy, when contracted purely on the account of beauty, iii. 64—Happy, 66, &c.—In Italy unhappy; why, 112
- Married people, i. 100
- Mars, his enjoyment with Venus, iii. 96, 97
- Marseilles magistracy, i. 125
- Martial's epigrams, ii. 8
- Mask, why first invented, ii. 300
- Mason, of Herodotus, i. 32
- Massilians ride on horseback without either saddle or bridle, i. 383
- Master, man his own; the importance thereof, i. 292
- Master-piece, the true one of man, iii. 419, &c.
- Matecoulom, Sieur de, brother to Montaigne, engaged in a duel, ii. 404
- Mathematics, the knowledge of, possessed by the tunny-fish, ii. 101
- Matrimonial tie, i. 237
- Maximilian, the emperor, his singular modesty, i. 16
- Meals of the Americans, i. 249—Of the ancients, very long, iii. 409
- Means, bad, the end good, ii. 390

# INDEX.

- Meat and dishes in confusion, despised, iii. 406  
**Meats served up by course**, according to the first letters of the *meata* themselves, i. 361—Seasoned with odoriferous drugs, 413  
**Mecænas's passion for life**, ii. 487—His amour with the wife of Galba, iii. 90  
**Mechmed, emperor**, his barbarity, ii. 411  
**Medes heavily armed**, i. 527  
**Medicine**; see *Physic*  
**Meditation, a powerful study**, iii. 21—The business and beatitude of the gods, *ib.*—Is the more embarrassing, in proportion as it is more copious and solid, 50  
**Medium prescribed between the hatred of pain and love of pleasure**, iii. 276, 277  
**Megabysus's reproof from Apelles the painter**, iii. 181  
**Melancholy, joined with delight**, 377  
**Melancholy people the most tractable**, yet the most inclined to madness, ii. 120  
**Melissus's followers**, ii. 173  
**Memory, a goddess**, i. 35—Liable to be accompanied with a weak judgment, *ib.*—The advantages of a short memory, *ib.*—A loaded memory, 149—Useful to the judgment, ii. 347—Defective in Montaigne, 348, 349—Is the receptacle of sciences, 349—Of Quartilla, iii. 388—Natural, helped by one of paper, 396  
**Men, eaters of their fellow-men**, i. 242, 254—Ought to be esteemed by what is their own, 343—Absolute monarchs of themselves, 344—Their advantage over other creatures, ii. 57—Slaves to one another, 73—Deified, 158—Of several forms, 171—Changed into wolves, *ib.*—Without mouths, 172—Of extraordinary worth, 473—Ingenious in using themselves ill, iii. 106—Turned into baboons, 157—Brought together by necessity, 213—Puffed up with wind, 416  
**Menon's definition of virtue**, iii. 364, 365  
**Mercy of a prince towards a conspirator**, i. 133  
**Merit, or demerit of a man**, cannot be judged of by his good or ill success, i. 262  
**Merlins in the Mahometan religion**, ii. 182  
**Messalina cuckolded her husband**, the emperor Claudius, iii. 95  
**Metellus's virtue against Saturninus's violence**, ii. 23  
**Metrocles and Crates**, ii. 258  
**Mexican king's greatness**, i. 241—Changed his dress four times in the day, 275—Garden and closet, iii. 149  
**Mexicans' first lesson to their children**, iii. 391  
**Mexico siege**, iii. 154  
**Michael, St. the order of**, in France, formerly held in great esteem, sunk into contempt, i. 496; ii. 247  
**Microcosm**, ii. 190  
**Midas, king, obliged to revoke his prayer to the gods**, ii. 247—His death, iii. 50  
**Midwives, Socrates' comparison of himself to**, ii. 146—The name they go by in France, iii. 243  
**Milesian virgins hanged themselves**, i. 458

## I N D E X.

- Milesians and Parians, i. 437  
 Military men, their faith very uncertain, i. 88—Profession, most pleasant and noble, iii. 402  
 Milk of mares, esteemed an excellent drink among the Tartars, i. 386  
 Mimics, iii. 101  
 Mind, bewildered by idleness, i. 34—Pliable of itself, 282—Its disease, 290—Discoverable in all its motions, 396—Is inconstant and changeable, 434—The productions of it as dear to men as their children, 521—Its distempers, ii. 119—What is its proper food, 149—In an equilibrium, 295—Of various qualities, to be commended, iii. 23—Engaged or disengaged by trifles, 45—Determined by mere imaginations and chimæras, 49—Its strict connection with the body, 55—Whence its extraordinary flashes proceed, ib.—Ought to be employed with discretion, 282—The publishing its productions should not be too late in life, 348—That is generous, cannot stop itself, 362—Of persons wandering through all sorts of life, 374, 375  
 Miracles, counterfeited; what credit they have gained in the world, iii. 308 to 313—Of scriptural miracles, 313  
 Mirth, how compatible with wisdom, i. 448, Note  
 Miso, the Greek sage, his answer on being asked why he laughed when alone, iii. 176  
 Mistakes of physicians, dangerous consequences of, ii. 507  
 Mistrust, the ill effects it has on the mind of a prince, i. 139  
 Mithridates, his flatterers, iii. 164  
 Moderation, the subject treated at large, i. 234 to 242—Has more work than sufferance, ii. 455—Necessary between persons at variance, 530—Required in marriage, limited by the queen of Arragon, iii. 71—Better learned in prosperity than in adversity, 199—Required in pleasures, 422  
 Modesty of Maximilian, i. 16—Necessary to youth, 174—A foolish virtue in an indigent person, iii. 87—Necessary to women, 113  
 Moly, a beautiful tree, iii. 157  
 Monarchy, i. 121.  
 Money, kept with more trouble than got, i. 330—Hoarded by parents, to gain respect from their children, 504—Opinion as to saving or spending it, iii. 211  
 Monied men covetous, i. 331  
 Monluc, Marshal de, his sorrow for having kept his son at too great a distance, i. 514  
 Monsters, whether there are such properly, ii. 426—Are not so to God, ib.  
 Monstrous child, ii. 425  
 Montague-college, in Paris, iii. 265, 266, and Note  
 MONTAIGNE, Michael seigneur de, (author of these Essays,) his inducement to write, i. 34—Complains of the badness of his memory, ib.—The advantages he derived from his short memory, 35—His opinion of the dæmon of Socrates, 49, 50—A prudent custom observed by him, 58—His endeavours to make himself acquainted with the profession of a writer, 60—His opinion whether it be con-

## INDEX.

sistent with a divine and a philosopher to write history, 106—Why he would not write the history of his own time, 107—His displeasure against pedants, 144—Extent of his acquaintance with literature, 161—Plutarch and Seneca were his favourite writers, 162—His judgment of his own Essays, 165, 410—His opinion concerning the education of children, 166—At what time of life he would have gentlemen set out on their travels, 172—His style void of all affectation, 201—Learned the Latin language before the French, 203—Was instructed in Greek in his pastimes, 204—How he began to take a fancy to reading of authors, 205—Performed the chief parts in the Latin tragedies acted at his college, 207—His opinion of the unnatural friendship of the Greeks, 220—His advice to authors, 246—His conversation with an American savage, 259—His dissent from those who seek to depreciate the ancients, 278—His comparison and estimation of what the Latin poets said in praise of Cato, 279—What kind of poetry he preferred, 280—In what he placed the merit of his Essays, 303, 304—His genius for the epistolary style, 305—His aversion to the extravagant compliments in letters, 306—His unfitness to write letters of recommendation, 307—Always wrote in a great hurry, *ib.*—How he regulated his expenses, 331—His coat of arms, 364—His opinion of the game at chess, 397—A just observation of his respecting prayer to God, 426—His description and character of his father, 444, 445—Thrown into a swoon by an accident that befel him, 485, 486—This event reconciled him to the idea of dying, 486—His letter to Madam d'Estissac, respecting the affection of parents to their children, 499 to 525—Disapproved of violence in the education of children, and cites his own example, 505—Remarks concerning his marriage, 506—His advice to a gentleman who had lost his wife, 509—Mistrusts his own adequacy for handling many subjects that occur in his Essays, *ii.* 1—His reason for not naming the authors from whom he quoted, 2—What he aimed to find in books, 3—He preferred the writings of the ancients to those of the moderns, 4—What he thought of Ovid in the decline of his life, 5—His judgment respecting the Latin poets, 6—His reflections on the comic poets of his own time, 7—Regulated his opinions by books of solidity, 9—His sentiments respecting the philosophical works of Cicero, 10: of Plato's Dialogues, 11: and his approbation of the Epistles to Atticus, *ib.*—His delight in reading history, 14—Commendation of Caesar's Commentaries, *ib.*—His reflections on Guicciardin, 18—What his virtue consisted in, 28, 29—His opinions not so regular as his manners, 30—What his goodness consisted in, 31, 32—Could resist the strongest impressions of pleasure, 32—His tender-heartedness, 33—Translates the *Theologia Naturalis* of Raimond de Sebonde, from Spanish into French, 43—His answer to the objections made to that work, 44, 45—His manner of diverting himself with his cat, 61—His ideas respecting a visible religion, 153, 154—Would sometimes maintain the contrary side of an argument, 232—Did not readily embrace novel opinions, 237—Was safe in a defenceless house during the civil commotions in France,

# INDEX.

303, 304—His gesture taken for pride, 324—How he undervalued his persons and possessions, 325—His dislike of his own writings, 327—What notion he had of his own works, 329—His style, 330—His bad pronunciation of the French language, 332—His stature, &c. 334—His shape, air, &c. 336—His general awkwardness, *ib.*—Contented with his condition, 338—Naturally delicate and indolent, 339—An enemy to deliberation, 340—Disgusted at ambition, 341—His dislike of the age in which he was born, 342—His abhorrence of dissimulation and lying, 344—His frank and open carriage to great men, 346—His bad memory, 347, 348, 349—His aversion to obligation and restraint, 347—His genius, 350—His good eye-sight, *ib.*—His ignorance in the most common things, 351—His fickleness, 353—Firm in his political sentiments, 354—Upon what he grounded his esteem of himself, 356—Why he judged his own opinions right, 357—Not much prepossessed in favour of his own times, 359—Loved to commend merit, whether in a friend or foe, 360—Why he spoke so often of himself in his works, 365, 367—His story of a duel, in which his brother was engaged, 404, 405—His angry temper, 436—His patience nevertheless in the disease which he most dreaded, 487—His disease, the stone-cholic, 488—Kept his temper even in the height of his pain, 490—Incidental mention of his birth, and family connections, 493—His and his ancestors' contempt of physick, 494, 495—Two humorous stories related by himself, 513, 515—His pleasant remark on a prescription given him for the cure of his malady, 518—His letter to Madam de Duras, 520 to 522—His reasons for preferring present esteem to that which is posthumous, 521—What goods he most valued, *ib.*—Excuses himself for having rallied the mysteries of physick, 522—Describes the condition he should have been in, if he had trusted himself into the hands of the physicians, 523—Desire of glory moved his pen against the practice of physick, *ib.*—His honesty and delicacy in his political negotiations, 527, 528—His behaviour among those of a different party, 531—Why he shunned public employment, 532—His opinion of those who have consented to be the executioners of their own kindred, 538—Why, and in what manner, he undertakes to speak of himself, in his book, *iii.* 2—Recommends every man to sit in judgment upon himself, 5—Guided in his common actions by his judgment, 12—Why he had no occasion to repent of the management of his affairs, 14—Why he seldom gave or took advice in the management of affairs, 15—Why he was but little concerned at cross events, 16—Made little account of the repentance that old age brings with it, *ib.*—Wherein he judged human felicity to consist, 17—His opinion respecting Socrates does him honour, 19, *Note*—Was inattentive to frivolous conversation, 21—Too delicate in the choice of his company, 22, 28—Passionately fond of exquisite friendships, 23—Character of the persons whose familiarity he most sought, 28—Delighted in the society of well-bred women, *ib.*—His taste in his amours, 31, 114—Gave the preference to ladies of wit, provided their persons were not altogether exceptionable, 32—Si-

## INDEX.

tuation of his library, 34—Took pleasure, when himself advanced in life, in the amusements of young men, 53—His character of wisdom, 56—His opinion of those who may feel inclined to condemn the freedom of his writings, *ib.*—Always spoke freely as far as he dared to do so, 57—Censured by the annotator for a misstatement, 58, Note—Chose to be confessed in public through a religious motive, 59—Why he married, though himself very ill-disposed for it, 67—His opinion of the French language, 99—Why he chose to have no books beside him while writing, except the works of Plutarch, 100—Preferred writing at home, *ib.*—Possessed an apish imitating quality, 101—Generally produced his profoundest thoughts on a sudden, 102—Could not endure interruptions while he was speaking, *ib.*—His apology for the licentiousness of his style, 119—Blames the conduct of those men, who, being favoured by the ladies, encroach too much on their indulgence, 120; and carefully avoided doing the like himself, 121—His opinion respecting pleasure, 125—The advantages he derived from love in the decline of life, 126—Was not ambitious of high preferment, 159—His preference of a quiet life, 160—Aspired not to command, nor loved to be commanded, *ib.*—How he brought himself to endure contradiction, and hearing of nonsense, 168, 169, 174—His advice how to form a right judgment of a man's capacity for conversation, 186—His invincible displeasure at the follies of men, 189—Fitted by his natural gaiety, for returning a jest, 190—His manner of rallying and giving the repartee, *ib.*—How he decided upon the merits of a work, when submitted to his judgment, 191—Blames Tacitus for making an apology for having spoken of himself in his history, 195—His pleasant apology for inserting in his Essays so long a register of his own humours, 197—His antipathy to sorry scribblers, 198—Learned more wisdom and moderation in prosperity than in adversity, 199—Understood little of the management of a family, and disliked the trouble of it, 201, 202—Was fond of travelling, notwithstanding the expensiveness of it, 202, 203—Had no taste for building, nor for the pleasures of a retired life, 205—His wish for a trusty person, to whose governance he might commit himself, 207—Loved to repose a confidence in his domestics, 208—Was too negligent to inspect his own affairs, 208, 209—Was not inclined to hoard money, 211—Forced into a love for travelling through the depravity of morals prevalent in his country, 212—His opinion concerning the political state of France, 218, 219—Other instances of his badness of recollection, 220, 221—Professes himself ready enough to make additions to his writings, but unwilling to admit of any corrections in them, 222—Slighted the rules of punctuation and orthography, 224—Was exposed to great insults in his own house during the civil wars, *ib.* and 225, &c.—Greatly disliked to lie under an obligation, 227—His method of fortifying himself against the shafts of adversity, and universal abandonment, 229, and see the Note—Used to hold himself prepared to encounter mortal dangers, 233, and Note—His commendation of Paris,



## I N D E X.

231—Regarded the people of all nations as his countrymen, 235—The advantages that he reaped from his travels, 236—Blamed by some of his friends for continuing his travels though old and married, 237—His reasons for wishing to die abroad rather than at home, 243—His preparations with a view to death, 249, 250—What kind of death he most approved, 251—His method of travelling, 253—Accommodated himself to the manners and customs of the several countries he visited, 254—Seldom joined company on the road, 255—His answer to the arguments that he supposed might be raised to divert his passion for travelling, 256, 257, 258—Judged himself bound to a certain degree of exactness in the picture he exhibits of himself, 261, 262—Unfit for the management of public business, 262, 263—His reason for frequent rambling from his subject, 267—His particular liking to the city of Rome, 269—His gratitude towards the dead, 270—In what sense he was obliged to fortune, 272, 273—Felt no uneasiness from the want of children, *ib. ib.*—His household affairs, 273—Invested with the freedom of the city of Rome, 274—Copy of the bull granted to him, 274, 275—Kept his affections in a moderate state, 276—Strenuously opposed such affections as might transport him beyond himself, 277—Compelled to serve the office of mayor of Bourdeaux, 279—The character he gave of himself to the magistrates of that city, *ib.*—Though he espoused a particular party, he did not abandon himself to its ungovernable fury and caprice, 288—How he endeavoured to prevent bad accidents in the management of his affairs, 292—Strove to check the first sally of his passions, 294—Carefully avoided engaging in law-suits, 296—How he discharged his office of mayor of Bourdeaux, 300—Antiquity of his family, and a contrasted view of the manners of his own times and those of his ancestors, 302—What he thought of the clearest miracles, 311—His judgment concerning witches, 313, 316—His account of the terrible calamities of the civil wars, in which he was engaged, 326, 330—How he sustained his misfortunes, 332—Exposed to the ravages of a violent plague, 335—Why he charged his book with so many quotations, 346, 347—Proofs of the great advantage which he derived from his aspect, 352—The simplicity of his intention discernible in his eyes and language, 356—Never had a suit in any court of justice, 368—Studied himself more than any other subject, 369—His fitness for conversing freely with his sovereign, 375, 376—The tendency of his Essays, 377—His course of life both in sickness and in health, 379, &c.—The customs to which he was a slave in his old age, 384—The care he took to keep his body open, 386—Whether well or sick, he indulged his natural appetites, 387—Why talking was hurtful to him in his sickness, 389—Why he would not seek advice from physicians, 393—Loved to flatter his imagination in his illness, *ib.*—Afflicted with the stone, 398—Was a great sleeper, 401—But corrected that habit in his latter days, and enjoyed the benefit of it, *ib.*—His hale constitution of body, 403—Was not disordered by impressions of the imagination, 404—His dreams, 405—His diet, 406—His

## INDEX.

- manner of living from his cradle, 407—Did not love to sit long at table, 408—The abstinence of which he was capable, 409—His peculiar taste, *ib.*—Did not eat fish and flesh at the same meal, 411—Why he sometimes fasted, *ib.*—Rules which he observed with regard to his clothing, 412—His preference of dinner to supper, 413—The measure he observed in his liquor, *ib.*—His dread of foggy air, 414—Loved cold weather better than hot, *ib.*—He had a long sight, but impaired it by study, *ib.*—He was too greedy in eating, 415—His judgment respecting the pleasures of the table, *ib.*—In what rank he placed the pleasures of the imagination and those of the body, 417—The use he made of life, 423 to 431—Six original letters written by him, 433 to 458, (see the article Letters.)
- Montaigne (father of the Essayist), his economical regulations, i. 270—Description of his person and character, 444 to 446—Requests his son to make a translation of the work of Raimond de Sebonde, ii. 43—Was grievously afflicted with the stone, 493—His humour in the education of his son, iii. 407
- Montdore ranked among the best Latin poets, ii. 363
- Montferrat, Conrade, marquis of, assassinated, ii. 425
- Montmorency, constable de, his death and character, ii. 363
- Monuments erected to beasts, ii. 40, 41
- Moon's motion not determined by astrology, iii. 307
- Moor bathed and purged to clear his complexion, ii. 506
- Moral lectures despised both by the reader and the hearer, iii. 259
- Morals, depraved, of the French, iii. 211
- Morrow, a new day, considerations on, i. 472, &c.
- Mortality and immortality, ii. 170, 211
- Mother of a family's best accomplishment, iii. 238
- Mothers' natural love to their children very weak, i. 520—Ought not to have the education of their children, iii. 407
- Motion of things below denied, ii. 173
- Motives, vicious, destroy the essence of virtue, i. 277
- Mourning in white, i. 394—Mourning very improper about sick persons, iii. 245
- Muleasses, king of Tunis, what he reproached his father for, i. 507
- Mule, or mulet, much valued in some countries, i. 384
- Mules, why favoured by the Athenians, ii. 40—Their mischievous subtlety, 90
- Muley Moluck, king of Fez, when dying, victorious over the Portuguese, ii. 384
- Mullets, or scarce-fish, helping their companions, ii. 100
- Multitude's judgment, why contemned, ii. 313
- Muretus, a great orator, i. 204
- Muscles stirring and trembling after the bodies are dead, i. 488
- Muscovy, tributary to the Tartars, i. 386
- Muses sacrificed unto by the Lacedæmonians; why, ii. 318
- Muses, the sport and pastime of the mind, iii. 35—Their connection with Venus, 62
- Music, of the spheres, i. 110—Martial, iii. 402—Why Alcibiades banished music from tables, 416

# I N D E X.

Mutes, subtle and active to understand by signs, ii. 63  
 Mysteries, Jewish and Mahometan, i. 418—Of the Christian religion, 419—Of piety, ib.

## N.

- NAKED**, what gave rise to the custom of nations going so, i. 271—Some men, in Turkey, go so for devotion-sake, 272  
**Naker and shrimp**, ii. 101  
**Names**, observations respecting, i. 361 to 368—Some disliked, others fatally affected to the genealogy of princes, 361—Of an easy pronunciation, 362—Superb, of the ancient noblesse, 363—The confusion there is in taking them from lordships, ib.—Going before, without signification of grandeur, 392—Dispersed into many mouths, ii. 316  
**Narcissus** in love with his own shadow, ii. 272  
**Nations**, the odd customs of several, i. 113—That sleep and wake by half years, 358, 359  
**Native country**, what attaches each man to his, i. 121  
**Nature**, its image, i. 180—Its pre-eminence to art, 247—Its course, 426—Is above art, ii. 65—Is kind to all creatures, 66—Its special kindness to man, ib.—Men and animals alike subject to its laws, 71—Its study, food for the mind, 149—Many things in it contrary to our rules, 172—Its laws, 252—Its alterations, 284—Obstinate, sensible of no emotion, iii. 46—Debased by certain Turks, 106—Its necessary demands, how far to be exceeded, 285—Conformity to it is an important precept, 351—Its laws better than those of men, 359—Has rendered actions that are necessary, agreeable, 418—Has no need of fortune, 419  
**Nausiphanes**, a disciple of Pyrrho, ii. 173  
**Naval victory** gained over the Turks, i. 262  
**Navarre**, queen of; her heptameron, ii. 32  
**Necessities** of man, why they may a little exceed the demands of nature, iii. 285  
**Necessity**, natural, its limits, i. 294—Prompts to violent resolutions, 370—Of things that are to come; the doctrine of, ii. 421  
**Negligence**, a vice opposite to curiosity, i. 473  
**Neorites'** treatment of dead bodies, iii. 337  
**Nero**, the bold answer he had from two soldiers, who had conspired against him, i. 13—His cruelty to his mother, 283—His reluctance at signing a death-warrant, 429  
**Nerva's** sacrificing himself in pity to the miserable state of Rome, i. 465, 466  
**Nest**, the wonderful structure of that of the halcyon, ii. 103  
**Neutrality** in civil wars neither honourable nor honest, ii. 529  
**New world**, reflections on the discovery of, i. 243  
**News** enquired after with great avidity, i. 473  
**Nicetas**, one of the first that asserted the motion of the earth, ii. 238  
**Nightingales** teach their young to sing, ii. 74  
**Nimbleness** of two men at Constantinople, i. 387, 388  
**Nimrod**, his presumption, ii. 214

## I N D E X.

- Ninachetuen, an Indian, his remarkable suicide, i. 465  
 Niobe, feigned by the poets to have been stupified with grief, and then petrified, i. 8  
 Nobility, and blood, i. 146—What, iii. 64—Of Calicut, 65  
 Noblesse of France, their essential profession, i. 499  
 Noise, no hindrance to men of learning, but a help to study, iii. 382  
 Nonsense, a contemptible quality, iii. 168—Not to be cured by admonition, 189  
 Nose, blowing it between the fingers, defended, i. 114  
 Notre Dame la Grande, at Poitiers, origin of its foundation, i. 362  
 Noue, M. de la, his character, ii. 363  
 Novelty, begets ruin, i. 126—Of fatal consequence to young men, 355  
 Numa's religion, ii. 153  
 Number counted by oxen, ii. 78—The number of every man's days prescribed, 423  
 Numbers, of Pythagoras, ii. 150—Of men, cause of confusion in an army, 463  
 Numidian soldiers had a led horse besides what they rode upon, i. 377  
 Nuptial bed, i. 100

## O.

- OATH, taken in the rude school of fencers, ii. 73—Of the judges of Egypt, 535  
 Oaths of the ancient philosophers, iii. 101, 102  
 Obedience, due to kings, i. 12, 13—Dearer to a superior, than any utility whatsoever, 61—To magistracy, 128—Pure, the first law of God to man, ii. 113—Due to the laws, 251—Pure, how violated, 356—To good and bad magistrates, iii. 266  
 Obligation burdensome to wise men, iii. 227, 228—How wise men are convinced of it, 281  
 Obligations, of every kind, in what sense they are done away by death, i. 31  
 Oblivion vainly prescribed by philosophy, iii. 123  
 Obscurity in writers vicious, iii. 267  
 Obsequies of the Scythian kings, ii. 74  
 Obstinacy, where most to be seen, i. 176—In faults, ridiculous and troublesome, iii. 175  
 Occupation suited to a solitary life, i. 294  
 Ocean stayed in favour of the Halcyons, ii. 103  
 Oceanus and Thetis, father and mother to the gods, ii. 283  
 Odours, with the relish of meats, i. 413  
 Economy a heavy burden, i. 332  
 Offences should be punished without anger, iii. 283  
 Office, when badly exercised, iii. 281, 282  
 Office of Enquiry, project for, i. 269  
 Offices distinguished by titles too glaring, i. 402, 403—The greatest, distributed by mere fortune, iii. 181—Those of importance are not all the hardest, 301

## I N D E X.

- Oil distributed by Hannibal to his soldiers in frosty weather, i. 273  
 Old age, rarely attainable, i. 426—Pure wine an enemy to, 447—  
 Liable to contempt, &c. 511—Its comfort, ii. 414—What study  
 suits it best, 415—Is accompanied with repentance, iii. 16—Re-  
 quires gay reflections, 50—Travelling not judged unfit for it,  
 241—Unfit for the writing of books, 348  
 Old men ought to leave the use of the means to their children, i.  
 507—Deceived by their wives, and by their domestics, 513, 514  
 —Their wisdom, iii. 18—Should be present at the exercises of  
 young people, why, 52—Should take every opportunity of en-  
 joying pleasure, 53—Begging of God a vigorous health, ridicu-  
 lous, 391  
 Opinion, concerning good and evil, i. 308—Espoused at the expense  
 of life, 312—Gives weight and value to things, 325  
 Opinions of Montaigne regulated by books of solidity, ii. 8—New,  
 rejected, why, 237, 238—Men wedded to their own, iii. 309—  
 The truest are not always the most commodious, 317  
 Oracles ceased before the coming of Jesus Christ, i. 44—Speaking  
 in a double and obscure sense, iii. 363  
 Orange, prince of, his assassination, ii. 423  
 Orator melted into tears by the passion he represents, iii. 47—How  
 he may give importance to the silly things he chooses to speak,  
 178  
 Orchard of ripe apples inclosed within the Roman camp, left un-  
 touched to the possessor, iii. 328  
 Order of St. Michael, formerly of high esteem in France, i. 496 ;  
 ii. 247  
 Orders of knighthood instituted to reward military virtue, i. 495  
 Ordinances, divine, ought to be judged soberly of, i. 260, &c.  
 Origen, why he abandoned himself to idolatry, iii. 59  
 Orlando and Sacrapante, i. 528  
 Orlando Furioso, character of, ii. 8  
 Orthography and pointing little esteemed, iii. 224  
 Osorius, a Latin historian, of no mean talents, i. 313  
 Ostorius's suicide, ii. 291  
 Ostracism and Petalism, ii. 443  
 Ostriches harnessed to the coach of Heliogabalus, iii. 137  
 Otanez, on what condition he quitted his claim to Persia, iii. 160  
 Otho, the emperor's sleep before his suicide, i. 356  
 Ottoman race not to be trusted, ii. 345  
 Ovid, his *Metamorphoses*, i. 205—Montaigne's opinion of him, ii. 5  
 Ox, an old servant, favoured by its master, ii. 41  
 Oxen ridden with saddles, stirrups, and bridles, i. 385—Serving in  
 the royal gardens of Susa, that knew numbers, ii. 78

## P.

- PÆDAGOGUES ridiculed, i. 196  
 Pages brought up in good families, as in a school of nobles, iii. 113  
 Pain, principally feared in death, i. 317—The worst evil of our be-  
 ing, how it may be mitigated, ib.—Suffered with impatience, 319

## I N D E X.

- Of child-bearing, by whom easily supported, 320—Endured with obstinacy, 321—Voluntarily endured to get credit, 322—On what the notion of pain is founded, 334—Preferred to pleasure, 451—Accounted an indifferent thing by the Stoics, ii. 269, 270—Joined with pleasure, 377—Complaint, in the agony of it, to be freely indulged, 489—Vehement, even to perfection, in the soul of the saints by repentance, iii. 125—Its alliance with pleasure, 423
- Painter's craft, in representing the sacrifice of Iphigenia, i. 7
- Painting, its excellencies often produced by mere fortune, i. 137
- Paladins, iii. 162
- Palate-science, pleasantly bantered, i. 401
- Pallas and the Muses tally well with Venus, iii. 62
- Panctius's answer to a youth, who asked him, whether it became a wise man to be in love? iii. 123
- Panic terrors, awful effects produced by, i. 65, 66
- Panthea, Cyrus's captive, her beauty, iii. 294
- Paracelsus, ii. 239
- Paradise of Mahomet, ii. 160
- Parchment-scrolls tied about the neck of Pericles, ii. 523
- Parents, love of, to their children, treated at large, i. 499 to 525  
—Their affection to their children greater than that of their children to them, 501—What their love to their children ought to be, 502—Their dead bodies eaten by their children, ii. 253—Their indiscretion, who punish their children in too much passion, 423
- Parians and Milesians, i. 437
- Paris's amour fatal to all Asia, ii. 93
- Paris, the stench of its mud, i. 413—Commendation of it, iii. 234
- Parleys, time of, dangerous, i. 28
- Parmenides's opinion of the Deity, ii. 155, 173
- Parricide oddly discovered, i. 476
- Parthians performed on horseback all they had to do, i. 379—Their armour, considerations on, 526 to 530
- Pasicles, the immodesty of that philosopher, i. 391
- Passaro siege, when the inhabitants were advised to kill themselves, i. 461
- Passengers made use of for judges, iii. 359
- Passion, missing its object, recoils on the subject, i. 21—Makes objects to itself, ib.
- Passions of mankind too much amused by inanimate things, i. 22—Philosophers not blameable for being overcome by the first starts of them, 52—Mankind subject to different ones, 282—Of the soul, have no pleasure in external conveniences, 346—Unjust, gratified under the cloke of religion, ii. 48—Of the soul, 119, 234—The best way to cure them, iii. 44, 45—The most violent, raised by trifling causes, 296, 297
- Pastime, the learning of the Greek language made one, i. 204—Pastimes of the Americans, 249—Pastime, and passing away the time, what is, iii. 423
- Pastimes of youth should engage the attention of old men, iii. 52

## INDEX.

- Pater-noster**, a good prayer for a Christian, i. 414
- Patience**, wonderful, of some peasants in the civil wars of France, ii. 442—Requisite in things that cannot be avoided, iii. 392
- Patient**, the confidence he ought to have in his physician, i. 103
- Patients**, advised to confide in their physician, ii. 502—Recommended to vows, miracles, and hot waters, 522
- St. Paul**, his desire of death, i. 469—What he thought of the unknown God of the Athenians, ii. 153
- Paulinus**, bishop of Nola, his prayer, after that city was taken, and his house plundered, i. 289, 290
- Paulus Æmilius's** feast, i. 402
- Pausanias**, his destruction by his mother, i. 235—Made drunk by Attalus, 441
- Paxea**, a Roman lady, why she put herself to death, i. 465
- Peasants and philosophers**, i. 409
- Pedagogues**, story of, i. 196
- Pedant**, the pleasant answer of one, i. 196
- Pedants despised by men of sense**, i. 144—Difference between modern pedants and the ancient philosophers, 146—Their true character, 152
- Peers**, ecclesiastical, obliged to assist the king in war, i. 338
- Pegu**, its inhabitants always go barefooted, i. 273—Its women's petticoats, iii. 78
- Pelagia** canonized for avoiding ravishment by suicide, i. 463
- Peloponnesian war**, iii. 38
- Penitence** requires penance, i. 32
- Perfumes**, used by the ancients to a degree of effeminacy, i. 390—Exotic, create a suspicion, 411
- Periander's** extravagant extent of his conjugal love, iii. 111
- Perseus**, a disciple of Zeno, his gods, ii. 157
- Perseus**, king of Macedon, his character, iii. 374
- Perseverance**, its good effects, i. 1
- Persia**, fourteen young men of, buried alive by the superstitious zeal of Amestris, mother of Xerxes, ii. 165
- Persian kings**, how long they kept their wives at their feasts, i. 238—Severity of the Persian laws moderated, ii. 85
- Persians**, how they instructed their children, i. 157—When they chose to hold councils, 443—Honoured their enemies for virtue, ii. 360
- Persuasion** of certainty, ii. 195—Its natural progress, iii. 310
- Perturbations**, how far allowed by the Stoics to their philosophers, i. 52
- Peru**, how its last king was treated by the Spaniards, iii. 153, 158—The magnificence of its works, 157
- Peruvian king's** excessive ransom, iii. 153
- Petits-mâtres** painted to the life by Seneca, iii. 25
- Petronius's** refusal of life from Scipio, ii. 465—His manner of dying, iii. 252
- Phalarica**, a weapon of the ancient Italians, its use, i. 381
- Pharax** stops the king of Lacedæmon from his pursuit of a routed corps, i. 370

# INDEX.

- Pharsalia, battle of, i. 373
- Phaulius, of Argos, yields his wife to the lust of king Philip, iii. 90
- Phidias's fondness for his statues, i. 525
- Philip, king, his reproof of his son Alexander, for endeavouring to bribe the Macedonians, iii. 143—Built a city on purpose for the most wicked inhabitants, 212—His atonement for an unjust sentence, 366
- Philippides, the wise answer he made to king Lysimachus, ii. 531
- Philistus's self-murder, ii. 384
- Philodoxes of Plato, ii. 196
- Philopœmen, why commended by Plutarch, i. 131—His encounter with Machanidas, 359
- Philosophers, not blameable for yielding to the first attacks of the passions, i. 52—Whether philosophers and divines ought to write history, 106—Their opinions and singularities exposed them to ridicule, 145—Difference between the ancient philosophers and modern pedants, 146—Their great thirst for fame, 335—The method they took for attaining superior excellence, 481—Affected obscurity, ii. 143—Their contradictions, 145—Compared to midwives, 146—Whether they were serious in treating of the divine hierarchy, and the soul's immortality, 159, 160: and in treating of knowledge, 203—Different sects, 250
- Philosophers-stone approved, ii. 260
- Philosophical uncertainty, how determinable, ii. 197
- Philosophizing, what it is, i. 452
- Philosophy, what the study of it is, i. 70—What it is, according to Cicero, *ib.*; and Plato, 172—Rules human actions, 181—Despised with men of understanding, why, 184—Should be taught to children, 186, 187—Is the formatrix of judgment and manners, 189—Consists in practice, 194—Its prescription for the oblivion of past troubles, ii. 123—A proof of its weakness, 125, 126—Divided into three kinds, 135—True idea of it, 150, 151—All we know of natural philosophy, 188, 194—A falsified poesy, 189—Full of vanity and dreams, 203—A secret medicine for troubled minds, 398—What kind proper for women, iii. 26—Its dignity spoiled by weak minds, 180—Its foundation, progress, and end, 312—Its childish opinion concerning pleasures, 426, 427
- Philotas's banter upon Alexander, iii. 430
- Philoxenus's resentment against those that did not read his works well, ii. 271, 272
- Phoenix, how engendered, ii. 162
- Phrynè, the courtesan, how she corrupted her judges, iii. 350
- Physic, on what its success is founded, i. 136—What it is grounded on, ii. 494—An enemy to health, 496—Unknown to many nations, 497—Mystery very necessary for it, 502—When and by whom brought into repute, 504—Of Hierophilus, Themison, Thessalus, Crinas of Marseilles, Vexius Valens, and Charinas, 504, 505—Practised at Rome by foreigners, 505—Despised by many physicians, as to their own use of it, 517—The art of, iii. 378; its uncertainty, 389—Pleasant and grateful, 391



## I N D E X.

- Physician, confidence in him contributes to the cure of the patient, i. 103—Should gain the confidence of his patient, ii. 502—Should be but one to one sick person, 503—Plato's sentiments concerning the qualifications of one, iii. 378
- Physicians, whether they do most good or harm, and how they excuse their miscarriages, ii. 499, 506, 507—Their success enlightened by the sun, their failures covered by the earth, 500—Liable to answer for their mistakes, 501—The uncertainty of their science, 504 to 508, 510—Their promises generally not to be depended on, 508—Peculiar to every person, and every part of the body, among the Egyptians, 509—Of worth, ought to be honoured, 516—Why men trust to them, 517—As many in number as men, 518—Are the pest of a country, iii. 360—Compared to painters and town-criers, 378
- Physiognomy, remarks on, iii. 320 to 357—Advantages of, not so directly founded on fine features, 351—Whether any assurance may be derived from it, ib.
- Phyton's great courage, under the cruelty of Dionysius, i. 4
- Pigeons taught to carry letters, ii. 387
- Pirates, clemency of Julius Cæsar towards them, ii. 33
- Piso, Lucius, the Roman general, his character, i. 440—His passionate temper, ii. 432
- Pistol, not to be relied on so much as a sword in set battles, i. 380
- Pittacus, the greatest plague he had in his life, iii. 94
- Pity banishes enmity, i. 2—Reputed a vice among the Stoics, 3
- Place not defensible by the rules of war, i. 55—Of honour, amongst the ancients, 392
- Plagiarism of modern writers, a certain indication of their poverty of genius, i. 163
- Plague, cruel, in Gascony, and in Montaigne's house, iii. 335
- Plancus libelled by Asinius Pollio, ii. 402
- Planets worshipped, ii. 156—Their conjunction that produced great alterations, iii. 157
- Plato, his great precept, i. 12—Misunderstood by Montaigne, in a certain passage, 48—His reprimand of a boy, for playing with nuts, 111—His banquet, 190—Was a true philosopher, 194—The rank in which he placed human benefits, 331—Surnamed Divine, 403—How many servants he kept, 404—His notion of the credenda, injurious to the gods, 415—His dialogues, 518 ; ii. 11—His doctrine of the immortality of the soul, attended with ill effects, 50—A gross error of his, to what owing, 52—His ideas and real sentiments, 146—Author of ten sects, ib.—Philosophizing in dialogues, 147—His character as legislator, 151—Describing Pluto's verger, 160—Originally descended from the gods, 182—His parents, ib.—Refuses a perfumed robe, 254—His check of himself in a passion, 432—His law respecting marriage rites, iii. 116—The talents he required in the examination of another man's soul, 375—His definition of a true physician, 378
- Plautus not comparable with Terence, ii. 6

## INDEX.

- Plays of children, i. 111—May be acted by princes, 208—Plays and public spectacles to humour people, iii. 143, 144
- Pleasure, the aim and fruit of virtue, i. 71—What is the last that man is capable of enjoying, 446—Epicurean, nourishes virtue, ii. 24—Its strongest impressions resisted, 32—Fixed in insensibility of pain, 121—Internal, 367—Extreme, mixed with groaning, 377—Constant and universal, insupportable to men, 378—Excusing sin, iii. 11—Excessively lascivious, hinders conception, 64—Aided both by the mind and body, 125—Has no taste without communication, 255—Painful at the bottom, 278—That of the mind to be preferred to that of the body, 427—Married with necessity, ib.
- Pleasures should be avoided, even at the expense of life, i. 263, &c.—Wheedle and caress to strangle, 297—Not so easily to be enjoyed by kings as by private men, 347—Natural, allowed, if moderate, iii. 125—Provided by nature for men, 416—Pure, of the imagination, the greatest, 417—Corporeal, of what power, 418—Human, enjoyed by the greatest men, 419
- Plenty and indigence depend upon opinion, i. 342
- Pliny the Younger, his delicate and sprightly judgment, i. 212—His advice, as to solitude, unjustly criticized, 295, 296—His ambition, 300—Why he published his Epistles, 301
- Plurality of worlds, no new opinion, ii. 170
- Plutarch, a favourite writer with Montaigne, i. 162—Amyot's translation, 363, 472—His character, ii. 9, 14—His regard for an ox that had long served him, 41—His opinion of the virtuous, 218—Remarks on good-nature and equity, 429—Reproached for anger by a slave of his, 431—Accused of ignorance and falsity, and his defence, 438, &c.—Universal and copious, iii. 100
- Poetic raptures, or sallies, i. 137
- Poetry, fortune has a great share in its flights, i. 137—Its effects, 162—Recommended to youth, 192—Invention is its principal part, 199—Gay, 233—Above rules and reason, 277—What sort of poetry Montaigne preferred, 280—Of an odd taste, 406—Of several sorts, 410—The sort allowed by Plato, ii. 151—Com-mended, 327—In fashion in Montaigne's time, 363—Allowed to women, iii. 26—Armed with love, 63
- Poets, lyric, i. 188; and rhimers, 198—In greater number than judges of poetry, 279—Of all sorts of artificers, the fondest of their own works, 523, 524—Of the first rank, ii. 5, 6—Comic, 7—Presuming on their works, 327, 328—That excel among the French, 363—Pour out with fury whatever comes into their mouth, iii. 268
- Poison kept at Marseilles, for those that would destroy themselves, i. 470—Taken by a lady in public, 471
- Pol, Pierre, the odd figure he always made on horseback, i. 382
- Polemon, the philosopher, his reformation, ii. 362—His just prosecution by his wife, iii. 72
- Poles wound themselves, to give a sanction to their word, i. 323
- Policy, excellent, of the American savages, i. 248—Human, supported by vice, ii. 525

# INDEX.

- Political states as crazy as the human body, ii. 388**  
**Politics of king Edward the Third of England, ii. 389**  
**Pollex, the Latin word for thumb, its etymology, ii. 398**  
**Pollio, his libel against Plancus, when he was dead, ii. 402—Why he did not write against Augustus who had satirized him, iii. 165**  
**Polycrates, tyrant of Samos, ii. 167**  
**Polypode, a fish that changes its colour, ii. 85**  
**Pompeia Paulina, her love for Seneca, her husband, ii. 471, 472**  
**Pompey pardons a whole city on the account of one man's virtue, i. 4—His head presented to Cæsar, 281—His soldiers reproached by Cæsar, 369—Was a skilful rider, 378—Beaten in Spain by Sertorius, ii. 94, 95—Too severely censured by Tacitus, iii. 195—His war with Cæsar, 291**  
**Ponticus Heraclides's wavering opinion of the Deity, ii. 156**  
**Poor in the midst of riches, i. 329**  
**Poppea, why she invented a mask, ii. 300**  
**Portraiture, the art of, much under the control of fortune, i. 137**  
**Portuguese cruelty, i. 252—Driven from a town they besieged by swarms of bees, ii. 95—Portuguese wines heady, iii. 380**  
**Possession of money, a trouble, i. 329, 330—Of ourselves, iii. 228, 229**  
**Possibility and impossibility, false measure of, ii. 442**  
**Possidonius, the Stoic, his triumph over pain, ii. 116, 117**  
**Post-horses, first set up by Cyrus, ii. 386—Used by the Romans, 387**  
**Posthumius, the dictator, whether he put his son to death, i. 235**  
**Potidæa, battle of, i. 277**  
**Pourcontrol, a fish that assumes any colour, ii. 85**  
**Poverty, what in it to be feared, i. 317—Sought after, 326, 327—Obstinate, ii. 484—Affected by Crates, iii. 209—Of some philosophers, 285—Maintained at the public expense, 343**  
**Power content with limits, iii. 20**  
**Practice cannot give assistance in dying, i. 481**  
**Præstantius, a juggler, mentioned by St. Augustine, iii. 316 & Note**  
**Praise, accompanied with natural sweetness, ii. 314—Always pleasing, iii. 223**  
**Praises of great men, i. 302—Particular, rejected, 336—Given after death, to what purpose, iii. 48**  
**Praxiteles's statue of Venus, how it captivated a youth, iii. 110**  
**Prayer, considerations on the subject, i. 413 to 425—Form of, dictated to us by God himself, 414—The soul, in the use of, ought to be free from impurity, 415—Prayer, for fashion's sake merely, is highly blameable, 416—Of him who persists in evil habits, ib.—Requires great calmness and composure of soul, 422—How abused, 424**  
**Prayers of Socrates, &c. ii. 247, &c.**  
**Preaching, slow speaking requisite for, i. 41**  
**Precedence either of walking or sitting, iii. 247**  
**Precept, the great one of Plato, i. 12**  
**Predestination, the doctrine of, maintained by the Bedoïns, ii. 321, 422—Gives assurance to the Turks, 423**  
**Pre-existence of the soul, opinions respecting, ii. 207**

## I N D E X.

- Pregnancy of women, its time undetermined, ii. 220**  
**Pregnant women, i. 238**  
**Preparation for speaking, unnecessary to some orators, i. 42—For death indispensably necessary, 80**  
**Presents, an affront not to receive them, iii. 229**  
**Presumption, natural and original disease of men, ii. 56, 61—Men's inheritance, 114—What it is, 322, &c.—Divided into two parts, 325—Nursing-mother of false opinions, 326**  
**Pride dwells in the thought, i. 494—Is the ruin of men, ii. 129**  
**Priest that cured all sorts of diseases by words and gestures, iii. 310**  
**Prince, whether he had best wait to be invaded by an enemy, or to go forth and attack him upon his own ground, i. 373, 374, 375, 376—Ought to be himself in the field, ii. 381—How he ought to die, ib.—One who was not to be discomposed by accidents, iii. 283**  
**Princes, the reasonableness of the law which orders their conduct to be inquired into after their deaths, i. 12—Ceremony at their interview, 53—The unhappiness of those princes who are too mistrustful, 139—All their real advantages are common with those of men of middle rank, 351—Ought to despise silks and gold, 353—The qualities that are most useful to them, ii. 343—Should not be tricksters, 344, 345—Should be active and sober, 383—In what case excusable for the breach of their word, 539—Their favours, by whom despised, iii. 295**  
**Principles, natural, difference of opinions respecting them, ii. 194—Not to be admitted without examination, ib.—Those of Aristotle in vogue, 238**  
**Printing, in China, iii. 148**  
**Prisoners, how used by the Barbarians, i. 251—The constant resolution of some, 256**  
**Prize of eloquence refused by Tiberius, why, iii. 164**  
**Production of all things, i. 247**  
**Profession of a person setting himself up for a writer, diligently sought after by Montaigne, i. 60**  
**Profit of one man, a loss to another, i. 109—Considerations on profit and honesty, ii. 524 to 545**  
**Prognostication, vain and superstitious, i. 44—Abolished by the Christian religion, ib.**  
**Prometheus's deficiency in the formation of mankind, iii. 50**  
**Promise, of a private man, may in one case only be broken, ii. 542**  
**Promises, when they may be lawfully broken, ii. 539, 542—Ought to be strictly observed, iii. 226**  
**Pronunciation gives value to works, left to the efficacy of the voice, ii. 271**  
**Prophesying faculty, i. 451**  
**Prophet, no man accounted such in his own country, iii. 7**  
**Prophets and priests punished for their false sayings, i. 251**  
**Prose of former times, iii. 267, 268**  
**Prosperity, a better instructress in wisdom and moderation, than adversity, iii. 199**

## INDEX.

- Protagoras, a great doubter, ii. 155, 173—Was an ingenious fag-got-maker, 351, Note
- Protogenes, the painter, made the true likeness by mere chance, which he could not effect by art, i. 267
- Proverb, an old one, iii. 317
- Proximity lessens not defects, iii. 228
- Proximus's suicide, i. 464
- Prudence surpassed by fortune, i. 268—What it is, according to Plato, 371, 372
- Psalms of David, indiscreet use of them interdicted, i. 417
- Psammenitus, king of Egypt, unmoved in the extremity of sorrow, i. 7
- Punctuation overlooked by Montaigne in his writings, iii. 224
- Punishment connate with sin, i. 476—Follows close to sin, *ib.*—In a future life, ii. 163—Of wicked men shows the goodness of the judge, iii. 357
- Punishments, why they should be inflicted, iii. 165
- Pupil and tutor, i. 168
- Pure wine, an enemy to old age, i. 447
- Purgatory of a new sort, ii. 244
- Purges, medicinal, ii. 498
- Purity of soul requisite in our prayers to God, i. 415
- Pygmalion enamoured of his statue, i. 525; ii. 273
- Pyrrho and his hog, ii. 117—His vain attempt to conform his life to his doctrine, 416
- Pyrrhonians, their profession, ii. 135—Their ignorance, 136—Their common style, 139—Their common behaviour, 140—At a loss for words to represent their opinion, 175
- Pyrrhonism, its advantage, ii. 136—More defensible than the opinion of the Academics, 226
- Pyrrhus, what he said when he saw the Roman army, i. 242—His head presented to Antigonus, 281—His vain ambition, 352—What befel him in his engagement with the consul Levinus, 372
- Pythagoras, his answer to a prince, who asked him, what science he professed? i. 195—Diverted a company of rakes from plunder, by the power of music, 362—His transmigration of souls, ii. 37, &c.—His idea of God, 153

## Q.

- QUALITIES, unsuitable, bring no honour to a man, i. 302—Sickly, of our being, ii. 525
- Quarrels for trifles, cause of great ruins, iii. 296, 297—Should not be engaged in without deliberation, 297—Most accommodations of, scandalous, 298
- Quartilla's bad memory, iii. 388
- Question for a friend, ii. 256
- Quintessence of real friendship, i. 223
- St. Quintin, battle of, i. 368
- Quito, the magnificent road from it to Cusco, iii. 157

# INDEX.

## R.

- RABELAIS's** character, ii. 4
- Rack**, its inconveniences, i. 479—Why condemned by several nations, 480
- Raimond de Sebonde**, apology for him, ii. 41 to 286—Character of his *Theologia Naturalis*, 42—That work translated into French by Montaigne, 43—Objections made to the work, answered by Montaigne, 44—His work vindicated from the charge of containing no depth of argument, 55
- Raimond**, count of Tripoli, assassinated, ii. 125
- Rain**, god of, ii. 243
- Ram** in love with Glaucia, ii. 90
- Rank** in life, how we are imposed on by it, iii. 184
- Ransom**, excessive, of the king of Peru, iii. 153
- Rapier** and cloak, fighting with, i. 389
- Rashness** in judgment, i. 209—Rashness blamed in a general, ii. 462
- Rasias**, his suicide, i. 462, 463
- Reading**, of letters and tickets, ought not to be deferred, i. 473—A third sort of conversation, iii. 32—Of history, good and profitable at all times, 179
- Reason**, human, i. 113—Has fortune sometimes in its train, 265—Should not be the basis of a Christian's belief, ii. 44—Controller of all things, 196—A test full of falsity, 197—True and essential, abides in the bosom of God, ib.—What it is, 231—Ought to be followed, 314—Sovereign of the soul, 447
- Recommendation**, whence it should proceed, i. 407
- Recreation** fit for youth, i. 190
- Reflection** necessary in actions, iii. 287
- Reformations**, external, iii. 10—Of states, 215
- Refusal** of a present, injurious, iii. 228.
- Reggio**, city of, taken by Dionysius, i. 3, 4
- Regulations**, laudable, of Montaigne's father, i. 270
- Regulus**, his parsimony, i. 403—More courageous than Cato, 455—His great high-life, iii. 160
- Relaxation** not unbecoming the greatest hero, iii. 420
- Relics** of St. Hilary, Gervase, and Protasius, i. 212, 213
- Religion**, persecutions on account of, i. 312, 313—Ought not to be received after human manners, ii. 47—Made the tool to serve the most unjust passions, ib.—Whether it be lawful to take arms against a king for it, 48—Foundation of the Christian religion, 51—What minds are best disposed to submit to it and the rules of government, 141—What is the most probable opinion concerning it, 152—The necessity of one for the people, 153—According to Apollo's oracle, 251—The Christian, acquires no authority from events, i. 261—The foundation of its profession, ii. 51
- Religious** zeal extravagant and unjust, ii. 371
- Remedies** more troublesome than the disease, iii. 387
- Remedy**, a pleasant one, for an evil of the imagination, i. 97

# I N D E X.

- Remonstrances, philosophical, their irrelevancy, iii. 259
- Remora, a fish said to be capable of stopping a ship, ii. 84
- René, king of Sicily's picture, drawn by himself, ii. 353
- Renown, present, to be preferred to that after death, ii. 521
- Repartees, their usefulness, iii. 190
- Repentance, what it consists in, i. 417—Of an elephant, ii. 102—  
Following the sin, iii. 6—What it is, ib.—Commonly corrupt, 11  
—Of the Stoics, 13—Is not concerned in things that are not in  
our power, ib.—True, what is, ib.—Whence produced, 17, 18  
—Hateful, which old age brings, 46
- Repetition troublesome, iii. 220
- Reports, common, how to be dissipated, iii. 45
- Repose and glory, things that are incompatible, i. 298
- Reproaches against the enemy, allowed in a siege, i. 371—Redound  
upon those that throw them, iii. 177
- Reputation, of wicked princes, should suffer after death, i. 12—So-  
licitated, 335—Abandoned, 336—Accidental, ii. 311—Set at too  
high a price, 314
- Resemblance of children with their parents, ii. 206, 486, &c.
- Resolution and constancy, their usefulness, i. 1, 50—An extraordi-  
nary one, 143—Sudden, produced extraordinary actions, ii.  
417
- Retirement, the constitutions fittest for it, i. 294—What are the es-  
sentials of it, 298 (See also the article *Solitude*.)—The good use  
of it, iii. 27—Its pleasures, 205, &c.
- Revelation assures us of the soul's immortality, ii. 215
- Revenge, against inanimate creatures, i. 22—Of a king, against God,  
23—Of Augustus, against Neptune, ib.—Of the Thracians,  
against heaven, 24—Sought after to the danger of life, ii. 221—  
When of no effect, 401—Sweet passion, and of great impression,  
how diverted, iii. 43—Taken on a woman in lying with her,  
112
- Reward of virtuous actions grounded upon the approbation of  
others, iii. 3
- Rewards, honorary, considerations on, i. 495 to 499—Of honour  
and of riches, 495, &c.—And punishments in another life, on what  
founded, ii. 163—After this life, relatively to human duration, 208
- Rhetoric, definition of the art of, i. 399, 400—Is at best but a de-  
ceitful art, 399
- Rich man, who is he, i. 327
- Riches, contempt of, i. 119, 332—Accumulated by prudence, 329  
—How to avoid the trouble of them, 333—Despised, ii. 30, &c.  
—Of the Americans, of little revenue to the prince, iii. 156—Soli-  
citude about them savours of avarice, 211
- Riders on horseback, wonderful instances of their dexterity, i. 387,  
388
- Riding, a very wholesome exercise, i. 378—Riding the great horse,  
the only true exercise of the sons of princes, iii. 162
- Rigour of mistresses irksome, but their facility more so, ii. 300
- Ring, platonic, its virtues, ii. 315
- Risibility attributed to beasts, ii. 70

## INDEX.

- Rivers obnoxious to changes**, i. 244
- Robe**, perfumed, refused by Plato, accepted by Aristippus, ii. 254
- Roman infantry**, their armour and military discipline, i. 528, 529—  
**Grandeur**, ii. 393, &c.—Senate's violation of a treaty of its own making, 541—State, its destiny, iii. 217, 218—Soldiers suffocated with their own hands after the battle of Cannæ, 337
- Romans**, their manner of fighting duels, i. 389—Their effeminacy, 390—Their luxury, *ib.*—Their sponges, baths, ice-wines, and fish-pools, 391, &c.—Their way of complimenting their great men, 393—Their custom of paying their watermen, *ib.*—What side of the bed their wives lay on, *ib.*—The ladies' manner of drinking or rather dashing their wines, and their colour of mourning, 394—Their eloquence, 400—Why they went to war, ii. 389—Why they restored the kingdoms they conquered, 394—Whether preferable to the Greeks, 444—Why they denied triumphs to the generals who obtained great victories, iii. 182
- Rome**, the common and universal city, iii. 269, 271—Its great men, and ruins, 270
- Ronsard**, the French poet, ii. 363
- Royalty**, the meaning of the word at Ephesus, i. 147—Challenges respect, not the king, 349, 350—Stifles and consumes all the other true and essential qualities, iii. 163, 164
- Roytelets**, an appellation given by Cæsar to the lords of France, i. 349
- Rumours**, how dissipated, iii. 45

## S.

- SABINUS**, a Roman, who thought himself learned, because he kept learned men in pay, i. 150, & Note—His wife's private delivery of twins, 320, 321
- Sacrifice of men** to appease the deity, ii. 165—Of children to Saturn, 166
- Sacrifices of human bodies**, i. 241—Those of Alexander to Thetis, ii. 164
- Saddle-horses**, or pads, despised by the Swedes, i. 383
- Sais**, city of, its antiquity, ii. 242
- Salic law**, excluding women from the succession to the crown of France, i. 519
- Salisbury**, William earl of, taken at the battle of Bouvines, i. 338
- Sallads**, according to their seasons, i. 401
- Sallust**, ii. 14, 332
- Salona**, garrison of, its fidelity, ii. 465
- Salutation**, by kissing, i. 390
- Salutations and congees** humble and courteous, ii. 324
- Saluting**, the custom of, robs kisses of their charms, iii. 109
- Samos**, ambassadors of, i. 197
- Sancho**, king of Navarre, surnamed Trembling, i. 407
- Sarmatian ladies**, when allowed to lie with a man, iii. 113
- Satisfaction after death**, of no avail, i. 32



## INDEX.

- Saturn** had the children of the Carthaginians immolated at his altars, ii. 166
- Saturninus**, what he said to the soldiers when they chose him to be their general, iii. 264
- Savages**, American, in what sense barbarians, i. 247—Their policy and climate, manners and customs, 248 to 260—Answer made by one of them to Montaigne, 259—Brought into France, ii. 82
- Sauces**, i. 401
- Saying and doing** should go together, ii. 429
- Scæva**, the many strokes he received upon his buckler, in sustaining an attack, ii. 465
- Scævola's constancy**, i. 321
- Scanderbeg**, how his fury was appeased by a soldier who had provoked him, i. 2
- Scarc-fish**, ii. 100
- Sceptre**, a heavy burden, king Seleucus's opinion of it, i. 346
- Schoolmasters**, how they ought to behave themselves in teaching scholars, i. 190, 191
- Schools and classes**, i. 190—Schools interdicted to the Christians, ii. 372
- Science**, what the noblest, i. 159—Damps courage, 160—Of a marvellous use, 167—Man's immoderate pursuit of, iii. 322—Natural, sufficient to live easily, 323—Sophisticated, 338
- Sciences** ought early to be inculcated in the minds of children, i. 183—Sterility of some sciences, 297—Established by authority, ii. 223—Treat of things too finely, iii. 99—Strangely abused, 173—The most terrestrial and low, 430
- Scipio**, the reputation he acquired by his death, i. 69—His confidence in a Barbarian, and his intrepidity, 140—His great acts, due in part to Lælius, 337
- Scipio Æmilianus**, his confidence in his innocence, i. 478—His high spirit, ib.—His reprimand of his soldiers in a siege, 528—Was the first man among the Romans, ii. 485—Was a great sleeper, iii. 401
- Scipio**, the grandfather, his playing at quoits with Lælius censured, iii. 420
- Scipio and Lælius**, the writers of Terence's comedies, i. 302
- Scratching**, sweet gratification of nature, iii. 403
- Scribblers**, French, iii. 98—Impertinent and foolish, ought to be punished as well as vagabonds and idle persons, 198
- Scribbling**, sign of a disordered and licentious age, iii. 198
- Scribonia's** advice to her nephew to kill himself, 462
- Scriptures**, sacred, whether they ought to be translated and put into the hands of the vulgar, i. 417, 418—Miracles recorded in, iii. 313
- Scythian kings' funerals**, ii. 74—Scythian women made use of their slaves, having first put out their eyes, iii. 86, 87
- Scythians' excuse** for declining a battle, i. 51—Used to burn their false prophets, 251—Their weapons and manner of fighting, ib.—Eat their prisoners, and why, ib.—Drank the blood of their horses, in extremity, 384

## INDEX.

- Sea-hares, poison to man, ii. 277  
 Sea-sickness, cause of it, iii. 133  
 Seasons for all things, ii. 412, &c.  
 Sebastian, king of Portugal, the famous battle between him and Muley Moluck, ii. 384, &c.  
 Sebonde, Raimond de ; see Raimond de Sebonde  
 Sechel, George, his punishment, ii. 412  
 Seconds in duels, ii. 403  
 Secrets, kept after a full dose of liquor, i. 440—Of princes troublesome burdens, ii. 531  
 Sects of different opinions, ii. 216, 217, &c.—Divided, one for the body, and the other for the soul, 333, &c.  
 Security of a place how known, iii. 218  
 Seed, how it becomes prolific, ii. 220—Bearing the impressions of the parents, 492  
 Sejanus's daughter ravished by her executioner, ii. 538  
 Seleucus, king, the little account he made of royalty, i. 346  
 Self-love indiscreet, i. 491  
 Self-murder, i. 241  
 Selima the First, what he thought of victories gained in the absence of the sovereign, ii. 382  
 Seneca, a favourite writer with Montaigne, i. 162—His extraordinary advice to a friend about life, 263—His works compared with those of Plutarch, ii. 9—Defended, 437, &c.—Compared with the cardinal of Lorraine, 437—Account of him and Paulina his wife, their loves and deaths, 471 to 476—His efforts in preparing for death, iii. 324, 325—His diet for a whole year, 382  
 Sensations of beasts, free and natural, i. 319  
 Sense, its force and effects, ii. 276—The justest dividend of nature's favours, 357  
 Senses judge of pain, i. 316—Are the beginning and end of human knowledge, ii. 263—Uncertain and false in their operations, 270—Often masters of our reason, ib.—How they deceive us, 271, 273—Altered by the passions of the soul, 275—Hinder one another, 279—The uncertainty of our judgment respecting their operation, ib.—Proper judges, iii. 178  
 Sensibility, accompanied by health and vigour, ii. 120  
 Sensuality vicious and unreasonable, ii. 31  
 Sentences more criminal than the crimes themselves, iii. 366  
 Serapis, the Egyptian idol, ii. 159  
 Serenity of mind, a mark of wisdom, i. 185  
 Sertorius, how he dislodged his enemy from an inaccessible post, ii. 95  
 Servants hanged for betraying their master, ii. 537  
 Servitude, voluntary, i. 215  
 Servius the grammarian, tormented with the gout, i. 454  
 Severity of the colleges, i. 191—Enemy to education, 192  
 Severus Cassius spoke best extempore, i. 42, 43  
 Sextilia, a Roman lady, her suicide, i. 465  
 Shades of the Persians, iii. 237  
 Shame, excessive, has been the cause of death, i. 11

# INDEX.

- Shrimp and naker, ii. 101  
 Sick at Babylon brought out of doors for the public advice, ii. 517, 518  
 Sick persons, how they ought to behave, iii. 249  
 Sickness not to be counterfeited, ii. 395, &c.  
 Sight grossly deceives us, ii. 395, &c.—Altered, and its effects, 277  
     —Lost by one in sleep, 397  
 Silence and modesty, their advantage in conversation, i. 175—Silence very profitable to those that govern, iii. 181  
 Silk clothes, when out of fashion in France, i. 353  
 Silkworms, how produced, ii. 162  
 Silvanus's suicide, i. 464  
 Similitude, perfect, not to be found in two eggs, iii. 358  
 Simplicity, its advantage, ii. 128—Cousin-german to folly, iii. 342  
 Sincerity ought to be inculcated to children, i. 176—Should always be observed in commerce with the women, iii. 29  
 Sin closely attended by punishment, i. 476  
 Singing-girl rode with Mark Antony in his chariot through the streets of Rome, iii. 137  
 Sins, the confounding them, a dangerous thing, i. 439—Impetuous and sudden, iii. 12—Of complexion and profession, 13  
 Sire, remarks concerning that title, i. 407  
 Skin, fresh and delicate, how kept so, i. 322—The skin of man, sufficiently proof against weather, ii. 67  
 Slave thrown from the Tarpeian rock for his treachery, ii. 537  
 Sleep, observations respecting it, i. 356 to 359—Profound, instances of, 356, 357, 358—Is the image of death, 483—What it is, according to Zeno, ii. 212—Without dreams, sweet, iii. 343—Long, not wholesome, 401—Disturbed, to be the better relished, 424  
 Slings, i. 381  
 Sloth censured, ii. 381, &c.  
 Slowness of speaking necessary in a preacher, i. 41  
 Smell, good and bad, i. 410, &c.—Simple and natural, 412  
 Sneezing, why "God bless you" is said, when one sneezes, iii. 133  
 Snow, storms of, in the mountains of Armenia, i. 275—Used to cool wine, 391  
 Society of bad men unfortunate, i. 286—It is best to avoid its common offices, ii. 454  
 Socrates, his answer to Criton, i. 19—His dæmon, 49, 50—Banters Hippias, 160—His opinion of the duty, both of young and old, 292—Styled a toper, 442—Why reckoned the only wise man, 494; ii. 129—His soul and virtue, 26—His death, 26, 255, 292—His constitutional vice, 31—Compared himself to midwives, 146—His perplexed notion of God, 156—His prayers, 247—His wife's mourning for him, 255—His knowledge and virtues superior to those of Alexander, iii. 8—His behaviour at his condemnation, 19—His familiarity with death, 40—His oath, 102—His flight, 134—His opinion concerning violence, or wrong done, 178—What he said on seeing a heap of treasure, 285—His advice about the charms of beauty, 293—His discourse and character, 320, 321, 323, 418—His prescription to be easy in life, 323—Pleading be-

## INDEX.

- fore his judges, 342—His way of speaking and living, 346—His deformity of body unsuitable to the beauty of his mind, 349—The master of masters, 373—His taste for dancing and music in old age, 420—His valour, 421
- Soldier, cowardly, how he ought to be punished, i. 56—Made a coward by the cure of a disease, i. 433—Another, rified by the enemy, performed a brave exploit, *ib.*—Another, horribly terrified by the preparations for his execution, ii. 34—The hands of one frozen fast to a burden of wood, iii. 195—Delicacy in the soldier, is vicious and intolerable, 384
- Soldiers, their faith not to be depended on, i. 28—Whether they should be richly armed, 370—Whether they should be allowed to insult a vanquished enemy, 371—French, censured for dressing for an attack as for a ball, 528—That were ordered to eat always standing, &c. 529—First taught to handle their arms with skill, ii. 407—Of Cæsar, 455, &c.—Of Marcellus, called Mercenaries, 465
- Solitary life, preferred to a voluptuous one, i. 263
- Solitude, considerations on, i. 285 to 300—What it is, 286, &c.—The end and aim proposed by it, 287—Does not free men from their vices, *ib.*—In what true solitude consists, 289—To whom it is most becoming, 291—What constitutions are best fitted for it, 292—Occupation most suitable to it, 294—With what view Pliny and Cicero advised it to be sought after, 295—Courtied for the sake of devotion, 296—General observations deduced from the subject, 298, 299, 300—What sort most recommended, iii. 27—Local, *ib.*—Preferred to troublesome and foolish company, 258
- Solon, remarks on his character of the happy man, i. 14, 66—His tears for the death of his son, ii. 255—Allowed women to prostitute themselves, iii. 91—Trite reply of his respecting his own laws, 213—His limitation of life to seventy years, 410
- Song, martial, by an American savage, i. 257—Love-song of the same, 258
- Sons eat their dead fathers, ii. 253
- Sophocles died with joy, i. 10—Censured for his praise of a fine youth, 239—His tragedies, 437
- Sophronia canonized for avoiding ravishment by suicide, i. 463
- Sorcerers' dreams, iii. 316, and Note
- Sorrow called by the Italians surliness, i. 6—A contemptible passion, *ib.*—Extremity of it unutterable, 7
- Sorrows increase by knowledge, ii. 125
- Soul without settled limits, i. 33—Colours things as it pleases, 240—The immortality of, believed in by the Barbarians, 250—Looking upon things several ways, 284—Variable into all sorts of forms, 319—The sole cause of its own happy or unhappy condition, 333—Discovered in all its motions, 396—Ought to be pure, when addressing the Deity, 415—Inconstant and variable, 432—Liable to be overthrown by its own weakness, 448—What reason tells us of its nature, ii. 197—Opinions of the philosophers respecting it, 198—In what part of man it resides, 199—Soul general, and souls particular, 205—Its origin, *ib.*—Opinion of its pre-exist-

# INDEX.

- ence, before its union to the body, 207—Its generation and vital growth, 209—Affected by the sufferings of the body, *ib.*—Its faculties disturbed by the bite of a mad dog, *ib.*—Tending towards death, according to the philosophers, 212—Its immortality, on what the opinion is grounded, 213, &c.—Its faculties affected by the alteration of the body, 229—Its union with the body, 333—Ordered and regulated by Socrates, *iii.* 323—Never struck with the pain of the stone, as in other diseases, 399—Ought to participate of the pleasures of the body, 418
- Souls, the most regular, to be discomposed by various accidents, *i.* 448—Shifting their places from one body into another, *ii.* 37, &c.—Of inanimate things, 91—Of princes and coblers, 95—Of some excellent men, 134—Of the gods, 178—Whence, when, and by whom produced, 205, 207—Knowing, in their natural purity, 207—Of the damned, converted into devils, 218—Of the virtuous deified, *ib.*—The most ignorant, have some shining faculty, 350, 351—Heavy and vulgar, 357—Regular and strong of themselves, 358—Fit for the management of affairs, 379—By which men ought to be judged, *iii.* 9—In old age, subject to more troublesome maladies than in youth, 18—Sublime, not proper for low things, 264—Stupid, in what consists their happiness, 291—Elevated by the ardour of devotion and religion, 429
- Sovereign authority resigned for a moderate fortune, *iii.* 160, 161
- Spaniards, their cruel treatment of the Americans, *iii.* 151, &c.—Their offers to the newly discovered Indians, 152
- Spanish peasant's fortitude, *ii.* 441—Spanish way of travelling, *iii.* 237
- Spargapizes's suicide, *i.* 464
- Sparrow's nest demolished for their chattering a secret, *i.* 476
- Sparta, children of, differently instructed from those of Athens, *i.* 159
- Spartans, why they did not reward a citizen of bravery, *i.* 277—Their valour 496—Their treatment of their sick, *ii.* 517
- Speaking, without preparation, *i.* 42—Copious and elegant, 202—The purest way of, has its failing, *ii.* 260—Discomposes the sick and wounded, *iii.* 389
- Species, the fondness of all creatures for their own, *ii.* 182
- Spectacles, magnificent, of the Roman emperors, *iii.* 143, &c.
- Speech fit for pleaders and preachers, *i.* 41—Of mankind, whether natural, *ii.* 69—The purest, capable of different constructions, 260—Liberty of it, 346—Read, very absurd and disadvantageous, *iii.* 221
- Speusippus, whether he died in the act of adultery, *i.* 76—His objection to the use of rods in schools, 192—His suicide, 455—His notion of the Deity, *ii.* 156
- Spider, remarks on the structure of its web, *ii.* 65
- Spittle, its quality, *ii.* 276
- Spoils burnt for a sacrifice to some gods, *ii.* 164
- Sponge, strange use made of it, *i.* 391
- Sports and pastimes profitable to society, *i.* 208
- Spurina, his story, *ii.* 446, 453
- Stag chased, *ii.* 36

# INDEX.

- Stags, harnessed to the coach of Heliogabalus, iii. 137  
 Stallion's revenge on a groom, ii. 90  
 States, nothing more dangerous to them than change, iii. 214—  
     How difficult it is to reform them, 215—Threatened with altera-  
     tion and revolutions, 219  
 Statesmen, how they amuse the people, while they most abuse  
     them, iii. 199  
 Statilius, why he refused to be a plotter against Cæsar, i. 398  
 Stature of men looking towards heaven, ii. 107  
 Stephen, St. his shrine said to have cured blindness, i. 213  
 Stile of the year offered by the pope to be altered iii. 286, 306  
 Stilpo, the philosopher, his constancy under the worst of misfor-  
     tunes, i. 289—Hastened his end by drinking pure wine, 447—  
     His natural appetite, ii. 31  
 Stoic philosophy and its effects, ii. 221  
 Stoics deemed pity a vice, i. 3—Their state, 52—Allowed the feed-  
     ing upon carcasses, 252—Their rhodomontades, 450—Their pre-  
     cepts as to repentance, iii. 13  
 Stone, the most painful of all diseases, ii. 488—Discharged by one  
     dreaming he was lying with a wench, 491—Montaigne's father  
     afflicted with this disorder, 493—A disease common to old men,  
     especially men of quality, iii. 393—Its symptoms, &c. 394 to  
     397—Its advantage above other distempers, 398, &c.  
 Stoves decried, iii. 380  
 Stratagems in war contrary to the elder senators' practice, i. 24—  
     The most unfair, publicly authorized, 26  
 Strato, the philosopher, his notion of God, ii. 156  
 Stratonice, the effect her beauty had on Antiochus, i. 95  
 Strength of men inferior to that of other animals, ii. 75  
 Stubble to be burnt in the fields after the harvest, iii. 319  
 Stubbornness and lying, two vices that ought early to be suppressed,  
     i. 38  
 Students of Montague-College, iii. 266  
 Study, excessive, damps courage and other efforts of the mind, i.  
     145, &c.—Its advantages, 171—Severity inimical to, 191—Is a  
     pleasant employment, ii. 148—That fittest for an old man, 415  
 Stupidity accompanied by health and vigour, ii. 120—Of the vulgar,  
     and its effects, iii. 342  
 Style, licentious, in some of these Essays, the author's apology for,  
     iii. 119  
 Subjection real and effectual, i. 350  
 Submission mollifies the heart, i. 1  
 Subsistence, mortal, always changing, ii. 283, &c.—Real, denied, ib.  
 Substance not clearly understood, iii. 364  
 Subtleties of logic, abuses, i. 199—Vain subtleties, 406, &c.  
 Success, good or bad, no proof of merit or demerit, i. 262—Whe-  
     ther it is a proof of ability, iii. 182  
 Suicide, its wickedness and future punishment, i. 455—Its justest  
     motives, 458—Other causes, 460, 469—Of old Rasias, 462—Of an  
     Indian nobleman, 465—Of two women, ib.—Of Fulvius's wife,  
     466—Of Vibius, ib.—Of the inhabitants of Astapa, 468—Of the

## I N D E X.

- Abydcæans, 469—Of James Chastel, 470—Of a woman by poison, 471—Of the Hyperboræans, 472
- Suicides' interment, i. 457—Fortitude, how to be judged, ii. 289
- Suit of arms worn under a religious habit, i. 324
- Sulpicius betrayed to Sylla by his own slave, ii. 537
- Summer more inconvenient than winter, to our author, iii. 414
- Sumptuary laws, i. 353 to 356
- Sun, worshipped by the Indians, i. 261—Mourning for the death of Cæsar, ii. 289
- Suns, five, successively created, iii. 156, 157
- Sun-worship, the most excusable, ii. 154
- Superfluity, Montaigne's notion of it, iii. 253
- Superior, what he most expects from his inferiors, i. 61
- Superiority and inferiority bound to a natural contest, iii. 161
- Surgeon; see Chirurgion
- Surname of Divine, given to Plato, i. 403—That of Great, to princes, *ib.*
- Surnames glorious amongst the ancients, debased by the moderns, *ib.*
- Surprises in war, i. 30
- Suspicion in a prince, fatal, i. 139
- Swallows' judgment and skill in building their nests, ii. 65—Taught to carry letters, 387
- Sweat of Alexander had an agreeable odour, i. 410
- Sweet-meats disliked by Montaigne from a boy, iii. 406
- Swimming of great use in war, ii. 464
- Swine sacrificed in effigy by the Egyptians, ii. 35, 36
- Swiss soldiers' wives, i. 320—Swiss loggerheads, ii. 28
- Swooning, a cause of it, i. 96
- Swoons, in the agony of death, whence they proceed, i. 486
- Sword, flourished by a boy without hands, i. 113—Is a weapon on which much reliance may be placed, 380
- Sylla and Marius, their wars, i. 369
- Sylla tampers with a slave to betray his master Sulpicius, and afterwards orders him to be punished with death, ii. 537
- Sylvanus's suicide, ii. 291
- Sympathy of men, its effects, ii. 88

## T.

- TABLE, the most honourable place at it among the Romans, i. 392—  
The most accessible place at it, 474
- Tables, distinguished by the names of the guests, i. 361
- Table-talk, who the best companion in it, i. 229
- Tacitus the historian abolished, ii. 371.—His genius and character, iii. 192 to 197—A sincere historian, but too severe in his censures on Pompey, 194—Commended for relating extraordinary facts and popular rumours, 195—Was a great man, upright and bold, *ib.*
- Tages, author of the art of divination in Tuscany, i. 47
- Talbot's motto, i. 436
- Talva, M. Juventius, died of joy, i. 10

## INDEX.

- Tamly siege raised by swarms of bees, ii. 95  
 Tarpeian-rock, a slave thrown from it for treason, ii. 537  
 Tartar king, who embraced Christianity, hindered from kissing the pope's toe, ii. 47  
 Tasso, the Italian poet, his insanity, ii. 120  
 Taste of nothing that is pure, ii. 376  
 Taurea Jubellius, his noble exit, i. 467  
 Teachers, how they should be paid, i. 152, 153  
 Teeth, white, despised, ii. 106  
 Temerity, very absurd, i. 213  
 Temper, management of, necessary in gaming, iii. 284  
 Temperance ought to be loved for its own sake, iii. 18  
 Temptation, the first, of mankind, by the devil, ii. 111  
 Temptations of the flesh powerful and sharp, iii. 325  
 Tender-heartedness of Montaigne, ii. 33  
 Terence's comedies, i. 302—His character, ii. 6, 7  
 Tercz, king of Thrace, his passion for war, i. 325  
 Ternate, island, how war is declared there, i. 25  
 Terror, panic, awful effects of, i. 65, 66  
 Thales compared to the fox, who said the grapes were sour, i. 118  
 —The reason he assigned for not marrying, 326—His notion of God, ii. 155—Reproached by his maid for his star-gazing, 191, 192—Wrongfully censured, as advising perjury, iii. 58  
 Thalestris, queen of the Amazons, came to Alexander to lie with him, iii. 114  
 Theano, her saying of the woman that goes to bed to her husband, i. 99, 100  
 Thebans nonsuited by the noble spirit of Epaminondas, i. 3  
 Thebes, city, cruelty of Alexander at, i. 5  
 Theft, i. 439—Allowed by Lycurgus, why, ii. 254  
 Themison, his physics, ii. 505  
 Theodorus's atheism, ii. 157  
 Theologia Naturalis, of Raimond de Sebonde, ii. 42—Objections made to the work, answered by Montaigne, 44, 45  
 Theology has nothing to do with the other sciences, i. 421—Of former time, iii. 267, 268  
 Theon, the philosopher, walked in his sleep, iii. 405  
 Theophilus, emperor, defeated and forced by one of his generals to fly against his will, i. 64  
 Theophrastus's wavering opinion of God, ii. 156  
 Theopompus king of Sparta's compliment to his subjects, i. 337  
 Theramenes' shoe, iii. 319  
 Thessalus, his physics, ii. 505  
 Thetis, Alexander's sacrifice to her, ii. 164  
 Thief grows rich, and makes satisfaction, iii. 11, 12  
 Thievery odious to the Spartans, ii. 440—Practised by the Egyptians, ib.  
 Things, more needful to be taught than words, i. 196  
 Thracians shot arrows towards the sky when it thundered, i. 24—Their king how distinguished from his people, 343—Their wives and concubines, ii. 73



## I N D E X.

- Thrasilius's insanity, ii. 125  
 Thrasonides, a Grecian youth, why he refused to enjoy his mistress, iii. 109  
 Threicion's suicide, i. 459  
 Thrift of animals, ii. 105  
 Thumbs, barbarous custom of screwing and otherwise wounding them, ii. 398—Latin etymology of thumb, ib.—Favour or disgust shown by the thumb, ib.—Thumbs of vanquished enemies cut off, 399  
 Thuriens' order against new laws, i. 125  
 Tiberius, another man without than within, ii. 345—His detestation of treachery, 525—His amours, iii. 31—Refused the price of eloquence, why, 164—His trouble of conscience about the religion of his time, 194  
 Tiger's clemency to a kid, ii. 102—Harnesses to a coach, iii. 137  
 Tigillinus's effeminate preparation for death, iii. 252  
 Time, a moving thing without permanency, ii. 285—The physician of our passions, iii. 44, 45—Ought to be managed, 429  
 Timoleon, his escape from assassination, i. 268—His lamentation for his brother, 285—Deputed to cleanse Sicily of tyrants, ii. 540  
 Timon, a man-hater, i. 398  
 Title-pages of books censured, i. 308  
 Tolling of a bell, war declared thereby, i. 26  
 To-morrow, a new day, i. 472, &c.  
 Tongue, vulgar, rendered ambiguous in covenants, iii. 360  
 Torment practised by the emperor Mechmed, ii. 411  
 Torpedo, its benumbing qualities, ii. 85  
 Torture of a Spanish peasant, ii. 441  
 Tragedy-writers must have recourse to history, ii. 475  
 Traitors abhorred and punished even by those that have employed them, ii. 536, 537, 538  
 Transmigration of souls, observations on, ii. 37, &c.  
 Travelling very instructive to youth, i. 172—At what period it should be begun, ib.—The Spanish way, iii. 237—Considerations whether it is proper for old men, 241, 242—Who are the best companions in it, 255  
 Travels, when useful and instructive, iii. 242  
 Treachery, rejected by Tiberius, ii. 525—Useful, preferred to honesty, 534—Fatal to him who abandons himself to it, 535—Wherein it ought only to be excused, 536—Revenged upon those that were employed about it, ib.—Several instances of it, and its requital, 537 to 542  
 Treasure, the true one, i. 290  
 Trees buried in winter, i. 275  
 Trembling, the surname of Sancho, king of Navarre, i. 407  
 Trouble in a state of plenty, iii. 253—Infinitely painful, 399  
 Troubles of this life, i. 287, &c.—How past troubles may be forgotten, ii. 123  
 Trunk, used in some countries to speak through, when addressing the king, i. 114

## I N D E X.

- Truth, and reason, common to all men, i. 170—How we come to know truth, ii. 132, 262, 263—Is not to be judged of by the testimony of others, ii. 143—The search of it agreeable, 148—Banned, the first cause of the corruption of manners, 268—The fundamental part of virtue, 430—Is one, and simple in her ways, 533—Circumscribed and limited, iii. 376
- Tunny-fish acquainted with the mathematics, ii. 101
- Turk, taught valour by a hare, ii. 422
- Turkish madmen proud to debase their own nature, iii. 106
- Turks made themselves scars in honour of their mistresses, i. 323  
—Their armies subsist cheaply, 385—Their regard to beasts, ii. 40—The basis of their valour, 423—Their military discipline, its severity, iii. 328
- Turnebus's character, i. 151; ii. 363
- Tutors, the wrong method used by them in instructing their pupils, i. 168
- Tyranny defined, i. 348
- Tyrant, advised how to guard against plots, i. 143
- Tyrants make their anger felt by inflicting lingering deaths, ii. 410

## U.

- Ugliness of several sorts, iii. 319
- Umbrellas of Italy, iii. 236, 237
- Uncertainty and mutability of human things, i. 66, 67
- Unchastity, what denotes it, ii. 224
- Understanding, its power and use, i. 315—Its darkness, ii. 61—Limited, 222, 224—Its incapacity, 225—The human understanding, its chief ability, iii. 20—Very short and weak, 146—Compared to Theramenes's shoe, 319
- Understandings of several sorts, i. 409—Common understandings, the best for business, ii. 379
- Unlikeness affected by nature, iii. 358
- Unsayings, infamous, iii. 298, 299
- Urine of horses drank, i. 364—Urine of diseased persons, iii. 400
- Utilities proper to men lost, to accommodate themselves to the common opinion, iii. 211
- Utility, public, too dearly purchased, ii. 540—Private utility, not to be preferred before faith given, 542

## V.

- VALENTINIAN, a professed enemy to all knowledge, ii. 128
- Valetudinarians, their surest course, iii. 386
- Valour, its bounds, i. 55—Wherein the valour of a man consists, 256—Covetous of danger, 317—True, defined, 435—Never starts, 456—Military, 497—Philosophical 498—The highest degree of virtue, and its etymology, ib.—The chief virtue among the French noblesse, 499—Perfected with anger, ii. 234—

## I N D E X.

- Ought to be desired for itself, not for a show, 309—Popular, by civil wars in France, 364—Of Cæsar's soldiers, 460—And resolution, 483—Preferred to genealogical nobility, iii. 64—Military valour recommended by the laws of Plato, to the special favour of the ladies, 131
- Value of ourselves, i. 493
- Vanity of the self-conceited, i. 448—Nursing-mother of false opinions, ii. 326—Considerations on, iii. 197 to 276
- Variety and vanity of opinions, ii. 150—Variety pleasing, iii. 253
- Varro's excuse for the absurdities of the religion of the Romans, ii. 186—The qualities he requires in guests, to make the feast agreeable, iii. 416
- Vaux, Henry de, his conduct at the siege of Commercy-castle, i. 27
- Venus, an imperious goddess, ii. 32—Her mysteries, 258—Accompanies Bacchus, 450—Why made a goddess, iii. 30—Not so beautiful stark-naked as she is painted by Virgil, 63—Her amour with Mars, 96, 97—What she really is, 103—How her statue, by Praxiteles, captivated a youth, 110
- Vermillion and ceruse, ii. 272
- Vespasian, emperor, his behaviour on his death-bed, ii. 381—His cure of a blind woman, iii. 195
- Vessel, rich, purposely broken by king Cotys, why, iii. 292
- Vexius Valens, his physics, ii. 505
- Vibius, his suicide, and that of twenty-seven senators, i. 466
- Vice carries a sting in its tail, i. 477—The being addicted to one, does not render a man liable to all, ii. 31—The natural propensity to it corrected by discipline, ib.—Punished by the Divine justice after death, 213—Leaves repentance in the soul, iii. 4
- Vices, take root in childhood, and ought to be early corrected, i. 111—All alike, as they are vices, but not equal, 438—Vices of men, ii. 111—Condemned by reason and nature, iii. 5.—Not subject to contradiction, 6—Of kings, authorized by their subjects' imitation, 164—Of some men, a lesson for others, 166
- Victories fairly gotten, i. 254, 255—Obtained against the Americans, iii. 150
- Victors bewail the death of the conquered, i. 281
- Victory renounced by him who sued to an enemy for the restoration of a dead body for interment, i. 15—Ought not to be stolen, 30—In what true victory consists, 254—Instances of victory not duly improved, ib. and 255, 368, 369—Naval victory gained over the Turks, 262—Is the principal aim of a general and every private soldier, 359—Not complete without the sovereign, ii. 382—Obtained by counsel better than obtained by force, 460
- View, free and full, of a loved object, cools the ardour, ii. 108
- Vigilance and activity ought to be recommended to youth, iii. 401
- Violence offered to women's chastity, i. 463—Violence of desires hinders the execution of undertakings, iii. 282
- Virgil, his *Æneïd* and *Georgics*, ii. 6, 8—Far superior to Ariosto,

## INDEX.

- 6**—Reflections on some of his verses, iii. 50 to 132—With what colourings he describes Vulcan's enjoyment of Venus, 63—Represents a marriage full of harmony and good agreement, but void of fidelity, 68—His advice to burn the stubble in the fields after the harvest, 319
- Virginity**, the vow of, the hardest to be kept, iii. 80—Lost without prostitution, 89
- Virgins**, forced to their husbands' beds, i. 282—Made viragoes in the very laps of their mothers, 438—Furious compact of the Milesian virgins, 458—Virgins could not legally be put to death at Rome, ii. 538—Ten deflowered in one night by an emperor of Rome, 70
- Virtue**, aims at pleasure, i. 71—Ennobled by difficulties, 72—Its greatest benefit, ib.—Its character and situation, and how it should be represented to youth, 185—Enemy to anxiety and sorrow, 186—Its value, and true employment, ib.—The nursing-mother of all human pleasures, ib.—Embraced with too violent desire, becomes vicious, 234—Satisfied with herself, 290—Its beginning and end, 430—Followed for itself, 436—Never turns its back to accidents, 455—How attained to, 481—Is more great and active than to be drawn to the rules of reason, ii. 20—Cannot be exercised without some difficulty, 21—Refuses ease for a companion, 23—Shines bright by the conflict of contrary appetites, ib.—Its necessary objects, 24—Turned into habit in Cato and Socrates, 25, 26—Its different degrees, 27—The particular mark of the Christian religion, 47—Accompanied with irregular agitations, 234—Ought to be coveted for herself, 311, 312—Military, 412, 413—Considerations on, 415 to 425—Full and equal, 415, &c.—Gives joy to a well-disposed mind, iii. 4—Is pleasant and gay, 56—Royal, wherein it consists, 141—Assigned to the affairs of the world, 261—Scholastic, unfit for the management of public affairs, 262—True and sincere, cannot be employed in the service of a corrupt state, 261—What virtue is, according to Menon, 364
- Virtuous actions** rewarded by their own merit, ii. 311, 312—Virtuous man, what course he may take in times of confusion, iii. 266
- Visions**, why so much credited, i. 96
- Voice**, the flower of beauty, ii. 271—Of the rabble contemned, 307—Of diverse tones and uses, iii. 389—Strained before meals, wholesome, 408
- Voluptuousness** of the Cynics, ii. 259
- Vow** of some English sparks, rash and ridiculous, ii. 396
- Vulcan**, not very jealous of his wife Venus, iii. 84

## W.

- WAISTS**, slender, the pains some women undergo to fashion them, i. 322
- Walachians** the grand-signior's couriers, ii. 388
- Walk** required in a place of retirement, iii. 34

## I N D E X.

- War, the barbarians' custom of commencing it, i. 25—Proclaimed by the tolling of a bell, 26—Description of the wars of the savages, 251—Wars of the bees, ii. 92—Of men against the gods, 184—Wars carried on abroad, more supportable than civil-wars, 390—The war between Cæsar and Pompey characterized, iii. 291—The civil-wars in France greatly destructive, 326, &c.
- War-horse, ii. 104
- Warriors, the greatest in Montaigne's time, ii. 362, 363
- Wasp most hurtful to itself, i. 476
- Watching, or being awake, ii. 276
- Water of the river Choaspes, beverage of the Persian kings, iii. 235
- Waters, perfumed, used by the Romans for bathing in, i. 390
- Watermen's fare, how paid by the Romans, i. 393
- Wealth hoarded up to maintain the paternal authority in old age, i. 504
- Weapons used in war by the savages, i. 251—Military, anciently used, 381, &c.
- Weather's alteration affects the minds of men, ii. 230
- Weavers, women, iii. 318
- Weeping of beasts, ii. 99
- Whale and sea-gudgeon, ii. 100
- Whimsies in use among the mean sort of men, iii. 168—Of parties, 288, 289
- Whipping of boys at school censured, i. 191
- White, used for mourning by the ladies of Argos and Rome, i. 394
- Whores, kept in temples for the use of those that came to their devotion, iii. 75—Four, naked, harnessed to the coach of Heliogabalus, to draw him in state, 137
- Wicked, society with them fatal, i. 286—Men cannot hide themselves, 477—Punished, 479—Picked out and put together in a city built for that purpose by king Philip, iii. 212
- Widow got a great belly, not knowing by whom, i. 441
- Widows, how they should be provided for, i. 516
- Wife's vehement love of her husband, ii. 468—Wife complaining of her husband's too frequent addresses, iii. 70—The danger of restraining her, 94
- Will, the effects thereof not always in our own power, i. 31—Irrregular and disobedient, 101—Will and desire are laws to themselves, ii. 532—Considerations on the management of, iii. 276 to 305—The will ought not to be let out but upon just occasions, 278—Running on with too keen an appetite, it ought to be restrained, 291
- Wills more obstinate for being opposed, ii. 297
- Wind breaks out of men three several ways, iii. 133
- Wine, frozen, cut with hatchets in winter-time, i. 274—Cooled with snow, 391—Dashed, 394—Wine vents the most inward secrets, 440—Delicacy in the choice of it censured, 443—Forbidden to children, 446—When to be drank sparingly, 447—Its virtue and property, ib.—Pure, bad for old age, ib.—Prescribed for the sick Spartans, 517—The best, in Diogenes's opinion, iii. 205—Palled, in esteem in Portugal, 380—Hurtful to sick people,

# INDEX.

- 387—Dashed with water, of Cranaus's invention, 413—Theological and Sorbonnical, 419
- Winsberg, in Upper Bavaria, besieged, i. 2
- Wisdom's acquiescency, i. 12—Wisdom and ignorance attain to the same ends, 408—Wisdom's chief aim, 430—Its principal office, 439—Liable to all conditions and natural passions, 448—What it is, 451; ii. 130—Only belongs essentially to the Divinity, 55—Of the world, folly with God, 57—Accompanied with trouble, 125—That species of wisdom which Montaigne liked, iii. 56—Wisdom commits itself to the conduct of chance, 184—Better learned by prosperity than by adversity, 199—Its deficiency, 257—Human, never arrives at its prescribed duty, 259—Brought again from heaven by Socrates, 322
- Wise man, in what regard he differs from the fool, i. 52—His country, 179—May live every-where content, 286—His life, 453—The wise man determined in life by appearances, ii. 140—Why Socrates alone was accounted such, 494—His relation and connection, iii. 239
- Wise men ought to do nothing but for themselves, i. 398—Operate by all the virtues together, ii. 30—Compared to ears of corn, 132—Necessary to help us out of the world, iii. 244—May be in love, 260—Should be intelligent in the use of pleasure, 420
- Wish, extravagant one, of the philosopher Eudoxus, ii. 150
- Wit, great, has a spice of madness, i. 451
- Witch-marks, iii. 315
- Witches, stories concerning them, treated as mere chimeras, iii. 313—Judged by Montaigne to be crack-brained, 316
- Witholde, a Lithuanian prince, his order that every criminal condemned to die should execute himself, ii. 539
- Witness among the Romans, ii. 312
- Wits envious, i. 278—Of many degrees, 340, 408—Great, allied to madness, ii. 120
- Wives, love to them restricted by divinity, i. 236—Used in some countries to bury themselves alive, or submit to be burnt, with their deceased husbands, 311—Instance of two, who put themselves to death, to encourage their husbands to do the same, 465—Show most love to their husbands, when they have lost them, ii. 467—Kept in too great subjection by the Italians, iii. 112
- Woman, turned into a man, i. 95—That goes to bed to a man, must put off her modesty with her petticoat, 99—Fancying she had swallowed a pin, 104—Causes her face to be flayed for a better skin, 322—Unreasonable, 516—One who, being beat by her husband, drowned herself, ii. 413—Each thinks herself preferable to another, iii. 29—Her refusal increases the man's love, 81—Her head, the worst part of her, 94—Blind, cured by Vespa-sian, 195
- Women, taking rank and command in the wars, i. 115—Circum-cised, 117—Incapable of a perfect love, 220—Burnt alive with the dead bodies of their husbands, 311—Succeeding to peerages, 387—Bathed together with the men, 393—Masked and painted, 399—Excluded equally with children from inquiring into the laws,

## I N D E X.

- 420—Not very fit to treat of theological matters, 423—Jewish, avoiding the cruelty of Antigonus, 461—Seeking after death, to avoid the cruelty of tyrants, 463—Of virtue and honour, 499—The use of them enervate youth, 506, 507—Addicted to cross their husbands, 513—Made use of by ladies for a footstool, ii. 73—Their time of pregnancy, 220—Killing themselves at their husbands' decease, 418—Buried alive with their husbands, 419—Obstinate and furious, 433, 442—Three good ones, remarkable for virtue and honour, 466, &c.—Whether they need be learned in the languages, iii. 25—What sort of learning is fittest for them, 26—Their mourning, what, 36—The severe laws imposed on them by the men without their consent, 70—Their polity mysterious, 73—Are more learned than men in love's business, 74—Of the kingdom of Pegu covered below the waist with a cloth slit before, 78—Whether they are the better for these laws, 79—What ought to encourage them to be chaste, 81—Their tormenting hateful jealousy, 83, 85, &c.—Prostituted by their husbands for lucre, 90—Prostituting themselves for the gift of an elephant, 91—Having liberty by the laws to provide for the necessities of life at the expense of their chastity, ib.—Their embraces despised, 105—Young and beautiful, kept three days after their death before they were delivered to the undertaker, 110, 111—Fine, equally charming in France as in Italy, 112—Kept very close in Italy, ib.—Whence it comes that men usurp authority over them, 120—Changing the title of beautiful to that of good, 130
- Wool, perfumed, privately made use of, i. 391
- Words of men, their only tie on one another, i. 38—Affected and finely spoken, 199—Moderating the temerity of propositions, iii. 312
- Works, visible, of the Divine Being, an incontestable proof of his existence, ii. 53
- World, the utility of conversation with, i. 179—Is a mirror for man to view himself in, and a book to instruct him, 180—A sacred temple, ii. 53—New, without law or magistrate, 128—Its plurality and variety, 170—Its government, 180—Various opinions about it, 241—Creation of, 243—In a perpetual motion, iii. 1—Another, discovered by this of ours, 149—The new, genius of its inhabitants, when first discovered, ib.—Their cruel treatment by the Spaniards, 151—Its duration divided into five ages by the Mexicans, 156—Is a school of inquiry, 175—Incapable of curing itself, 215
- Wounds, self-inflicted, i. 323
- Wrath, whether proper to animate virtue and valour, ii. 437
- Wren and crocodile, ii. 101
- Wrestlers who forbore all commerce with Venus, i. 507
- Wrestling condemned by Philopœmen, why, ii. 407
- Writer, the profession of one, a particular object of inquiry with Montaigne, i. 60
- Writers, modern, their poverty of genius, how discovered, i. 163
- Writings of Cordus condemned to the fire, i. 523—Preferred to bodily children, 524, 525—Obscure, find interpreters enough, ii.











